SAINT BASIL

THE LETTERS
Printed in Great Britain
FOREWORD

The Letters of St. Basil fittingly continue the series of Patristic writings in the Loeb Classical Library which has already published some of the works of Clement of Alexandria, St. Augustine and the Apostolic Fathers. Apart from their historical significance, these Letters are interesting as expressions of a striking personality. There is so much in the man himself and so rich a variety in his experience, that even in an age remarkable for men of force and character he is an outstanding figure. Withdrawn for a time from contact with worldly affairs, he is again in the very midst of them as bishop and theologian. With a vigilant eye to the spiritual needs of his own diocese, he is none the less deeply concerned for the preservation of the Faith against the attack, open or insidious, of Arianism. Here and there in the Letters he gives us descriptions that are exquisite. Occasionally, in extolling the beauty of Christian virtue, he becomes eloquent. And when duty compels him to upbraid those in high places, episcopal or imperial, he is outspoken and fearless.

But the kindly human element in Basil appears at its best when he pours out his heart in sympathy for the sorrowing or in reproof, severe yet merciful, administered to the wayward and fallen. When writing to such as these, he is the father who grieves
no less than the judge who condemns or the bishop
who uses his authority to maintain the discipline of
the Church.

The salient features of his style are the frequent
citation of the Scriptures and the use, at every page,
of illustration. The former attests not only his
familiarity with the sacred text, but also his habit of
meditating upon it and his grasp of the meaning.
The latter is what one would expect from a native
of Cappadocia whose education in Athens had
enriched with culture his inherited wealth of
imagination. And it is interesting to note how
many of the figurative expressions used by St. Basil
are lauded to-day in their English form as brilliant
results of original picturesque thinking.

While the translation of those among the Letters
which treat of ordinary topics offers no unusual
difficulty, the task of rendering certain theological
statements into suitable English equivalents is a
delicate one. There are technical terms which
caused long and bitter polemics among the learned
participants in the Trinitarian controversy. No
marvel, then, that after sixteen centuries they
should exercise the wit of a modern translator.
Dr. Deferrari's success in dealing with them gives
his translation a smoothness which the reader will
appreciate but which implies no sacrifice of meaning
to the demands of style.

Right Reverend Monsignor Edward A. Pace.

Professor of Philosophy and Vice-Rector of
C.U.A.; S.T.B., Propaganda, Rome,
1888; S.T.D., Propaganda, Rome, 1886;
Ph.D., Leipzig, 1891; Ll.D., Univ. of
Notre Dame, 1910.
PREFATORY NOTE

The Benedictine edition of St. Basil was published in Paris during the years 1721–1730. For the letters of the Saint the chief concern of the editors was the establishing an accurate chronology. For the text they were content, after the manner of the time, to construct something that was readable. Of even the few manuscripts at their disposal they often admitted inaccurate readings. Time has correspondingly appraised the distribution of their labours. The most searching criticism has improved but little their chronology. The numbers assigned to the letters by the Benedictines are to-day the accepted mode of reference. The deficiencies of their text, however, have become evident in the new collation of their manuscripts.

Several years ago Professor Paul van den Ven of the University of Louvain and the writer planned a critical text of St. Basil's correspondence, intending to use the earlier results of their work in a new recension for the Loeb Classical Library. The disorders of the world war and subsequent adjustments checked the full realization of even their minor purpose, but the following manuscripts already had been collated: Parisinus 506 (A), Parisinus 763 S (B), Parisinus 967 (C), Parisinus 1021 S (D), Parisinus Coislinianus 237 (E), and Parisinus 1020 S

1 Strongly attacked by Ernst, it was successfully defended by Loofs. Cf. Bibliography.
(F). Of these, four had been used by the Benedictine editors, Dom Garnier and Dom Maran, under the following names, Regius 2293 (Regius primus) = Parisinus 506; Coislinianus 288 (Coislin. secundus) = Parisinus 1021 S; Coislinianus 237 (Coislin. primus) = Parisinus Coislin. 237; and Harlaeanus = Parisinus 1020 S. Meanwhile the Abbé Bessières ¹ was making a study of all the important manuscripts of St. Basil's correspondence. The results of his work appeared posthumously in the Journal of Theological Studies and have been reprinted recently by the Oxford University Press.² It is a pleasure to mention here the concordance between the textual conclusions reached by the writer and those based on the more comprehensive studies of the Abbé.

From the Abbé's stemma of manuscripts it will be noticed that those collated by the writer represent each of the two great branches. It will also be noticed that the first and most important family of all, Family Aa, is represented neither in his collation nor in that of the Benedictines. On the basis of the manuscripts read, however, he has been able to revise the Benedictine text for the Loeb Classical Library approximately as planned by Professor van den Ven and himself. At the same time he realizes that the definitive critical edition will differ somewhat from the one here offered, based, as it must be, on the largest and most important manuscript family. All important variant readings are noticed in the foot-notes. Where, in several places only, readings are taken from the Benedictine edition, the

¹ A French priest who died from hardships imposed by the late war.
² Cf. Bibliography.

viii
Benedictine sigla are used. Elsewhere the writer's own sigla appear as noted above.

It need scarcely be added that no attempt has been made to revise the chronology of Garnier and Maran. Whenever a letter has been shown by later investigators to have been misplaced by the Benedictines, the fact is merely stated in a footnote. Tillemont's life of St. Basil, which antedated by a generation the Benedictine edition, and therefore employed an earlier numbering of the letters, is so important a work for students of St. Basil that this earlier numbering is given in the Introduction in a list parallel to the St. Maur chronology. In translating St. Basil's quotations from the Bible, the Douay version has been followed as closely as the Saint's own quotations permit. This has at times involved great difficulty.

The writer is greatly indebted to the Princeton University Library and its former head, Dr. E. C. Richardson, for the purchase of the photographic copies of the manuscripts studied. He is deeply in debt to the Rev. J. Benjamin Tennally, S.S., D.D., Professor of Dogmatic Theology in the Sulpician Seminary at the Catholic University of America, both for the quality of the help given him on theological questions and for the generous spirit in which it was given. Without his corrections the writer would not have presumed to offer the translation of Letters VIII and XXXVIII to the public. To J. Marshall Campbell, Ph.D., and to Leo V. Jacks, Ph.D., and to all others who have in any way assisted in the preparation of this work, the translator is profoundly grateful.

Brookland, D.C., U.S.A. Roy J. Deferrari.
## CONTENTS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>FOREWORD</th>
<th>PAGE</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>V</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PREFATORY NOTE</td>
<td>vii</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>INTRODUCTION—</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I. LIFE OF ST. BASIL</td>
<td>XV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1. EARLY LIFE AND EDUCATION</td>
<td>XV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2. BASIL AND MONASTICISM</td>
<td>xxi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3. THE PRIESTHOOD</td>
<td>xxiv</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4. BASIL AND ARIANISM</td>
<td>xxv</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5. BASIL AS ARCHEPISHOP</td>
<td>xxxii</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>II. SOME IMPORTANT WORKS OF ST. BASIL</td>
<td>xxxv</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>III. ST. BASIL'S LETTERS</td>
<td>xxxvi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IV. TABLE OF DATES</td>
<td>xxxix</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>V. BIBLIOGRAPHY</td>
<td>xli</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1. MANUSCRIPTS</td>
<td>xli</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2. EDITIONS</td>
<td>xlii</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3. TRANSLATIONS OF THE LETTERS</td>
<td>xliii</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4. MISCELLANEOUS WORKS ON ST. BASIL</td>
<td>xliii</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VI. THE LETTERS OF ST. BASIL ARRANGED IN PARALLEL COLUMNS ACCORDING TO THE BENEDICTINE AND THE OLDER NUMBERING</td>
<td>xlvi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VII. THE LETTERS OF ST. BASIL ARRANGED IN PARALLEL COLUMNS ACCORDING TO THE OLDER AND THE BENEDICTINE NUMBERING</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### LETTER

| I. TO EUSTATHIUS, THE PHILOSOPHER | 3   |
| II. BASIL TO GREGORY             | 7   |
| III. TO CANDIDIANUS              | 25  |
| IV. TO OLYMPIUS                  | 29  |
|                                  | xi  |
# CONTENTS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>LETTER</th>
<th>PAGE</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>V. TO NECTARIUS, IN CONSOLATION</td>
<td>33</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VI. TO THE WIFE OF NECTARIUS, IN CONSOLATION</td>
<td>39</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VII. TO GREGORY, MY COMRADE</td>
<td>45</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VIII. AN APOLOGY TO THE CAESARIANS FOR HIS WITHDRAWAL, AND A TREATISE ON FAITH</td>
<td>47</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IX. TO MAXIMUS, THE PHILOSOPHER</td>
<td>93</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>X. TO A WIDOW</td>
<td>101</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XI. WITHOUT ADDRESS; FOR FRIENDSHIP'S SAKE</td>
<td>103</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XII. TO OLYMPIUS</td>
<td>105</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XIII. TO OLYMPIUS</td>
<td>105</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XIV. TO GREGORY, A FRIEND</td>
<td>107</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XV. TO ARCADIUS, IMPERIAL TREASURER</td>
<td>113</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XVI. AGAINST EUNOMIUS, THE HERETIC</td>
<td>115</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XVII. TO ORIGEN</td>
<td>117</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XVIII. TO MACARIUS AND JOHN</td>
<td>119</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XIX. TO GREGORY, A FRIEND</td>
<td>121</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XX. TO THE SOPHIST LEONTIUS</td>
<td>123</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXI. TO THE SOPHIST LEONTIUS</td>
<td>127</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXII. WITHOUT ADDRESS; ON THE PERFECTION OF THE MONASTIC LIFE</td>
<td>129</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXIII. AN ADMONITION TO A MONK</td>
<td>141</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXIV. TO ATHANASIUS, FATHER OF ATHANASIUS, BISHOP OF ANCYRA</td>
<td>145</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXV. TO ATHANASIUS, BISHOP OF ANCYRA</td>
<td>149</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXVI. TO CAESARIUS, THE BROTHER OF GREGORY</td>
<td>155</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXVII. TO EUSEBIUS, BISHOP OF SAMOSATA</td>
<td>157</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXVIII. TO THE CHURCH OF NEOCAESAREA. CONSOLATORY</td>
<td>159</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXIX. TO THE CHURCH AT ANCYRA. CONSOLATORY</td>
<td>171</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXX. TO EUSEBIUS, BISHOP OF SAMOSATA</td>
<td>175</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXXI. TO EUSEBIUS, BISHOP OF SAMOSATA</td>
<td>177</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXXII. TO SOPHRONIUS, THE MASTER</td>
<td>179</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
## CONTENTS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Letter</th>
<th>Title</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>XXXIII.</td>
<td>TO ABURGIUS</td>
<td>185</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXXIV.</td>
<td>TO EUSEBIUS, BISHOP OF SAMOSATA</td>
<td>187</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXXV.</td>
<td>WITHOUT ADDRESS, IN BEHALF OF LEONTIUS</td>
<td>189</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXXVI.</td>
<td>WITHOUT ADDRESS, ASKING ASSISTANCE</td>
<td>191</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXXVII.</td>
<td>WITHOUT ADDRESS, IN BEHALF OF A FOSTER BROTHER</td>
<td>193</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXXVIII.</td>
<td>TO GREGORY HIS BROTHER; ON THE DIFFERENCE BETWEEN SUBSTANCE AND PERSON</td>
<td>197</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXXIX.</td>
<td>JULIAN TO BASIL</td>
<td>227</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XL.</td>
<td>JULIAN TO BASIL</td>
<td>231</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XLI.</td>
<td>BASIL TO JULIAN, A REPLY TO THE PRECEDING</td>
<td>235</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XLII.</td>
<td>TO CHILO, HIS PUPIL</td>
<td>241</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XLIII.</td>
<td>ADMONITION TO THE YOUNG</td>
<td>265</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XLIV.</td>
<td>TO A FALLEN MONK</td>
<td>267</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XLV.</td>
<td>TO A FALLEN MONK</td>
<td>275</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XLVI.</td>
<td>TO A FALLEN VIRGIN</td>
<td>283</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XLVII.</td>
<td>TO FRIEND GREGORY</td>
<td>311</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XLVIII.</td>
<td>TO EUSEBIUS, BISHOP OF SAMOSATA</td>
<td>315</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XLIX.</td>
<td>TO BISHOP ARCADIUS</td>
<td>317</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>L.</td>
<td>TO BISHOP INNOCENTIUS</td>
<td>319</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LI.</td>
<td>TO BISHOP BOSPORIUS</td>
<td>321</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LII.</td>
<td>TO THE CANONICAЕ</td>
<td>327</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LIII.</td>
<td>TO THE CHEREPISCOPI</td>
<td>337</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LIV.</td>
<td>TO THE CHEREPISCOPI</td>
<td>343</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LV.</td>
<td>TO PAREGORIUS, THE PREbyter</td>
<td>347</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LVI.</td>
<td>TO PERGAMII</td>
<td>351</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LVII.</td>
<td>TO MELETIUS, BISHOP OF ANTIOCH</td>
<td>355</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LVIII.</td>
<td>TO GREGORY, HIS BROTHER</td>
<td>357</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>INDEX</td>
<td>OF PROPER NAMES</td>
<td>363</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
INTRODUCTION

1. Life of St. Basil.¹

1. Early Life and Education²

In the decade of the Council of Nicea and at Caesarea of Cappadocia was born³ the Church's most effective instrument, after St. Athanasius, in the final victory over Arianism. From both his parents Basil drew gentle and Christian blood. His maternal grandfather, a great landholder, had died a martyr. His paternal grandmother, St. Macrina, was a faithful disciple of St. Gregory Thaumaturgus. The only

¹ The sources are: the works of St. Basil, especially his letters (Migne, Patrologia Graeca, XXIX.—XXXII.); the works of St. Gregory of Nazianzus, particularly the long funeral oration (Migne, P.G. XXXV.—XXXVII.); the works of St. Gregory of Nyssa, especially the eulogy on his sister, Macrina (Migne, P.G. XLIV.—XLVI.); an encomium on St. Basil by the Syrian poet, St. Ephraem (Cotelier, Monumenta Ecclesiae Graecae, III.); a chapter (116) in St. Jerome's De Viris Illustribus. References of uncertain value can also be found in Philostorgius (Hist. Eccl. VII. 11—13; Migne, P.G. LXV.); in Theodoret (Hist. Eccl. IV. 19; Migne, P.G. LXXXIV.); in Rufinus (Hist. Eccl. II. 9; Migne, P.L. XXI.); in Socrates (Hist. Eccl. IV. 26; Migne, P.G. LXVII.); in Sozomen (Hist. Eccl. VI. 15; Migne, P.G. LXVII.).

² The exigences of book-making have forced me to compress this sketch to a bare outline of Basil's crowded career.

³ The year of his birth is assigned variously from 320 to 331.
record we have of her husband represents him an unbending victim of the last persecutions. These traditions of steadfast piety were united in the marriage of Basil and Emmelia, the parents of our Saint. The father had a great name in the Pontus and in Cappadocia for his lands, his legal attainments, his professorship of rhetoric, and for a rectitude of life unspoilt by his triple prosperity. Emmelia's worth is attested by the eminence of her children. She was the mother of three bishops, a nun, and a monk. Three of her children were canonized.

Of this remarkable family Basil was the second child, a sickly child, it seems, even as he was always a sickly man, given out to nurse soon after birth with a peasant family of the Pontic countryside. And in the Pontus rather than in Caesarea his earliest days were spent, tutored in the ways of piety by the saintly Macrina and by Emmelia, taught his letters by a father who could add a parent's solicitude to the practised skill of a teaching career, associated with brothers and sisters equally favoured in their formative years. In a household that was affluent and cultured and minutely Christian thus grew up a family remarkable for refined sanctity even in the long annals of the Church.

The singular advantages of this early time were given the Saint throughout his student days. His native Caesarea, the literary as well as the civil capital of Central Asia Minor, first attracted him, and in her locally famous lecture-halls he began to study

2 Cf. Letters XXXVI., XXXVII.
3 Tillemont prefers Caesarea in Palestine, chiefly because of the greater celebrity of its schools.
INTRODUCTION

rhetoric and philosophy. He then proceeded to Constantinople, to whose schools the talent of the world was turning, to be near to Caesar's court. Socrates \(^1\) and Sozomen \(^2\) tell us of a sojourn also at Antioch and under the great Libanius, but neither with Antioch nor Libanius can St. Basil's studies be linked satisfactorily. The bishop mentioned by the chroniclers may very well have been the bishop-orator of Seleucia. Libanius, indeed, was at Constantinople in 347 and our Saint could have arrived there thus early, according to a closely packed chronology, and could have sat under the Great Master, but the attractive hypothesis of their association even at Constantinople is still only an hypothesis.\(^3\) In 351, at all events, Basil left Constantinople and, following the fashion of those who could afford further studies, took up his residence at Athens.

Of all this time of preparation and of the scant notices we have of it there is no phase over which the imagination would more willingly linger than over Basil's years at Athens, the city of unsurpassed memories and still the first university town of the world. Rome and Constantinople had centred in themselves the wealth and influence of empire, but neither had succeeded in dislodging the city of Pallas Athene from that authority in the republic of letters which a literary and teaching tradition eight centuries old and the zeal of the Second Sophistic had given her. There are no modern parallels to explain that pre-eminence. To appreciate what Athens meant to fourth-century students would

\(^1\) Historia, IV. 26.  \(^2\) Historia, VI. 17.  \(^3\) The correspondence which has come down to us under their names is of doubtful authenticity.
require a sympathy for the Attic ideal as extravagant and uncritical as that which obtained in Basil’s time, and the opportunity of actually living in this dream-city of fourth-century enthusiasm while the landmarks of her literary glories were still intact and the paganism that had produced these glories was still flourishing. The temples and statues and olive groves, the theatre, the spoken language, the atmosphere even—all that could best sustain a bygone culture against the changes of time—most closely approximated their ancient circumstance at Athens. And thus she was the pattern of excellence to a world that elected to see in Atticism the cultural ideal. An Athenian sojourn gave to professor and student a diploma of prestige not elsewhere to be equalled, and thus this last stronghold of the gods, in magnificent defiance of a world become Christian, still gathered under her Acropolis the talents of the earth.

Christian and pagan contacts are as fascinating a study as the ancient world affords, and the mind would linger here among these eager Christians and pagans come from all parts of the empire, even as many of its students lingered here on into middle life.1 Aided by the sympathetic genius of Cardinal Newman and the constructive scholarship of Petit de Julleville,2 we could approach with some assurance the more intimate facts of Basil’s relations with Gregory of Nazianzus, with Himerius and Julian the Apostate3 and Prohairesius and Terentius4 and

1 Cf., e.g., Gregory of Nazianzus, Poemata de se ipso, XI., 239.
3 Cf. Gregory of Nazianzus, Or. V. 23, 24.
4 Letter LXIV.

xviii
INTRODUCTION

Sophronius,¹ did the Saint but give us details. But he is strongly reticent here, and in our other first-hand witness to the period, St. Gregory of Nazianzus, we must make allowances, even in the few notices given, for the liberties of the panegyric. We must content ourselves with the fact of fourth-century Athens and of Basil’s sojourn there; of his dislike of university life in its sophomoric pranks and promiscuous immorality; of his serious application to grammar, poetry, history, rhetoric, dialectics, metaphysics; of his passing attention to astronomy, geometry, and medicine. And so passed about five brilliant years.²

Towards the end of 355 or at the beginning of 356 St. Basil left Athens to prepare more directly for the holy career which he had cherished through all the triumphs and other distractions of university life. During his long absence from the Pontus his grandmother and father had died, and he returned to find himself the owner of properties scattered over three provinces. The news that the philosopher Eustathius was teaching at Caesarea soon drew him from the Pontus, but when he arrived in his native city the philosopher was already gone.³ In place of a more prolonged student’s career he now became a teacher himself. His Athenian reputation had preceded him into Cappadocia. A chair of rhetoric was offered to him at Caesarea and he accepted. For two years he followed in his father’s footsteps.

The Asiatic cities of the fourth century reserved their choicest tributes for their successful sophists.

¹ Letter CCLXXII.
² Gregory of Nazianzus, Or. XLI. 22, 23.
³ Letter I.
INTRODUCTION

St. Basil became one of these. Within those two short years he attained to such an eminence that Neocaesarea tried to draw him back to the Pontus.¹ In the unsympathetic atmosphere of pagan Athens, Basil had preserved his vocation to religion; in the whirl of flattery and glory that rolled around him in Caesarea he came near to losing it. A secular career of assured brilliance lay before him. At this crisis his sister Macrina intervened, and under her influence the ideal of his Athenian days re-awoke. He renounced his chair at Caesarea, was baptized and gave himself to God.²

His mother and Macrina, however, now relieved of family duties by the coming of age of the youngest child, added example to exhortation and made the estate of Annesi on the Iris the home of a religious colony that soon attracted to its austerities women of the first families of Cappadocia. Meanwhile Basil was off to Egypt, Palestine, Coele Syria, and Mesopotamia to find in those flourishing centres of asceticism the details of his ideal. For about two years he thus studied the traditions that went back to St. Antony.³

Tiberina, near the Arianzus of his friend Gregory, was Basil’s first choice for the scene of his rigours. A spot in Ibora, on the Iris and opposite the community of his mother and sister, was finally elected. To entice the disappointed Gregory to his Pontic hermitage, St. Basil sent him a letter that is a masterpiece of descriptive prose,⁴ holding out to Gregory the attractions of a high mountain carpeted

² St. Gregory of Nyssa, De Vita S. Macrinae.
³ Letter CCXXIII. 2.
⁴ Letter XIV.
INTRODUCTION

with green forests and clustering wild-flowers, peopled with tuneful birds and washed at its base by the clear Iris. And above the mere natural beauty of the place, in strong contrast to his Caesarea days, its aloofness is highly praised. This aloofness came not to mean personal isolation, however. Like his mother and sister and like the pioneers in the desert before them, Basil became a nucleus around whom the free-lance ascetics of the Pontus and Cappadocia soon gathered, to give to his sylvan solitude some of the characteristics of a monastery. And here he develops in the practice of those ascetic principles which he sets forth so elaborately in his letters and in his treatises on the religious life. And here at length, amid psalms and hymns and hard manual toil and prayers and fasting and Bible-reading and daybreak arisings and sunset retirements and midnight vigils in tunic and cloak, the ideal of his Athenian days is realized.

2. Basil and Monasticism

To give even a brief account of St. Basil's monasticism in the short space here allotted is out of the question, but attention must be called to certain of its features. A definite and detailed Rule of St. Basil,\(^1\) in the sense in which we use that word of St. Benedict's legislation, we do not possess, although the materials for a very comprehensive reconstruction of it are available in his two collections of Rules; in his treatises On the Judgment of God, Concerning the Faith, and the Moralia; in valuable references in his Letters; and, too, in the

\(^1\) That he wrote such a Rule there can be little doubt.
INTRODUCTION

treatises *On Renunciation* and *On the Ascetic Discipline*, if they be really his.

With that thoroughness which characterized his student days he pushed beyond the mere living the life to consider the whole question of monastic theory and practice. "It will probably surprise many persons to be told that the key to St. Basil’s asceticism is found in his devoted submission to the authority of the Holy Scripture. He is so far from claiming any right to go beyond Scripture that he thinks it necessary to apologize for even using words which are not found in the Bible. Those, therefore, who would understand him must divest themselves in the first place of that vague association of the Fathers with extra-Scriptural tradition which exists in many minds; and in the next place of that firm persuasion which many good Protestants entertain, that nobody ever loved the Bible or understood its value before the Reformation."1

The experience of centuries has found community life, on the whole, the most satisfactory environment for fostering that closer union with God which is the monastic ideal. The experience of St. Basil’s forerunners may have pointed to the same conclusion, but the Cenobium was Basil’s creation. Before him ascetics had lived utterly alone or in groups almost completely unorganized. To become a monk one had merely to retire to some solitude and there serve God as one’s own zeal or the example of holy men might direct. In time these hermits had formed into colonies and the hermit pre-eminent for age and sanctity became a kind of guide to the

INTRODUCTION

younger. Thus far had monasticism proceeded when Basil settled down at Annesi.

He became the founder of organized monasticism. He made the colony a society. He gave it a code; the minute division of the day, the time of probation for new members, the rule solicitous for every detail of life and conduct, even to articles of food and clothing.\textsuperscript{1} Despite this austerity, however, the monastic ideal to St. Basil was social in its implication. Hospitality and charity fell within its scope. And it ought always to be remembered to St. Basil's credit that in that day of untutored zeal, regardless of the rigours with which he visited his own body, he insisted that true continence is the avoidance of all excess, whether of indulgence or abstinence. Throughout the East to-day monasticism, Christian monasticism, is almost everywhere what St. Basil made it.\textsuperscript{2} And in the West, a century and a half after Basil's death, St. Benedict urges his monks to read "the rule of our holy Father Basil," telling them that it is one of "the instruments whereby well-living and obedient monks may attain to virtue."\textsuperscript{3} Such an estimate, coming as it does from the founder and first legislator of Western monasticism, is an impressive tribute to the efficacy of Basil's code. The Saint himself, however, was given little leisure to test that efficacy personally. In 358 he had gone first to Annesi. In 365 he left it for ever. And even in that short period the needs of the time called him more than once to the world.

\textsuperscript{1} Cf. Letter II. 6; also Reg. Brev. 136.
\textsuperscript{2} Fortescue, \textit{The Orthodox Eastern Church}, 354 ff.
\textsuperscript{3} Regula LXXXIII.
INTRODUCTION

3. The Priesthood

Basil had spent about a year in his Pontic solitude (358–359) when the first summons came. The Arian controversy was at its height. There had been a quick succession of local councils and endless manoeuvring otherwise. Finally all parties had been called to Constantinople by Constantius, and Basil, who may have been a deacon by this time, attended in some inconspicuous capacity. His attitude in the Council we do not know, but in the same year he broke with his bishop, Dianius of Caesarea, for subscribing to the creed of Ariminum, and they remained thus estranged until Dianus' reconciliation with the Nicene faith on his death-bed.

Dianius' successor, Eusebius, was orthodox, but possessed not the firmness to guide the Cappadocian Church through the storms stirred up by Arian aggression and Julian's hostility. Under these circumstances Gregory of Nazianzus finally persuaded Basil to come to Eusebius at Caesarea. Here he was ordained to the priesthood, after many misgivings as to his fitness for the priestly office, in 364. He plunged into administrative work and was soon the most influential figure in the diocese. The very vigour of his work was in such strange contrast to the feeble measures of Eusebius that unpleasantness was inevitable. The details that led to their estrangement are not known, but Gregory of Nazianzus at any rate thought Basil ill-used.\(^1\) The affair finally reached the stage that the bishops, who had objected to the violent nomination of Eusebius and only with difficulty had been induced to admit

\(^1\) Or. XLIII. 28; Letters XVI.–XVII.
the lawfulness of his consecration, were ready to consecrate Basil in his stead. Basil, perceiving that his elevation to the episcopacy at this time would divide the orthodox clergy of Cappadocia, refused consecration and retired again to his monastery, accompanied by Gregory.

Encouraged by the thought that in the retirement of Basil the Catholics of Cappadocia were now deprived of their strongest champion, the Emperor Valens in 365 threatened to visit Caesarea personally in behalf of Arianism. Eusebius in this crisis would have been content with Gregory's aid, but the latter refused to act without Basil. A reconciliation was effected, largely through the efforts of Gregory, and Basil returned to Caesarea ready to co-operate loyally with Eusebius. Nothing was done by the Arians, however. The Emperor, from the mere knowledge of Basil's return, gave up the visit.

Basil was able to spend the next five years loyally upholding Eusebius' authority, and increasing the powers of the see. The outstanding event of this period was the great drought and famine, which Basil describes so eloquently in his homily, *On the Famine and Drought*. The vigour he applied to other crises he addressed to this. He sold what possessions he had to buy food with the proceeds, and made eloquent and successful appeals to the rich to follow his example.

4. Basil and Arianism

St. Basil's chief concern as a prelate of the Church, what in fact contributed chiefly to his elevation to

1 Migne, *P.G. XXXI.* 62.
the episcopacy, was the heresy known in history as Subordinationism. And in those "mournful days of boundless controversy," 1 St. Basil stood out among his fellows as the surest guide. After Athanasius, it was to Basil that the Church owed the restoration of peace.

Subordinationism struck at the heart of Christianity—the Trinity. It made a double assault on this dogma. It began with a denial of the co-equality of the Son with the Father, and later impugned the divinity of the Holy Spirit. The former is known as Arianism and the latter as Macedonianism—each taking its name from its chief exponent, Arius and Macedonius respectively. The destructiveness of their views is immediately evident in the object of their attacks, but a brief review of their heresies is necessary for an understanding of the correspondence which they elicited, and for an intelligent appreciation of the controversy when Basil entered the lists as co-worker and then successor of the great St. Athanasius.

The fundamental tenet of Arianism was that the Son of God is a creature. He is not a creature like other creatures, but a creature nevertheless. Though Arius allows the Son the title God, yet he reminds us that His divinity must be taken in a moral sense only—μετοχω. 2 He maintained 3 that the Son had a beginning, ἂρχὴν ὑπάρχειν, ἦν ὁτε οὐκ ἦν; and further that the Son was not begotten out of the substance of the Father but was made out of nothing—ἐξ οὐκ ὑντων ἐγένετο.

1 Letter LXIX.
2 "By participation," cf. Athanasius, Oration against the Arians, I. 9.
3 Socrates, Ecclesiastical History, I. 5.
INTRODUCTION

The First Ecumenical Council, summoned by Constantine at Nicaea in Bithynia in A.D. 325, rejected this view as heresy, but failed to put an end to the controversy. In the Creed drawn up at the Council were used two words around which the Subordinationist controversy was destined to resolve, ὄμοιόσιος and ὑπόστασις. To the Council ὀνήσια and ὑπόστασις were practically synonyms, meaning "nature," "essence," or "substance." In the strife of the times they gradually drew apart, and St. Basil was an important factor in their differentiation. After the year 370 he expresses the orthodox doctrine of the Trinity in one phrase: μία ὀνήσια, τρεῖς ὑποστάσεις, "one substance, three persons."

The career of the word ὄμοιόσιος alone sums up almost Arian warfare in the fourth century. As often as the word itself was modified and as often as it received a new interpretation, a new party arose within the Church to divide Christendom. Ὥμοιόσιος is clearly derived from ὁμός and ὀνήσια, and ὀνήσια, once the smoke of battle had drifted away, just as clearly signified "substance" when employed of God. Accordingly, ὄμοιόσιος came to mean "of like substance." Since the substance of anything is that which makes it what it is, the ὀνήσια of God is that which makes Him God. If the Son, then, is ὄμοιόσιος τοῦ Πατρί, He is likewise God. But before the Council of Nicaea, ὄμοιόσιος was used variously by the theologians. To some it denoted only a general similarity, as it did to Aristotle when he employed it of the stars. What became the Nicene interpretation, however, had not been unknown to the theologians of the second and third centuries.
INTRODUCTION

The introduction of this word into the Nicene Creed and its adoption as the test of orthodoxy came about as follows. There were three parties in the Council, according to St. Athanasius—the Arians, the Eusebians under the leadership of Eusebius of Nicomedia, and the orthodox party led by Athanasius himself. Radical Arianism as propounded by Arius was too flagrantly heterodox to find many defenders in the Council. Yet there were many willing to chose a via media between Athanasius and Arius. These joined the Eusebians or "intermediate party," whose heterodoxy was subtle enough to deceive many. When the Fathers determined on ἐκ τοῦ θεοῦ as opposed to the ἐξ οὐκ ὄντων of Arius, the Eusebians consulted among themselves and found a special interpretation to cover their heterodoxy. Their ambiguities made only for more precision, however, for the Council amplified its statement to ἐκ τῆς οὐσίας τοῦ θεοῦ. The Eusebians still endeavoured to find a loophole. But when their leader submitted a note declaring openly that the Son was not "of one substance with the Father," heresy furnished from its own scabbard a weapon to cut off its own head,1 and ὁμοούσιος τῷ Πατρί, "of like substance with the Father," was inserted in the Creed. The Emperor Constantine exhorted all present to subscribe to the Creed, thus elaborated by the insertion of ὁμοούσιος, and declared it the test of orthodoxy. Eusebius withdrew his opposition to the phrase, ὁμοούσιος τῷ Πατρί, but refused to sanction the excommunication of Arius. Since neither would sign, they were banished by an

1 Cf. St. Ambrose, De Fide, III. 7.
INTRODUCTION

emperor who looked upon heresy as tantamount to civil rebellion.

Shortly after the Council of Nicea a reaction set in, and a party was formed against the Council. Its leader, as might be expected, was Eusebius of Nicomedia. This new party was made up of the old conservatives who thought Nicea had been too radical, the remnant of the old radical Arians, and many whose sole reason for being included was their personal hostility to Athanasius. There were some also who were afraid of the Emperor, now unfortunately become the patron of the Eusebians.

The sincerity of Eusebius and his followers from this time is seriously open to question. Their zeal for doctrinal warfare seems to fall behind their hunger for imperial patronage. The success they attained in this latter enterprise is seen in the treatment dealt out, through their machinations, to St. Athanasius, who through five exiles and fifty years of controversy was the personification of orthodoxy. At the synod of Antioch in 341 they shifted their attack to the ὅμοιοςις itsel. In the Creeds drawn up by that synod the ὅμοιοςις was not actually condemned, since there were orthodox bishops present, but mention of it was so scrupulously avoided that the precision of the Nicene Creed was nullified.

Elated by this local victory, the Eusebians laboured for a General Council. Sardica was proposed as the place of its assembly. Owing to a dispute with the orthodox Westerners over the admission of Athanasius, the Eusebians withdrew to Philippolis, where they reissued their Antiochene Creed with its avoidance of the ὅμοιοςις (343). But there was quiet for a time.
INTRODUCTION

The death of Constans, the patron of the orthodox West, and of Magnetius left Constantius the sole ruler of the thus reunited empire of his father. From this time his intention of suppressing the ὄμοιούσιον became daily more manifest. The Eusebians took advantage of the Arianizing tendencies of the Emperor and sought to make their doctrine co-extensive with his power. Ὅμοιον was practically abandoned. Athanasius was dispatched on one of his periodic exiles, and bishops who dared to protest received like treatment—among them the venerable Hosius.

The suppression of the ὄμοιούσιον and the violence done its defenders put down orthodoxy, but it also took the band of union away from the Eusebian party. With the ὄμοιούσιον interdicted and the common enemy banished, the internal divisions among the Eusebians became more marked. Within their ranks two parties promptly crystallized, and a third was to grow out of them. As heretics they all agreed that the Son was not of the same substance as the Father, ὄμοιούσιος τῷ Πατρί, and the question arose as to the likeness of the Son to the Father. The conservatives, known in history as the Semiarians, maintained that there was some likeness of substance, but only a likeness, and substituted for the Nicene ὄμοιούσιος the vague ὄμοιούσιος, “of similar substance.” Others argued with Aetius and Valens for no likeness in substance, ἄνομοιος. These last were called Anomoeans, and in the Second Sirmium Creed they rejected ὄμοιούσιος and ὄμοιούσιος as being non-scriptural and a cause of scruples.

At this point Constantius, desirous of restoring universal peace among the Arianizing parties, pro-
posed a General Council. The Anomoean party, fearing a coalition of the Oriental Semi-arians and the orthodox Westerners, suggested a double Council—Orientals to meet at Seleucia and the Occidentals at Rimini. To expedite matters as well as to forestall a direct repudiation of the Anomoean doctrine, a new creed called the Fourth Sirmium was drawn up at a preliminary meeting. The Emperor guaranteed to have it ratified by both sections of the Council. This creed made no mention of ὁμοιότατον and maintained that the Son was like (ὁμοιός) the Father in all things (κατὰ πάντα). At the double meeting of the Council, however, when the creed was presented with the mysterious deletion of κατὰ πάντα, the bishops refused to sign. Both sittings despatched deputies to the court, and there the protesting delegates were forced to subscribe to the ὁμοιότατον creed with its deletion of the κατὰ πάντα. The following year, 360, this creed received the approbation of the Council of Constantinople, and all bishops were ordered to subscribe to it under threat of exile. So few refused to subscribe that St. Jerome remarks, "The whole world groaned in astonishment to find itself Arian" (Ingemuit totus orbis et Arianum se esse miratus est).\(^1\)

However, a new Nicene party was now coming to life in Cappadocia. Within the province which both Julian and Valens had found incorrigibly Christian, as a whole, equally irresponsible to either pagan violence or Arian polemics, was formed the alliance that decided the fate of Subordinationism. The

\(^1\) Jerome, \textit{c. Luciferianos}, 19.
persecution of the court and the vagueness of the ὀμοίων party were bound to produce a reaction, and there were men in Cappadocia who saw the inevitable trend through all the smoke of battle. Serious-minded Arians of all shades of difference began to desert their camps. After the death of Constantius there grew up a general movement among Cappadocian heretics towards Rome and orthodoxy. This secession of malcontents was the beginning of the end. The movement spread to more heretical provinces. At length there was only needed a union with the Nicenes of Egypt to dominate the East. This coalition was the policy of St. Basil, now coming to the front of Nicene leaders.

5. Basil as Archbishop

In 370 Eusebius of Caesarea died, and the archiepiscopal throne became vacant. Basil, however, who had borne the brunt of its duties for some years, was still alive in the fullness of his power.1 Any unbiased observer could see that, of all possible candidates for the vacant see, Basil was both the ablest and most likely to direct events in the interests of orthodoxy. From the interpretation one gives to Letter LX. (XXI.) of Gregory Nazianzenus, one must form one’s opinion of Basil’s motives in procuring his own election, but considering the disinterestedness that motivated his ecclesiastical career as a whole we are bound to believe that in this instance too he was acting solely in the best interests of the Church. A man led only by selfish ambition would not have sought the see of

1 Greg. Naz., Or. XLIII. 23.
INTRODUCTION

Caesarea during the seventh decade of the fourth century.

Basil had long been highly regarded in Cappadocia, and, on his election to the archiepiscopacy, though opposed by some of the priests with Arian tendencies, he resolutely set about enforcing the decisions of Nicea. He was better prepared for such a task than anyone available in the East. An ascetic, he could control monastic activities; a leader, he could organize the orthodox strength; a rhetorician, he could sway all who heard him; and a disciple of St. Athanasius, he could see the correct position with unerring eye. Furthermore, his life was blameless, and his friends were everywhere.

But the Emperor Valens, a confirmed Arian, heartily disliked both the Cappadocian clergy for their homoousian beliefs and the people for their following the clergy. In 371 he staggered Caesarea by creating a new province of Cappadocia Secunda, with a civil and ecclesiastical centre at Tyana. This spelled political ruin for Basil's city, and indirect but heavy damage to the Church. Valens was finally overawed by the Saint's determination. After one weak attempt at forcing Basil into the unorthodox creed, the Emperor desisted from further religious activities in Cappadocia.

This point marked the real cessation of court influence, and, with nothing further to fear from imperial interference, Basil concentrated his energies upon retaining the rank and file of Cappadocia within strictly orthodox limits. Under his guidance, Cappadocia was spiritually united to the Nicenes of Egypt, Syria, and the West. Gradually it became apparent that heresy was once more opposed by an
INTRODUCTION

unbroken front. But even then the task was a difficult one, for the dying struggles of the great heresy were also its bitterest and most malignant.

Basil did not live to see Arianism utterly stamped out, but an eye as keen as his could not have failed to foresee its collapse. Gradually exhausted by his ascetic practices and the burdens of his see, Basil died on January 1, 379, in the fiftieth year of his age. The nine years of his episcopate had been stormy beyond measure. But they had witnessed practically the complete overthrow of the greatest heresy of the early centuries, a final definitive stand upon the doctrine of the Trinity, the reunion of the scattered orthodox elements in the East, and the undoubted preservation of the faith in Cappadocia and adjoining countries.

A short sketch forbids the consideration of his other activities: his philanthropies, his ministrations as a priest and bishop, his voluminous writings. His was a hard and crowded career from his student days at Caesarea to the end, and its demands drew him into many fields. The width and depth of his interests are portrayed for us fortunately in his letters. Without these, one may learn much of his great achievements, such was his impress on his time and its records, but one does not know St. Basil. The letters soften that impression of hardness which the bare recital of strenuous exploit gives. They alone bring out in all its fullness that compound sternness and humour, kindliness and firmness that makes him one of the most attractive as he was one of the greatest of the Fathers.

1 Socrates in the Ecc. Hist. IV. 26 dwells at length upon Basil's many exertions.

xxxiv
INTRODUCTION

II. SOME IMPORTANT WORKS OF ST. BASIL.

1. Dogmatic Writings
   Against Eunomius ('Ανατρεπτικὸς τοῦ 'Ἀπολογητικοῦ τοῦ δυσσεβῶς Εὐνόμου); composed in 363 or 364, in three books, to which have been added two others, which very probably belong to Didymus the Blind.
   On the Holy Spirit (Περὶ τοῦ Ἁγίου Πνεύματος); written about 375.

2. Ascetic Writings
   The authenticity of the greater number of these works has been more or less impugned. The following are the most important and of undoubted authenticity:
   Longer Rules for Monks ("Οροι κατὰ πλάτος); 55 in number.
   Shorter Rules for Monks ("Οροι κατ’ ἐπιτομὴν); 313 in number.

3. Sermons
   Of a collection of sermons which has come down to us, the following are the most noteworthy and of undoubted authenticity:
   Nine Homilies on the Creation (the Hexaemeron).
   Thirteen Homilies on the Psalms.
   Against Usurers (Κατὰ τοκιζόντων).
   To Youths, on how they shall best profit by the writings of the pagan authors (Πρὸς τοὺς νέους ὅπως ἄν ἔξε Ελληνικῶν ὀφελοῦντο λόγων).

4. Letters
   The correspondence of St. Basil forms a collection of 365 letters (Benedictine edition) and is divided
INTRODUCTION

into three classes by the Benedictine editors: Class I, the letters written before his episcopate, A.D. 357 to 370 (Letters I. to XLVI.); Class II, the letters written during his episcopate, A.D. 370 to 378 (Letters XLVII. to CCXCI.); and Class III, the letters which cannot be assigned to any general period, and many doubtful and spurious ones (Letters CCXCII.-CCCLXV.).

Of the numerous lost works of Basil were a treatise against Manichaeans, and homilies which dealt with various parts of the Scriptures.

III. St. Basil's Letters

When characterizing the letters of St. Basil, we must bear in mind a new and important function which letter-writing was performing in the life of his time. The letter was the most effective means of publicity at one's disposal; it was performing in its circumscribed way the service now furnished by the newspaper. The letter had already done such duty in the days of the late Republic. Under the Empire its possibilities were further exploited.¹ How could the people of Rome be kept informed of the turn of events in the other part of the Empire? And similarly how could a person in one of the provinces know about the trend of things at Rome? This was hardly possible in any detail except through the letters of their friends. If the news they contained was of wide concern, the addressee might pass the letter on to people of his acquaintance, and thus it could go from person to

INTRODUCTION

person, and eventually become public property. These letters might be addressed to one person or to several, and occasionally they were posted in some public place.

It was by the letter as a medium of publicity that Athanasius, Basil, Gregory, and others of the Fathers braved the persecutions of the Arian emperors. These letters addressed to friends or congregations were copied and circulated everywhere by the faithful, in spite of the surveillance of heretics and governors, and thus kept united the orthodoxy of the Orient. They visited churches isolated amid Arians, they encouraged exiled bishops, consoled and sustained congregations left without pastors, and everywhere revived the hope of the weak and strengthened the courage of the strong.

St. Basil's letters are of this kind largely, in both effect and intention public documents, meant for a church or province and frequently so addressed. Letters of a purely private character can be found, but neither the addressee nor the opening sentence is an unfailing index thereto. More often than not these intimate preliminaries are but stepping-stones to matters of such wide concern that in the conventions of the time the letter was destined to wide circulation.

Yet the personal touch is too strong in them to allow the inference that St. Basil intended them as literature. His sophistic education could not but give them such a turn, but, as in the case of his sermons and treatises, so here too a literary tradition has come into contact with things of life. It is a happy coincidence that this is so, but it is only a coincidence. If Basil had not gone to Caesarea and xxxvii
INTRODUCTION

Constantinople and Athens, these letters, with far less of finish certainly, must still have been written, for the needs of the time demanded them. They are the response of a St. Paul to the stern realities of a crisis rather than the researches of a Pliny the Younger stealing an excuse for literary display. They have much of the art of Pliny’s playthings, but they have more of the frank reactions of St. Paul to the troubles and delinquencies of his spiritual children.

In classifying epistolary remains it is the fashion to divide them according to the purpose of the writer. If they were primarily intended as literature and are letters only in the form they have assumed, they are called "literary." If they are letters in fact, called forth by a real occasion, they are called "non-literary." Now it is the paradox of St. Basil that in the terminology of criticism his letters are at once non-literary and yet literature. For the Saint they were the instrument of a protagonist and administrator and loyal friend, couched in the literary grace that was a part of him, but meant to serve the occasion only, unrepressed in their free outpouring by any thought of a future; and they are therefore non-literary. For the afterworld they are a precious record of fourth-century Asia Minor and an indispensable key to the character of their author, cherished for themselves apart from their witness; and they are therefore literature. In them we see the artist at his best; in them we see the man as he is.¹

¹ St. Gregory of Nazianzus tells us that he made a collection of the letters of St. Basil at the request of a certain Nicobulus (cf. Letter LIII.). This was probably xxxviii
INTRODUCTION

IV. Table of Dates

A.D. 325. Council of Nicea.
336. Death of Arius.
337. Death of Constantine, and succession of Constantius and his brothers, Constans and Constantine.
343 (c.) St. Basil starts from Annesi to attend school at Caesarea.
346 (c.) St. Basil goes to Constantinople.
350. Death of Constans.
351. Constantius becomes sole Emperor. St. Basil goes to the University at Athens.
355. Julian goes to Athens.
356 (c.) St. Basil returns to Caesarea. The publication of the Life of St. Antony by St. Athanasius.
357 (c.) St. Basil is baptized and is soon afterwards ordained as Reader.
358 (c.) St. Basil visits the monks of Egypt, Syria, Palestine, and Mesopotamia, and then retires to Pontus.

an easy task for Gregory because of the ancient custom of keeping letter-books. These books contained either copies of letters written by the owner, or collections of letters received from others (cf. Wilcken, Archiv, 1, 168 and 372). Gregory appears to have made his collection of St. Basil’s letters from various sources, and such a collection would in all probability have the letters to the same addressee grouped together, just as they were taken from the different books. It is interesting to note that the order of the letters of the Aa family of MSS. is by groups according to addressee. The archetype of this group may very well have gone back to the original collection of St. Gregory of Nazianzus.
INTRODUCTION

A.D.
358-361. During this period of his life (monastic)
   St. Basil writes the Philocalia, Moralia,
   and the Rules.
360. St. Basil is ordained deacon. He dis-
   putes with Aetius. The Bishop
   Dianius subscribes to the Creed of
   Ariminum, and St. Basil accordingly
   leaves Caesarea. He pays a visit to
   St. Gregory of Nazianzus.
361-363. Julian the Apostate becomes Emperor.
363. Julian dies on June 27, and Jovian
   succeeds him.
364. Jovian is succeeded by Valentinian and
   Valens.
364 (c.) St. Basil is ordained priest. He writes
   his work against Eunomius.
369. St. Emmelia dies. St. Basil visits
   Samosata.
370. Death of Eusebius of Caesarea. St. Basil
   is elected Archbishop of Caesarea.
372. Parleys of Basil and Valens. St. Basil
   persuades Gregory of Nazianzus to
   be consecrated Bishop of Sasima.
   He consecrates his brother Gregory,
   Bishop of Nyssa. Estrangement of
   St. Basil and Gregory of Nazianzus.
375. Death of Valentinian. Gratian and
   Valentinian II become Emperors.
378. Death of Valens.
379. Death of St. Basil (Jan. 1). Accession
   of Theodosius.
INTRODUCTION

V. Bibliography

1. Manuscripts

The most important manuscripts of St. Basil’s Letters as selected and arranged by Abbé J. Bessières\(^1\) are the following:

**BRANCH A**

*Family .Aa*

Baroccius 121. Oxford . . . . XI s.
Laurent. Mediceus LVII. 7. Florence XI et XII s.
Vaticanus 434 fonds. Vatican, Rome . XIII s.
Marcianus 61. Venice . . . . XI s.
Patmius 57. Patmos . . . . XII s.
Parisinus 334 S. Paris . . . . XVI s.

*Family .Ab*

Parisinus 763 S. Paris . . . . XI s.
Vindobonensis 142. Vienna . . . . XI s.
Estensis 229. Modena . . . . XI XII s.
Marcianus 79. Venice . . . . XII s.

*Family .Ac*

Parisinus 967. Paris . . . . XIV s.
Parisinus 1021 S. Paris . . . . XIII s.

---

INTRODUCTION

BRANCH B

Family Bo
Parisinus 37 P. Arsenal . . . . XI s.
Vaticanus 713 fonds. Vatican, Rome . XIII s.
Monacensis 497. Munich . . . . XI s.

Family Bu
Vaticanus 2209 f. Vatican . . . . X/XI s.
Parisinus 971. Paris . . . . XVI s.
Ambrosianus 604. Milan . . . . XVI s.

Family Bx
Parisinus 1020 S. Paris . . . . XI s.

Family Bz
Vaticanus 435 f. Vatican, Rome . . . . XIII s.
Berolinensis 23. Berlin . . . . XVI s.

2. Editions

Vincent Obsopoeus, Grossenhain, 1528.
Bale, first edition, 1532.
Stephanus Sabius, Venice, 1535.
Bale, second edition, 1551.
Claudius Morellus, Paris, 1618.
S. Cramoisy, Paris, 1638.
François Combesis, Paris, 1679.1

1 This work is a collection of critical annotations to the text of St. Basil’s letters. François Combesis, a Dominican, had prepared an edition of the works of St. Basil, which was not published because of Combesis’s death in 1679. We have here his observations on the text, as published by the Dominican, Vincent Lefèvre.

xlii
INTRODUCTION

Garnier and Maran, Paris, 1839 (a second edition of the preceding work).
Patrologia Graeca (a reproduction of Garnier’s edition).

3. Translations of the Letters


Kaplanides. The complete works translated into modern Greek. Athens, 1900.

4. Miscellaneous Works on St. Basil

A very complete list of the works on St. Basil may be obtained by consulting the following:


Hoffmann, Bibliograph-Lexikon der gesamten Literatur der Griechen, i. 407–421.

Klussmann, Bibliotheca Scriptorum Classicorum, Scriptores Graeci, i. 367–370.

Some of the more important individual works are:

xliii
INTRODUCTION

Eirenides, Βίος τοῦ ἐν ἀγίως πατρὸς ἧμῶν Βασιλείου τοῦ Μεγάλου. Athens, 1881.
Guignet, Les procédés épistolaires de St. Grégoire
INTRODUCTION

de Nazianze comparés à ceux de ses contemporains. Paris, 1911.


Martin, V., Essai sur les lettres de Saint Basile le Grand. Nantes, 1865.


Tillemont, L., Mémoires pour servir à l'histoire ecclésiastique des six premiers siècles, Tome IX. Paris, 1693–1712.

## INTRODUCTION

VI. The Letters of St. Basil arranged in Parallel Columns according to the Benedictine, and the Older Numbering.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>I</td>
<td>165</td>
<td>XXXVII</td>
<td>248</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>II</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>XXXVIII</td>
<td>43</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>III</td>
<td>175</td>
<td>XXXIX</td>
<td>206</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IV</td>
<td>169</td>
<td>XL</td>
<td>207</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>V</td>
<td>188</td>
<td>XLI</td>
<td>208</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VI</td>
<td>189</td>
<td>XLII</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VII</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>XLIII</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VIII</td>
<td>141</td>
<td>XLIV</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IX</td>
<td>41</td>
<td>XLV</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>X</td>
<td>175</td>
<td>XLVI</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XI</td>
<td>259</td>
<td>XLVII</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XII</td>
<td>174</td>
<td>XLVIII</td>
<td>254</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XIII</td>
<td>172</td>
<td>XLIX</td>
<td>408</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XIV</td>
<td>19</td>
<td>L</td>
<td>409</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XV</td>
<td>415</td>
<td>LI</td>
<td>86</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XVI</td>
<td>168</td>
<td>LII</td>
<td>300</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XVII</td>
<td>384</td>
<td>LIII</td>
<td>76</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XVIII</td>
<td>211</td>
<td>LIV</td>
<td>181</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XIX</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>LV</td>
<td>198</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XX</td>
<td>83</td>
<td>LVI</td>
<td>354</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXI</td>
<td>373</td>
<td>LVII</td>
<td>56</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXII</td>
<td>411</td>
<td>LVIII</td>
<td>44</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXIII</td>
<td>383</td>
<td>LIX</td>
<td>46</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXIV</td>
<td>54</td>
<td>LX</td>
<td>45</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXV</td>
<td>53</td>
<td>LXI</td>
<td>47</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXVI</td>
<td>362</td>
<td>LXII</td>
<td>185</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXVII</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>LXIII</td>
<td>371</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXVIII</td>
<td>62</td>
<td>LXIV</td>
<td>350</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXIX</td>
<td>67</td>
<td>LXV</td>
<td>363</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXX</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>LXVI</td>
<td>48</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXXI</td>
<td>267</td>
<td>LXVII</td>
<td>50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXXII</td>
<td>84</td>
<td>LXVIII</td>
<td>57</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXXIII</td>
<td>358</td>
<td>LXIX</td>
<td>52</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXXIV</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>LXX</td>
<td>220</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXXV</td>
<td>236</td>
<td>LXXI</td>
<td>33</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXXVI</td>
<td>228</td>
<td>LXXII</td>
<td>351</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

xlvi
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Benedictine,</th>
<th>Older Arrangement.</th>
<th>Benedictine,</th>
<th>Older Arrangement.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>LXXIII</td>
<td>388</td>
<td>CXIV</td>
<td>204</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LXXIV</td>
<td>379</td>
<td>CXV</td>
<td>87</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LXXV</td>
<td>361</td>
<td>CXVI</td>
<td>174</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LXXVI</td>
<td>331</td>
<td>CXVII</td>
<td>234</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LXXVII</td>
<td>226</td>
<td>CXVIII</td>
<td>318</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LXXVIII</td>
<td>215</td>
<td>CXIX</td>
<td>307</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LXXIX</td>
<td>308</td>
<td>CXX</td>
<td>58</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LXXX</td>
<td>49</td>
<td>CXXI</td>
<td>195</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LXXXI</td>
<td>319</td>
<td>CXXII</td>
<td>313</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LXXXII</td>
<td>51</td>
<td>CXXIII</td>
<td>343</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LXXXIII</td>
<td>427</td>
<td>CXXIV</td>
<td>328</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LXXXIV</td>
<td>339</td>
<td>CXXV</td>
<td>78</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LXXXV</td>
<td>305</td>
<td>CXXVI</td>
<td>364</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LXXXVI</td>
<td>179</td>
<td>CXXVII</td>
<td>253</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LXXXVII</td>
<td>390</td>
<td>CXXVIII</td>
<td>265</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LXXXVIII</td>
<td>243</td>
<td>CXXIX</td>
<td>59</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LXXXIX</td>
<td>273</td>
<td>CXXX</td>
<td>196</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XC</td>
<td>61</td>
<td>CXXXI</td>
<td>382</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XCI</td>
<td>324</td>
<td>CXXXII</td>
<td>315</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XCI</td>
<td>69</td>
<td>CXXXIII</td>
<td>320</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XCV</td>
<td>239</td>
<td>CXXXIV</td>
<td>341</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XCVI</td>
<td>372</td>
<td>CXXXV</td>
<td>167</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XCVII</td>
<td>261</td>
<td>CXXXVI</td>
<td>257</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XCVIII</td>
<td>322</td>
<td>CXXXVII</td>
<td>366</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XCVIII</td>
<td>68</td>
<td>CXXXVIII</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XCVIII</td>
<td>259</td>
<td>CXXXIX</td>
<td>71</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XCI</td>
<td>187</td>
<td>CXL</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C</td>
<td>256</td>
<td>CXLII</td>
<td>262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CI</td>
<td>202</td>
<td>CXLIII</td>
<td>418</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CII</td>
<td>133</td>
<td>CXLIV</td>
<td>419</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CIII</td>
<td>296</td>
<td>CXLV</td>
<td>420</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CIV</td>
<td>279</td>
<td>CXLVI</td>
<td>255</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CV</td>
<td>301</td>
<td>CXLVII</td>
<td>268</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CVI</td>
<td>407</td>
<td>CXLVIII</td>
<td>356</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CVII</td>
<td>287</td>
<td>CXLIX</td>
<td>376</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CVIII</td>
<td>288</td>
<td>CL</td>
<td>377</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CIX</td>
<td>422</td>
<td>CL</td>
<td>392</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CX</td>
<td>277</td>
<td>CLI</td>
<td>81</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CXI</td>
<td>276</td>
<td>CLII</td>
<td>374</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CXII</td>
<td>164</td>
<td>CLIII</td>
<td>428</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CXIII</td>
<td>203</td>
<td>CLIV</td>
<td>337</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### INTRODUCTION

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Benedictine Arrangement</th>
<th>Cl.</th>
<th>Benedictine Arrangement</th>
<th>Cl.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>CLV</td>
<td>241</td>
<td>CXCVI</td>
<td>359</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CLVI</td>
<td>342</td>
<td>CXCVII</td>
<td>55</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CLVII</td>
<td>270</td>
<td>CXCVIII</td>
<td>263</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CLVIII</td>
<td>271</td>
<td>CXCIX</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CLIX</td>
<td>387</td>
<td>CC</td>
<td>397</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CLX</td>
<td>197</td>
<td>CCI</td>
<td>402</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CLXI</td>
<td>393</td>
<td>CCII</td>
<td>396</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CLXII</td>
<td>258</td>
<td>CCIII</td>
<td>77</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CLXIII</td>
<td>373</td>
<td>CCIV</td>
<td>75</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CLXIV</td>
<td>338</td>
<td>CCV</td>
<td>322</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CLXV</td>
<td>339</td>
<td>CCVI</td>
<td>348</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CLXVI</td>
<td>251</td>
<td>CCVII</td>
<td>63</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CLXVII</td>
<td>252</td>
<td>CCVIII</td>
<td>281</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CLXVIII</td>
<td>269</td>
<td>CCIX</td>
<td>227</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CLXIX</td>
<td>412</td>
<td>CCX</td>
<td>64</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CLXX</td>
<td>414</td>
<td>CCXI</td>
<td>170</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CLXXI</td>
<td>413</td>
<td>CCXII</td>
<td>370</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CLXXII</td>
<td>335</td>
<td>CCXIII</td>
<td>242</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CLXXIII</td>
<td>302</td>
<td>CCXIV</td>
<td>349</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CLXXIV</td>
<td>283</td>
<td>CCXV</td>
<td>250</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CLXXV</td>
<td>410</td>
<td>CCXVI</td>
<td>272</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CLXXVI</td>
<td>394</td>
<td>CCXVII</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CLXXVII</td>
<td>334</td>
<td>CCXVIII</td>
<td>403</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CLXXVIII</td>
<td>360</td>
<td>CCIX</td>
<td>280</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CLXXIX</td>
<td>380</td>
<td>CCIX</td>
<td>299</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CLXXX</td>
<td>333</td>
<td>CCXI</td>
<td>298</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CLXXXI</td>
<td>316</td>
<td>CCXII</td>
<td>297</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CLXXXII</td>
<td>266</td>
<td>CCXXII</td>
<td>79</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CLXXXIII</td>
<td>294</td>
<td>CCXXIII</td>
<td>345</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CLXXXIV</td>
<td>306</td>
<td>CCXXIV</td>
<td>385</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CLXXXV</td>
<td>310</td>
<td>CCXXV</td>
<td>73</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CLXXXVI</td>
<td>213</td>
<td>CCXXVI</td>
<td>292</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CLXXXVII</td>
<td>214</td>
<td>CCXXVII</td>
<td>290</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CLXXXVIII</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>CCXXVIII</td>
<td>193</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CLXXXIX</td>
<td>80</td>
<td>CCXXXI</td>
<td>194</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CXC</td>
<td>406</td>
<td>CCXXXII</td>
<td>395</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CXCI</td>
<td>398</td>
<td>CCXXXIII</td>
<td>404</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CXCII</td>
<td>329</td>
<td>CCXXXIV</td>
<td>399</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CXCIII</td>
<td>369</td>
<td>CCXXXV</td>
<td>400</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CXCIV</td>
<td>368</td>
<td>CCXXXV</td>
<td>401</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CXCV</td>
<td>312</td>
<td>CCXXXVI</td>
<td>391</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

xlviii
## INTRODUCTION

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Benedictine Arrangement</th>
<th>Older Arrangement</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>CCXXXVII</td>
<td>264</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCXXXIX</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCXL</td>
<td>192</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCXLI</td>
<td>260</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCXLIi</td>
<td>182</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCXLIII</td>
<td>70</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCXLIV</td>
<td>82</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCXLV</td>
<td>309</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCXLVI</td>
<td>66</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCXLVII</td>
<td>190</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCXLVIII</td>
<td>405</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCXLIX</td>
<td>288</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCL</td>
<td>85</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCLI</td>
<td>72</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCLII</td>
<td>291</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCLIII</td>
<td>199</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCLIV</td>
<td>311</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCLV</td>
<td>314</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCLVI</td>
<td>200</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCLVII</td>
<td>303</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCLVIII</td>
<td>325</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCLI-X</td>
<td>184</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCCL</td>
<td>317</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCLXI</td>
<td>65</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCL XII</td>
<td>344</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCL XII</td>
<td>74</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCL XIV</td>
<td>326</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCL XV</td>
<td>293</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCL XVI</td>
<td>321</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCL XVII</td>
<td>327</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCL XVIII</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCL XIX</td>
<td>186</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCL XX</td>
<td>244</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCL XXI</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCL XXII</td>
<td>330</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCL XXIII</td>
<td>216</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCL XXIV</td>
<td>416</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCL XXV</td>
<td>217</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCL XXVI</td>
<td>365</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCL XXVII</td>
<td>42</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCL XXVIII</td>
<td>425</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

-d-  xlix
### INTRODUCTION

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>CCCXX</td>
<td>221</td>
<td>CCCXLIII</td>
<td>150</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCCXXI</td>
<td>212</td>
<td>CCCXLIV</td>
<td>151</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCCXXII</td>
<td>223</td>
<td>CCCXLV</td>
<td>152</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCCXXIII</td>
<td>355</td>
<td>CCCXLVI</td>
<td>153</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCCXXIV</td>
<td>375</td>
<td>CCCXLVII</td>
<td>154</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCCXXV</td>
<td>381</td>
<td>CCCXLVIII</td>
<td>155</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCCXXVI</td>
<td>224</td>
<td>CCCXLIX</td>
<td>156</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCCXXVII</td>
<td>225</td>
<td>CCCL</td>
<td>157</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCCXXVIII</td>
<td>367</td>
<td>CCCLI</td>
<td>158</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCCXXIX</td>
<td>282</td>
<td>CCCLII</td>
<td>159</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCCXXX</td>
<td>176</td>
<td>CCCLIII</td>
<td>160</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCCXXXI</td>
<td>240</td>
<td>CCCLIV</td>
<td>161</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCCXXXII</td>
<td>177</td>
<td>CCCLV</td>
<td>162</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCCXXXIII</td>
<td>178</td>
<td>CCCLVI</td>
<td>163</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCCXXXIV</td>
<td>180</td>
<td>CCCLVII</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCCXXXV</td>
<td>142</td>
<td>CCCLVIII</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCCXXXVI</td>
<td>143</td>
<td>CCCLIX</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCCXXXVII</td>
<td>144</td>
<td>CCCLX</td>
<td>205</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCCXXXVIII</td>
<td>145</td>
<td>CCCLXI</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCCXXXIX</td>
<td>146</td>
<td>CCCLXII</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCCXL</td>
<td>147</td>
<td>CCCLXIII</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCCXLI</td>
<td>148</td>
<td>CCCLXIV</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCCXLII</td>
<td>149</td>
<td>CCCLXV</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### VII. The Letters of St. Basil arranged in Parallel Columns according to the Older, and the Benedictine Numbering.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Older,</th>
<th>Benedictine Arrangement.</th>
<th>Older,</th>
<th>Benedictine Arrangement.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>XLII</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>XIX</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>XLIIs</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>XLVII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>XLIV</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>XXXIV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>XLV</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>XXVII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>XLVI</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>XXX</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>XXIII</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>CXXX</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>CXCIX</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>CCCLXIX</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>CCXVII</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>CCLXX</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>H</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>XIX</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>VII</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>XIV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Older</td>
<td>Benedictine Arrangement</td>
<td>Older</td>
<td>Benedictine Arrangement</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-------</td>
<td>-------------------------</td>
<td>-------</td>
<td>-------------------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>33</td>
<td>LXXI</td>
<td>81</td>
<td>CLI</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>41</td>
<td>IX</td>
<td>82</td>
<td>CCXLIV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>42</td>
<td>CCLXXVII</td>
<td>83</td>
<td>XX</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>43</td>
<td>XXXVIII</td>
<td>84</td>
<td>XXXII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>44</td>
<td>LVIII</td>
<td>85</td>
<td>CCL</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>45</td>
<td>LX</td>
<td>86</td>
<td>LI</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>46</td>
<td>LIX</td>
<td>87</td>
<td>CXV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>47</td>
<td>LXI</td>
<td>141</td>
<td>VIII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>48</td>
<td>LXVI</td>
<td>142</td>
<td>CCCXXXV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>49</td>
<td>LXXX</td>
<td>143</td>
<td>CCCXXXVI</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>50</td>
<td>LXXVII</td>
<td>144</td>
<td>CCCXXXVII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>51</td>
<td>LXXXII</td>
<td>145</td>
<td>CCCXXXVIII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>52</td>
<td>LXIX</td>
<td>146</td>
<td>CCCXXXXI</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>53</td>
<td>XXV</td>
<td>147</td>
<td>CCCXL</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>54</td>
<td>XXIV</td>
<td>148</td>
<td>CCCXLI</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>55</td>
<td>CXCVII</td>
<td>149</td>
<td>CCCXIII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>56</td>
<td>LVII</td>
<td>150</td>
<td>CCCXLIII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>57</td>
<td>LXXVIII</td>
<td>151</td>
<td>CCCXLIV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>58</td>
<td>CXX</td>
<td>152</td>
<td>CCCXLV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>59</td>
<td>CXXIX</td>
<td>153</td>
<td>CCCXLVI</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>60</td>
<td>CXL</td>
<td>154</td>
<td>CCCXLVII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>61</td>
<td>XC</td>
<td>155</td>
<td>CCCXLVIII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>62</td>
<td>XXVIII</td>
<td>156</td>
<td>CCCXLIX</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>63</td>
<td>CCVII</td>
<td>157</td>
<td>CCCL</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>64</td>
<td>CCX</td>
<td>158</td>
<td>CCCLI</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>65</td>
<td>CCLXI</td>
<td>159</td>
<td>CCCLII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>66</td>
<td>CCXLVI</td>
<td>160</td>
<td>CCCLIII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>67</td>
<td>XXIX</td>
<td>161</td>
<td>CCCLIV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>68</td>
<td>XVII</td>
<td>162</td>
<td>CCCLV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>69</td>
<td>XCII</td>
<td>163</td>
<td>CCCLVI</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>70</td>
<td>CCXLIII</td>
<td>164</td>
<td>CXII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>71</td>
<td>CXXXIX</td>
<td>165</td>
<td>I</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>72</td>
<td>CCLI</td>
<td>166</td>
<td>CCXCIII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>73</td>
<td>CCXVII</td>
<td>167</td>
<td>CXXXV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>74</td>
<td>CCLXIII</td>
<td>168</td>
<td>XVI</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>75</td>
<td>CCIV</td>
<td>169</td>
<td>IV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>76</td>
<td>LIII</td>
<td>170</td>
<td>CCXI</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>77</td>
<td>CCIII</td>
<td>171</td>
<td>XII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>78</td>
<td>CXXV</td>
<td>172</td>
<td>XIII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>79</td>
<td>CCXXXIII</td>
<td>173</td>
<td>III</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>80</td>
<td>CLXXXIX</td>
<td>174</td>
<td>CXVI</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
INTRODUCTION

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Older,</th>
<th>Benedictine Arrangement,</th>
<th>Older,</th>
<th>Benedictine Arrangement,</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>175</td>
<td>X</td>
<td>217</td>
<td>CCLXXV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>176</td>
<td>CCCXXX</td>
<td>218</td>
<td>CCCV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>177</td>
<td>CCCXXXII</td>
<td>219</td>
<td>CCCXVI</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>178</td>
<td>CCCXXXIII</td>
<td>220</td>
<td>LXX</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>179</td>
<td>LXXXVI</td>
<td>221</td>
<td>CCCX</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>180</td>
<td>CCCXXXIV</td>
<td>222</td>
<td>CCCXVII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>181</td>
<td>LIV</td>
<td>223</td>
<td>CCCXXII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>182</td>
<td>CCXLII</td>
<td>224</td>
<td>CCCXXVI</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>183</td>
<td>CII</td>
<td>225</td>
<td>CCCXXVII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>184</td>
<td>CCLIX</td>
<td>226</td>
<td>LXXVII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>185</td>
<td>LXII</td>
<td>227</td>
<td>CCI</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>186</td>
<td>CCLXII</td>
<td>228</td>
<td>XXXVI</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>187</td>
<td>XCIX</td>
<td>229</td>
<td>CCLXXXV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>188</td>
<td>V</td>
<td>230</td>
<td>CCLIX</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>189</td>
<td>VI</td>
<td>231</td>
<td>CCCXIV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>190</td>
<td>CCXLVII</td>
<td>232</td>
<td>CCCV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>191</td>
<td>CCXXXVIII</td>
<td>233</td>
<td>CCCVII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>192</td>
<td>CCXL</td>
<td>234</td>
<td>CXVI</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>193</td>
<td>CCXXIX</td>
<td>235</td>
<td>CCXCVIII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>194</td>
<td>CCXXX</td>
<td>236</td>
<td>XXXV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>195</td>
<td>CXXI</td>
<td>237</td>
<td>CCCX</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>196</td>
<td>CXXX</td>
<td>238</td>
<td>CCXLIX</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>197</td>
<td>CXL</td>
<td>239</td>
<td>XI</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>198</td>
<td>LV</td>
<td>240</td>
<td>CCCXXXI</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>199</td>
<td>CCLIII</td>
<td>241</td>
<td>CLV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>200</td>
<td>CCLVI</td>
<td>242</td>
<td>CCXIII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>201</td>
<td>CCC</td>
<td>243</td>
<td>LXXXVIII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>202</td>
<td>CCLVI</td>
<td>244</td>
<td>CCLXX</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>203</td>
<td>CXIII</td>
<td>245</td>
<td>CCLXXXVII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>204</td>
<td>CXIV</td>
<td>246</td>
<td>CCLXXXVIII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>205</td>
<td>CXIII</td>
<td>247</td>
<td>CCCVII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>206</td>
<td>CXIV</td>
<td>248</td>
<td>XXXVII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>207</td>
<td>XL</td>
<td>249</td>
<td>CCLXXXIX</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>208, 209</td>
<td>XLI</td>
<td>250</td>
<td>CCXV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>210</td>
<td>CCXCIV</td>
<td>251</td>
<td>CLXVI</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>211</td>
<td>XVIII</td>
<td>252</td>
<td>CLXVII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>212</td>
<td>CCCXXI</td>
<td>253</td>
<td>CXXVII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>213</td>
<td>CLXXXVI</td>
<td>254</td>
<td>XLVIII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>214</td>
<td>CLXXXVII</td>
<td>255</td>
<td>CXXVII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>215</td>
<td>LXXVIII</td>
<td>256</td>
<td>C</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>216</td>
<td>CCLXXIII</td>
<td>257</td>
<td>CXXXVI</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

l ii
# INTRODUCTION

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Older</th>
<th>Benedictine Arrangement</th>
<th>Older</th>
<th>Benedictine Arrangement</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>258</td>
<td>CLXII</td>
<td>299</td>
<td>CCXXX</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>259</td>
<td>XCVIII</td>
<td>300</td>
<td>LII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>260</td>
<td>CCXLII</td>
<td>301</td>
<td>CV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>261</td>
<td>XCV</td>
<td>302</td>
<td>CLXXXIII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>262</td>
<td>CXLII</td>
<td>303</td>
<td>CCCVII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>263</td>
<td>CXCVIII</td>
<td>304</td>
<td>CCLXXXIV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>264</td>
<td>CCOXXXVII</td>
<td>305</td>
<td>LXXXV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>265</td>
<td>CXXVIII</td>
<td>306</td>
<td>CLXXXIV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>266</td>
<td>CLXXXII</td>
<td>307</td>
<td>CIX</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>267</td>
<td>XXXI</td>
<td>308</td>
<td>LXXIX</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>268</td>
<td>CXLVI</td>
<td>309</td>
<td>CCXLV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>269</td>
<td>CLXVIII</td>
<td>310</td>
<td>CLXXXV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>270</td>
<td>CLVII</td>
<td>311</td>
<td>CCLIV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>271</td>
<td>CLXVIII</td>
<td>312</td>
<td>CXCV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>272</td>
<td>CCXVI</td>
<td>313</td>
<td>CXXII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>273</td>
<td>LXXIX</td>
<td>314</td>
<td>CCLV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>274</td>
<td>CCOXXXIX</td>
<td>315</td>
<td>CXXXII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>275</td>
<td>COLXXX</td>
<td>316</td>
<td>CLXXXI</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>276</td>
<td>CXI</td>
<td>317</td>
<td>CCLX</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>277</td>
<td>CX</td>
<td>318</td>
<td>CXVIII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>278</td>
<td>COLXXXI</td>
<td>319</td>
<td>LXXXI</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>279</td>
<td>CIV</td>
<td>320</td>
<td>CXXXIII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>280</td>
<td>CCXIX</td>
<td>321</td>
<td>CCLXVI</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>281</td>
<td>CCVIII</td>
<td>322</td>
<td>CCV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>282</td>
<td>CCCXXIX</td>
<td>323</td>
<td>CCXC</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>283</td>
<td>CLXXXIV</td>
<td>324</td>
<td>XCI</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>284</td>
<td>CCLXXXIII</td>
<td>325</td>
<td>CCLVIII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>285</td>
<td>CXCXVI</td>
<td>326</td>
<td>CXCIV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>286</td>
<td>CXCXVII</td>
<td>327</td>
<td>CCLXVII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>287</td>
<td>CVII</td>
<td>328</td>
<td>CXXIV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>288</td>
<td>CVIII</td>
<td>329</td>
<td>CXCI</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>289</td>
<td>XCIII</td>
<td>330</td>
<td>CCLXXXII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>290</td>
<td>CCXXXVIII</td>
<td>331</td>
<td>LXXVI</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>291</td>
<td>CCLII</td>
<td>332</td>
<td>XCVI</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>292</td>
<td>CCXXVII</td>
<td>333</td>
<td>CLXXX</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>293</td>
<td>CCLXV</td>
<td>334</td>
<td>CLXXVII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>294</td>
<td>CLXXXIII</td>
<td>335</td>
<td>CLXXII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>295</td>
<td>CXCXV</td>
<td>336</td>
<td>CCLXXXII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>296</td>
<td>CIII</td>
<td>337</td>
<td>CLIV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>297</td>
<td>CCXXII</td>
<td>338</td>
<td>CLXIV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>298</td>
<td>COXXI</td>
<td>339</td>
<td>CLXV</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

liii
INTRODUCTION


340 CCXCI 381 CCCXXV
341 CXXXIV 382 CXXXI
342 CLVI 383 XXIII
343 CXXIII 384 XVII
344 CCLXII 385 CCCXXV
345 CCXXIV 386 CCXCII
346 CCCI 387 CLIX
347 CCCII 388 LXXIII
348 CCVI 389 LXXXIV
349 CCXIV 390 LXXXVII
350 LXIV 391 CCXXXVI
351 LXXII 392 CL
352 CCXCIX 393 CLXI
353 CCCXIII 394 CLXXVI
354 LVI 395 CCXXXI
355 CCCXXIII 396 CCII
356 CXLVII 397 CC
357 CCCIV 398 CXCI
358 XXXIII 399 CCXXXIII
359 CXCVI 400 CCXXXIV
360 CLXXVIII 401 CCXXXV
361 LXXV 402 CCI
362 XXVI 403 CCXVIII
363 LV 404 CCXXXII
364 CXXVI 405 CCXLVIII
365 CCLXXVI 406 CXC
366 CXXXVII 407 CVI
367 CCCXXVII 408 XLIX
368 CXCIV 409 L
369 CXCIII 410 CLXXV
370 CCXII 411 XXII
371 LXIII 412 CLXIX
372 XCIIV 413 CLXI
373 XXI 414 CLXX
374 CLI 415 XV
375 CCCXXIV 416 CCLXXIV
376 CXLVIII 417 CCLXXXVI
377 CLXIX 418 CXLI
378 CLXIII 419 CXLIII
379 LXXIV 420 CXLIV
380 CLXXIX 421 CCCXI

liv
### INTRODUCTION

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Older</th>
<th>Benedictine Arrangement</th>
<th>Older</th>
<th>Benedictine Arrangement</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>422</td>
<td>CIX</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>CCCXVII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>423</td>
<td>CCCIII</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>CCCLVIII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>424</td>
<td>CCCVI</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>CCCLIX</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>425</td>
<td>CCLXXVIII</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>CCCLXI</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>426</td>
<td>CCCXII</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>CCCLXII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>427</td>
<td>LXXXIII</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>CCCLXIII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>428</td>
<td>CLI</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>CCCLXIV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>—</td>
<td>CCCXVIII</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>CCCLXV</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL
Απειρηκότα με ἡδη προς τας παρὰ τῆς λεγο-
μένης τύχης ἐπηρείας, παρ᾽ ἦς ἃν τι πρὸς τὸ μὴ
συγγενέσθαι σοι ἐμπόδιον γέγονε, θαυμαστῶς πως ἀνεκαλέσω καὶ παρεμμυθήσομεν τοῖς γράμμασι. καὶ
γὰρ πῶς ἠδη καὶ κατ᾽ ἐμαυτὸν ἐστρεφον, μὴ ποτε ἄληθὲς ἔστι τὸ παρὰ τῶν πολλῶν θρυλλούμενον,
ὅτι ἀνάγκη τέσσαρα εἰς καὶ εἰμαρμένη ἡ καὶ τὰ μικρὰ καὶ τὰ μείζω τῶν ἡμετέρων ἑγοῦσα, αὐτοὶ δὲ οὐδενὸς
ἔσμεν οἱ ἀνθρώποι κύριοι· ἢ, εἰ μὴ τούτο, τύχη τις πάντως τὸν ἀνθρώπινον ἐλαύνει βίων. καὶ τούτων
πολλῆς συγχυμώμην έξεις τῶν λογισμῶν, ἐπειδὰν
tὰς αἰτίας, υφ᾽ ὦν εἰς αὐτοὺς προήχθην, μάθης.

Ἐγὼ κατέλιπον τὰς Ἀθήνας κατὰ φήμην τῆς
σῆς φιλοσοφίας, ὑπεριδῶν τῶν ἑκεί. παρέδραμον
de τὴν ἐφ᾽ Ελλησπόντῳ πόλιν, ὥς οὔδεις Ὄδυσ-

1 πρὸς Εὐστάθιον πρεσβύτερον Ἀντιοχείας Α, Β; πρὸς Εὐστά-
θιον φιλόσοφον ἀπὸ Ἀντιοχείας πρὸ τοῦ πρεσβύτερον καταστάθηναι
C, D, G; Εὐστάθιῳ φιλόσοφῳ Ἀντιοχείας περὶ τοῦ πρεσβυτερίου F.
According to the Benedictines none of these titles is possible
because Eustathius was not a presbyter, but a heathen, as is
indicated by Basil's words: "Is not all this the hand of
Fate, as you yourself would say, and the work of Necessity?"

2 λεγομένης om. A, B, C, D.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

LETTER I

To Eustathius, the Philosopher

At a time when I was at last disheartened by the spite of what men call Fortune, which has always put some obstacle in the way of my seeing you, you revived my spirit and consoled me wonderfully by your letter. For I was just turning over in my mind the popular saying, and wondering if it were not perhaps true, that the power which directs our affairs both great and small is a certain Necessity or Fate, while we human beings have in ourselves authority over nothing; or if not this, that it is a kind of chance at all events that drives on the lives of men. You will be very indulgent with me for harbouring these thoughts when you learn the reasons why I was drawn to them.

Owing to the repute of your philosophy, I left Athens, scorning everything there. And I hastened past the city on the Hellespont as no Odysseus

1 Written in 357. This Eustathius was apparently an itinerant philosopher of the age, whose teachings Basil, on his return from the University at Athens, tried in vain to hear. Cf. Intro. p. xvii. From the general tone of this letter, he seems to have been a pagan.

2 Constantinople.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

σεὺς Σειρίμων μέλη. καὶ τὴν Ἄσιαν ἑθαύμασα μὲν, πρὸς δὲ τὴν μητρόπολιν τῶν ἐν αὐτῇ καλῶν ἡπειγόμην. ἐπεὶ δὲ κατέλαβον τὴν πατρίδα, καὶ σὲ ἐν αὐτῇ, τὸ μέγα ὄφελος, ξητήσας οὐχ εὑρον, ἐντεύθεν μοι λοιπὸν αἱ πολλαὶ καὶ ποικίλαι ἀφορμαί τῶν ἀδοκίτων ἐπηγεγόνασι καλυμμάτων. ἣ γὰρ ἁσθενεῖν πάντως ἔδει, καὶ διὰ τοῦτο ἁπολείπεσθαι, ἢ ἐπὶ τὴν ἔφαν βαδίζοντι συναπαίρειν μὴ δύνασθαι ὦσε δὲ ποτε μυρίοις πόνοις τὴν Συρίαν καταλαβόντα, οὐκ ἔχειν συνεῖναι τῷ φιλοσόφῳ πρὸς Αἰγυπτίους ἀπάραντι. πάλιν οὖν ἔδει Αἰγυπτόνδε ἵναι, δολιχὴν ὄδον ἀργαλένην τε, καὶ οὐδὲ ἐνταῦθα τὸ σπουδαζόμενον ἔχειν. ἄλλ' οὕτω δυσέρως ἢν ὡστε ἢ τὴν ἐπὶ Πέρσας βαδίζειν ἔδει καὶ συμπροέειναι εἰς ὅτι μὴ κιστὸς τῆς βαρβάρων (ἵλθες γὰρ ἢ κάκεσθε: τοσαῦτη τις ἢ φιλονεικία τοῦ δαίμονος) ἢ αὐτοῦ καθῆσθαι επὶ τῆς Ἀλεξιάνδρου, ὁπερ οὖν καὶ συνέβη. δοκῶ γὰρ μοι, εἴ μὴ ὡσπερ τι θρέμμα θαλλὸν προδεικνυμένῳ ἐπομενος ἀπηγόρευσα, ἐπίκειναι ἃν σε καὶ Νύσσῃς τῆς Ἰνδικῆς ἐλθεῖν ἀγόμενον καί, εἴ τι ἐσχατον τῆς καθ' ἡμᾶς οἰκομένης χωρίον, καὶ τοῦτω ἐπιπλανηθῆναι.

Καὶ τὶ δεῖ τὰ πολλὰ λέγειν; ἀλλὰ τὸ τελευταῖον νῦν ἐπὶ τῆς πατρίδος διάγοντι συγγενεσθαι οὐκ ἐξεγένετο, μακραίς ἀφροστίας ἐξειρημένως, ἀἰ εἰ μὴ τοῦ γε λοιποῦ μετριώτεραι γένοιτο, οὐδὲ κατὰ τὸν χείμωνα τῇ λογιστητὶ σοὐ συνεσόμεθα. ταῦτα

1 Od. 12. 158. 2 Caesarea is probably meant.
3 Od. 4. 483.
5 Here used as a title, as often in Byzantine Greek.
ever avoided Sirens' songs. And though I marvelled at Asia's wonders, I hurried on toward the mother-city of her glories. Yet when I reached the fatherland, and searching there for you, my great help, found you not, from that time on and ever since I have encountered many varied experiences which have put unexpected obstacles in my way. For either I had to be sick and consequently to miss seeing you, or I found myself unable to join you as you set out for the Orient; and when at last by innumerable toils I arrived in Syria, I could not be with my philosopher, who had set out for Egypt. So, once more, I was obliged to go to Egypt, "a long and weary way," and not even there could I have my desire. Nay, so love-sick was I that I was compelled either to take the road to Persia and go with you as you advanced to the uttermost limits of the land of the barbarians—for indeed you went even thither, so obstinate was the demon who kept us apart—or else take up my abode here at Alexandria. This last is what I actually did. For if I had not grown weary of following you as a lamb follows the shepherd's staff held out before it, I really think that you would have been driven on and on even beyond Indian Nyssa, or, if there is an uttermost spot of our world, that you would have wandered even there.

But why need I tell the whole long story? Coming last of all to the end of it, though you are now staying in your fatherland, it has not been granted me to be with you, since I have been kept away by long periods of sickness; and if these do not soon become more moderate, we shall not be able to be with Your Eloquence this winter, either.
οὐχ εἰμαρμένης ἔργα, ὡς ἃν αὐτὸς εἴποις; ταῦτα οὖκ ἀνάγκης; ταῦτα οὖχ, μικροῦ δεῖν, καὶ τοὺς τῶν ποιητῶν ἐπὶ Ταντάλῳ μύθους ὑπερεβάλετο; ἀλλ', ὅπερ ἐφην, ράων γέγονα τοῖς γράμμασι καὶ οὐκέτι ἐπὶ τῆς αὐτῆς εἰμὶ γνώμης. φημὶ δὲ χρήναι διδόντι μὲν τὰ ἀγαθὰ τῷ Θεῷ χάριν εἰδέναι, ταμιευμένω δὲ μὴ δυσχεραίνειν. καὶ δὴ οὖν καὶ ἡμῖν εἰ μὲν παράσχοιτο συνείναι σοι, ταῦτ' ἀριστά τε ὁμοῦ καὶ ἤδιστα ἤγησόμεθα. εἰ δὲ ἀναβάλοιτο, πρώς οἴσομεν τὴν ζημίαν. ἁμεινον γὰρ ποιν πάντως, ἢ ὡς ἃν ἡμεῖς προελοίμεθα,1 διοικεὶ τὰ ἡμέτερα.

II

Βασίλειος Γρηγορίῳ

Ἐπέγρων σου τὴν ἐπιστολὴν, ὥσπερ οἱ τοὺς τῶν φίλων παίδας ἐκ τῆς ἐπιφανερώμενης αὐτοῖς ὁμοιότητος πρὸς τοὺς τεκόντας ἐπιγινώσκουσί. τὸ γὰρ μὴ μέγα εἶναι φήσαι τὴν τοῦ τόπου κατασκευὴν πρὸς τὸ ἐμποιῆσαι ὀρμὴν τινα τῇ ψυχῇ σου εἰς τὸν μεθ' ἡμῶν βίον πρὶν ἀν περὶ τοῦ τρόπου τι μάθῃ καὶ τῆς διαγωγῆς σοῦ ἢν ὄντως τὸ διανόημα καὶ τῆς σῆς ψυχῆς ἄξιον, τῆς πάντα τὰ τῆς μηδὲν τιθεμένης πρὸς τὴν ἐν ἐπαγγελίαις ἡμῖν ἀποκειμένη μακαριότητα. ἐγὼ δὲ ἢ ἡ μὲν

1 προϊδοίμεθα C, D.
LETTER II

Is not all this the hand of Fate, as you yourself would say, and the work of Necessity? Have not these things almost surpassed even the poet's tales about Tantalus? But, as I said, I have been put at ease by the receipt of your letter, and I no longer hold the same opinion. I now say that I ought to give thanks to God when He giveth benefits, and not be vexed with Him when He dispenseth them grudgingly. So, therefore, if He should grant that we be with you, we count it at once the best and the most pleasing gift; but if He should postpone this blessing, we shall calmly bear our loss. For surely He administers our affairs better than we should if the choice were ours.

LETTER II

Basil to Gregory

I recognized your letter, just as men recognize the children of their friends by the parents' likeness appearing in them. For when you say that the nature of our surroundings would not greatly tend to implant in your soul a desire to live with us until you should learn something of our habits and mode of life, it is truly characteristic of your mind and worthy of your soul, which counts all the things of this earth as nothing compared with the promised bliss which is in store for us. But I am ashamed to

1 Written to Gregory of Nazianzus at the beginning of Basil's retirement to Pontus; in about 358. Basil constantly endeavoured to induce Gregory to join him in his monastic life.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

ποιῶ αὐτὸς ἐπὶ τῆς ἐσχατιᾶς ταύτης, νυκτὸς καὶ ἡμέρας, γράφειν αἰσχύνωμαι. κατέλυσαν μὲν γὰρ τὰς ἐν ἀστεὶ διατρίβας ὡς μυρίων κακῶν ἀφορμᾶς, ἐμαυτὸν δὲ οὕτω ἀπολιπεῖν ἁδύνηθην. ἀλλ' ὀμοίος εἰμι τοῖς ἐν θαλάσσῃ ὑπὸ τῆς κατὰ τὸν πλοῖον ἀπειρίας ἀπορουμένοις καὶ ναυτιῶσιν οἱ τῷ μεγέθει τοῦ πλοίου δυσχεραίνουσιν ὡς πολὺν τῶν σάλουν παρεχομένω, κἀκεῖθεν ἐπὶ τὸν λέμβον ἢ τὸ ἁκάτιον μεταβαίνοντες, πανταχοῦ ναυτιῶσι καὶ ἀποροῦνται συμμετέχεται γὰρ αὐτοῖς ἡ ἁχία ἡ χολή. τοιοῦτον οὖν τι καὶ τὸ ἡμέτερον. τὰ γὰρ ἕνοικα πάθη συμπεριφέροντες πανταχοῦ μετὰ τῶν ὁμοίων θορύβων ἐσμέν, ὡστε οὐδὲν μέγα τῆς ἐρημίας ἀπωνάμεθα ταύτης. ἂ μέντοι ποιεῖν ἔδει καὶ οἴθεν ὑπῆρξεν ἂν ἡμῖν τῶν ἱχνῶν ἔχεσθαι τοῦ πρὸς σωτηρίαν καθηγησαμένου (εἰ τις γὰρ, φησί, θέλει ὁπίσω μου ἐλθεῖν, ἀπαρνησίσθω ἐαυτοῦ καὶ ἀράτῳ τῶν σταυρῶν αὐτοῦ καὶ ἀκολουθεῖτο μοι), ταύτα ἐστίν.

Ἐν ἰσυχία τῶν νοῦν ἐχεῖν πειρᾶσθαι προσήκει. ὡς γὰρ ὁφθαλμὸν περιαγόμενον συνεχῶς, καὶ νῦν μὲν ἐπὶ τὰ πλάγια περιφερόμενοι, νῦν δὲ πρὸς τὰ ἄνω καὶ κάτω πυκνὰ μεταστρεφόμενοι, ιδεῖν ἐναργῶς τὸ ὑποκείμενον οὐχ οἶδον τε, ἀλλὰ χρὴ προσερεισθῆναι τὴν ὁψιν τῷ ὀρομένῳ, εἰ μέλλοι ἐναργῇ αὐτοῦ ποιεῖσθαι τὴν θέαν· οὕτω καὶ νοοῦ ἀνθρώπον ὑπὸ μυρίων τῶν κατὰ τὸν κόσμον φροντίδων περιελκόμενον ἀνήλθαν ἐναργῶς ἐναπενίσατι τῇ ἀληθείᾳ. ἀλλὰ τῶν μὲν οὕτω τοῖς δεσμοῖς τοῦ

1 ἀπολλυμένοις A. 2 δείλα C, F. 3 ἐκ αὐτ. C, E, F. 4 ἰσυχίας C.
LETTER II

write what I myself do night and day in this out-of-the-way place. For I have indeed left my life in the city, as giving rise to countless evils, but I have not yet been able to leave myself behind. On the contrary, I am like those who go to sea, and because they have had no experience in sailing are very distressed and sea-sick, and complain of the size of the boat as causing the violent tossing; and then when they leave the ship and take to the dinghy or the cock-boat, they continue to be sea-sick and distressed wherever they are; for their nausea and bile go with them when they change. Our experience is something like this. For we carry our indwelling disorders about with us, and so are nowhere free from the same sort of disturbances. Consequently we have derived no great benefit from our present solitude. What we ought to do, however, and what would have enabled us to keep close to the footsteps of Him who pointed the way to salvation (for He says, "If any man will come after Me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross and follow Me"),¹ is this.

We must try to keep the mind in tranquillity. For just as the eye which constantly shifts its gaze, now turning to the right or to the left, now incessantly peering up and down, cannot see distinctly what lies before it, but the sight must be fixed firmly on the object in view if one would make his vision of it clear, so too man's mind when distracted by his countless worldly cares cannot focus itself distinctly on the truth. Nay, he who is not yet yoked in the

¹ Matt. 16. 24.

⁵ πυκνά om. C, E.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

γάμον συνεξενιμένον λυσσώδεις ἑπιθυμίαι καὶ ορμαὶ δυσκάθεκτοι καὶ ἔρωτές τινες δυσέρωτες ἐκταράσσουσι τὸν δὲ ἡδὴ συγκατειλημμένον ὁμοζύγῳ ἐτερος θόρυβος φροντίδων ἐκδέχεται ἐν ἀπαίδεια, παίδων ἑπιθυμία ἐν τῇ κτήσει τῶν παίδων, παιδοτροφίας μέριμνα, γυναικὸς φυλακῆ, οἶκου ἐπιμέλεια, οἰκετῶν προστασία, αἱ κατὰ τὰ συμβόλαια βλάβαι, οἱ πρὸς τοὺς γείτονας διαπληκτισμοί, αἱ ἐν τοῖς δικαστηρίοις συμπλοκαὶ, τῆς ἐμπορίας οἱ κίνδυνοι, αἱ τῆς γεωργίας διαπονήσεις. πᾶσα ἡμέρα ἴδιαν ἥκει φέρουσα τῆς ψυχῆς ἐπισκόπησιν. καὶ αἱ νύκτες τὰς μεθημερίνας φροντίδας παραλαμβάνουσαι, ἐν ταῖς αὐταῖς φαντασίαις ἐξαπατῶσι τὸν νοῦν.

Τούτων δὲ μία φυγῆ, ὁ χωρισμὸς ἀπὸ τοῦ κόσμου παντὸς, κόσμου δὲ ἀναχώρησις, οὐ τὸ ἔξω αὐτοῦ γενέσθαι σωματικῶς, ἀλλὰ τῆς πρὸς τὸ σῶμα συμπαθείας τῆς ψυχῆς ἀπορρήξαι καὶ γενέσθαι ἀπόλιν, ἀοικόν, ἀνίδιον, ἀφιλέταιρον, ἀκτήμονα, ἀβιον, ἀπράγμονα, ἀσυνάλλακτον, ἀμαθῆ τῶν ἀνθρωπίνων διδαγμάτων, ἐτοιμὸν ὑποδέξασθαι τῇ καρδίᾳ τὰς ἐκ τῆς θείας διδασκαλίας ἐγγυμομένας διατυπώσεις. ἐτοιμασία δὲ καρδίας ἢ ἀπομάθησις τῶν ἐκ ποιημάτων συνηθείας προκατασχόντων αὐτῶν διδαγμάτων. οὕτε γὰρ ἐν κηρῷ γράψας δυνατόν, μὴ προκαταλεύναντα τοὺς ἐναποκείμένους χαρακτήρας οὕτε ψυχῆ δόματα θεία παραδέσθαι, μὴ τὰς ἐκ τοῦ ἔθους προλῆψεις αὐτῆς ἐξελόντα. πρὸς δὴ τοῦτο μέ-
LETTER II

bonds of matrimony is greatly disturbed by violent desires, rebellious impulses, and morbid lusts; while he who is already bound in wedlock is seized by yet another tumult of cares; if childless, by a longing for children, if possessing children, by solicitude for their nurture, by keeping watch over his wife, by the management of his household, the protection of his servants' rights, losses on contracts, quarrels with neighbours, contests in the law-courts, risks of business, or the labours of the farm. Every day brings with it some particular cloud to darken the soul; and night takes over the cares of the day, deluding the mind with the same cares in fantasy.

There is but one escape from all this—separation from the world altogether. But withdrawal from the world does not mean bodily removal from it, but the severance of the soul from sympathy with the body, and the giving up city, home, personal possessions, love of friends, property, means of subsistence, business, social relations, and knowledge derived from human teaching; and it also means the readiness to receive in one's heart the impressions engendered there by divine instruction. And making the heart ready for this means the unlearning of the teachings which already possess it, derived from evil habits. For it is no more possible to write in wax without first smoothing away the letters previously written thereon, than it is to supply the soul with divine teachings without first removing its preconceptions derived from habit. Now to this end solitude gives

\[4 \mu \epsilon \rho \iota \mu \mu \nu \iota C, F. \quad 5 \text{kal om. C, F.} \]

\[6 \pi \alpha \alpha \alpha \alpha \beta \omega \omicron \omicron \sigma C, B, C, F. \]

\[7 \delta \rho \alpha \sigma \mu \omicron \delta C, F. \]
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

γιστον ὀφελος ἦμιν ἢ ἐρημία παρέχεται, κατευ-
νάξουσα ἦμων τὰ πάθη καὶ σχολὴν διδόουσα τῷ
λόγῳ παντελῶς αὐτὰ τῆς ψυχῆς ἐκτεμένην. ὡς
γὰρ τὰ θηρία εὐκαταγωνιστὰ ἐστὶ καταψηχ-
θέντα,1 οὕτως ἐπιθυμοί καὶ ὅργαι καὶ φόβοι
καὶ λύπαι, τὰ ἱσόβολα τῆς ψυχῆς κακά, κατευνα-
θέντα διὰ τῆς ἡσυχίας καὶ μὴ ἐξαγριανόμενα
τὸ συνεχεῖ ἐρεθισμῷ, εὐκαταγωνιστότερα τῇ
δυνάμει τοῦ λόγου γίνεται. ἐστο τοῖνυν τὸ
χωρίον τοιοῦτον, οἷον πέρ ἐστι καὶ τὸ ἠμέτερον,
ἐπιμεῖξις ἀνθρώπων ἀπηλλαγμένων, ὡς ύπὸ
μηδενὸς τῶν ἐξωθεν τὸ συνεχὲς τῆς ἁσκήσεως
dιακοπτέσθαι.

"Ἀσκησις δὲ εὐσεβείας τῆς ψυχῆς τρέφει τοῖς
θείοις διανοήμασι. τι οὖν μακαριστοῦν2 τοῦ
τῆν ἄγγελων χορείαν ἐν γῇ μμείσθαι; εὐθὺς
μὲν ἀρχομένης ἡμέρας εἰς εὐχὰς ὀρμῶντα,
ὕμνοις καὶ φῶνας γεραιρεῖν τὸν κτίσαντα; εἶτα
ἡλίου καθαρῶς διαλάμψαντος, ἐπ’ ἐργα τρεπό-
μενον, πανταχοῦ αὐτῷ τῆς εὐχῆς 3 συμμαρκοῦσης,
καὶ τοῖς ὕμνοις, ὅσπερ ἀλατι, παραρτέους τὰς
ἐργασίας; τὸ γὰρ ἱλαρὸν καὶ ἄλυπον τῆς
ψυχῆς κατάστημα αἱ τῶν ὕμνων παρηγορίᾳ
χαρίζονται.

Ἡσυχία οὖν ἀρχὴ καθάρσεως τῆς ψυχῆς, μήτε
γλώστης λαλούσης τὰ τῶν ἀνθρώπων, μήτε
ὀφθαλμῶν εὐχροίας σωμάτων καὶ συμμετρίας
περισκοποῦντων, μήτε ἀκοῆς τῶν τόνου τῆς ψυχῆς
ἐκλυούσης ἐν ἀκροάμασι μελῶν πρὸς ἠδονήν
πεποιημένων, μήτε ρήμασιν εὐτραπέλων καὶ
γελοιοστῶν ἀνθρώπων, ὁ μάλιστα λύειν τῆς
ψυχῆς τὸν τόνου πέφυκε. νοῦς μὲν γὰρ μὴ
12
us the greatest help, since it calms our passions, and gives reason leisure to sever them completely from the soul. For just as animals are easily subdued by caresses; so desire, anger, fear and grief, the venomous evils which beset the soul, if they are lulled to sleep by solitude and are not exasperated by constant irritations, are more easily subdued by the influence of reason. Therefore let the place of retirement be such as ours, so separated from the intercourse of men that the continuity of our religious discipline may not be interrupted by any external distraction.

The discipline of piety nourishes the soul with divine thoughts. What then is more blessed than to imitate on earth the anthems of angels' choirs; to hasten to prayer at the very break of day, and to worship our Creator with hymns and songs; then, when the sun shines brightly and we turn to our tasks, prayer attending us wherever we go, to season our labours with sacred song as food with salt? For that state of the soul in which there is joy and no sorrow is a boon bestowed by the consolation of hymns.

The very beginning of the soul's purgation is tranquillity, in which the tongue is not given to discussing the affairs of men, nor the eyes to contemplating rosy cheeks or comely bodies, nor the ears to lowering the tone of the soul by listening to songs whose sole object is to amuse, or to words spoken by wits and buffoons—a practice which above all things tends to relax the tone of the soul. For

---

1 καταψυχθέντα C, F.  
2 μακαριστότερον C, E.  
3 ψυχῆς C.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

σκεδασμύμενος ἐπὶ τὰ ἔξω μηδὲ ὑπὸ τῶν αἰσθητηρίων ἐπὶ τῶν κόσμων διαχεομένος ἐπάνεισι μὲν πρὸς ἑαυτόν, δὲ ἑαυτοῦ δὲ πρὸς τὴν περί Θεοῦ ἐννοιαν ἀναβαίνει κακείνω τῷ κάλλει περιλαμπόμενος τε καὶ ἐλλαμπόμενος καὶ αὐτῆς τῆς φύσεως λήθην λαμβάνει· μήτε πρὸς τροφής φροντίδα μήτε πρὸς περιβολαῖων μέριμναν τὴν ψυχὴν καθελκόμενος, ἀλλὰ σχολὴν ἀπὸ τῶν γνώμων φροντίδων ἄγων, τὴν πᾶσαν ἑαυτοῦ σπουδὴν ἐπὶ τὴν κτήσιν τῶν αἰώνιων ἁγαθῶν μετατίθησιν· πῶς μὲν κατορθωθῇ αὐτῷ ἡ σωφροσύνη καὶ ἡ ἀνδρία; πῶς δὲ ἡ δικαιοσύνη καὶ ἡ φρόνησις, καὶ αἱ λοιπαὶ ἁρεταὶ ὡσαὶ ταῖς γενικαῖς ταύταις ὑποδιαιροῦμεναι καθηκόντως ἔκαστα ἐπιτελεῖν τῶν κατὰ τὸν βίον ὑποβάλλοντι τῷ σπουδαίῳ.

Μεγίστη δὲ ὁδὸς πρὸς τὴν τοῦ καθήκοντος εὐρεσιν καὶ ἡ μελέτη τῶν θεοπνεύστων Γραφῶν, ἐν ταύταις γὰρ καὶ αἱ τῶν πράξεων ὑποθήκαι εὐρίσκουται καὶ οἱ βίοι τῶν μακαρίων ἁνδρῶν ἀνάγραπτοι παραδεδομένοι, οἷον εἰκόνες τιμεῖ ἐμψυχοι τῆς κατὰ Θεόν πολιτείας, τῷ μιμήματι τῶν ἁγάθων ἔργων πρόκεινται. καὶ τοῖς περὶ ὅπερ ἁν ἐκαστος ἐνδεχόμεθα ἑχοντος ἑαυτοῦ αἰσθάνεται, ἐκείνῳ προσδιατρίβων, οἷον ἀπὸ τινὸς κοινοῦ ἰατρείου, τὸ πρόσφορον εὐρίσκει τῷ ἁρρώστηματι φάρμακον. καὶ ὁ μὲν ἔραστῆς τῆς σωφροσύνης τὴν περὶ τοῦ Ἰωσήφ ἱστορίαν συνεχῶς ἀνελίσσει καὶ παρ’ αὐτοῦ τὰς σωφρονικὰς ἐκδιδάσκεται πράξεις, εὐρίσκων αὐτὸν οὐ μόνον ἐγκρατῶς πρὸς ἱδονὰς ἑχοντα, ἀλλὰ καὶ ἔκτικῶς πρὸς ἁρετὴν διακείμενον. ἁνδρίαν δὲ παίδευται παρὰ τοῦ
when the mind is not dissipated upon extraneous things, nor diffused over the world about us through the senses, it withdraws within itself, and of its own accord ascends to the contemplation of God. Then when it is illuminated without and within by that glory, it becomes forgetful even of its own nature; no longer able to drag the soul down to thought of sustenance or to concern for the body's covering, but enjoying leisure from earthly cares, it transfers all its interest to the acquisition of the eternal goods—how it may achieve temperance and fortitude, justice and prudence, and all the minor virtues, subordinate to these, the major ones, which prompt the good man to perform as he should the several duties of life.

A most important path to the discovery of duty is also the study of the divinely-inspired Scriptures. For in them are not only found the precepts of conduct, but also the lives of saintly men, recorded and handed down to us, lie before us like living images of God's government, for our imitation of their good works. And so in whatever respect each one perceives himself deficient, if he devote himself to such imitation, he will discover there, as in the shop of a public physician, the specific remedy for his infirmity. The lover of chastity constantly peruses the story of Joseph, and from him learns what chaste conduct is, finding Joseph not only continent as regards carnal pleasures but also habitually inclined towards virtue.
ἐμβ, δὲ οὐ μόνον, πρὸς τὰ ἐναντία τοῦ βίου μεταπεσόντος αὐτῷ, πένης ἐκ πλουσίου καὶ ἀπαίς ἀπὸ καλλιπαιδὸς ἐν μιᾷ καίρῳ ὅπῃ γενόμενος, διέμεινεν ὁ αὐτός, ἀταπείνωτον πανταχός τὸ τῆς ψυχῆς ἑρύθμισι διασώζων ἀλλ' οὔτε τῶν φίλων, τῶν εἰς παραμυθιάν ἦκόντων, ἐπεμβαινόντων αὐτῷ καὶ συνεπτεινόντων τὰ ἀλγεινά, παροξύνθη. πάλιν οἰκοπόν τις πῶς ἄν πρᾶος ἐν ταύτῳ καὶ μεγαλοθυμός γένοιτο, ὡστε τῷ μὲν θυμῷ κατὰ τῆς ἀμαρτίας κεχρήσατο τῇ δὲ πράστητι πρὸς τοὺς ἀνθρώπους, εὐρήσει τοῦ Δαβίδ γενναίον μὲν ἐν τοῖς κατὰ πόλεμον ἀνδραγαθήμασι, πρᾶον δὲ καὶ ἀκίνητον ἐν ταῖς τῶν ἑχθρῶν ἀντιδόσεις. τοιοῦτος ἦν καὶ Μωσῆς, μεγαλῶν μὲν τῷ θυμῷ κατὰ τῶν εἰς Θεόν ἐξαμαρτανόντων διαιστάμενος, πραείᾳ δὲ τῇ ψυχῇ ταῖς καθ' ἐαυτοῦ διαβολᾶς ὑποφέρων. καὶ πανταχοῦ, ὡσπερ οἱ ζωγράφοι, ὅταν ἀπὸ εἰκόνων εἰκόνας γράφωσι, πυκνὰ πρὸς τὸ παράδειγμα ἀποβλέποντες, τὸν ἐκεῖθεν χαρακτήρα πρὸς τὸ ἐαυτοῦ σπουδάζουσι μεταβείναι φιλοτέχνημα. οὔτω δὲ καὶ τὸν ἐσπονδακότα ἐαυτοῦ πάσι τοῖς μέρεσι τῆς ἀρετῆς ἀπεργάσασθαι τέλειοι, οἰονεὶ πρὸς ἀγάλματα τινὰ κινούμενα καὶ ἐμπρακτα, τοὺς βίους τῶν ἁγίων ἀποβλέπειν καὶ τὸ ἐκείνων ἄγαθον οἰκεῖον ποιεῖσθαι διὰ μιμήσεως.

Εὐχαί πάλιν ταῖς ἀναγνώσεις διαδεχόμεναι νεαρώτερα τὴν ψυχῆν καὶ ἀκμαιοτέραν τῷ πρὸς Θεοῦ πόθῳ κεκωιμένην παραλαμβάνουσιν. εὐχὴ δὲ καλὴ, ἡ ἐναρρη ἐμποιοῦσα τὸν Θεοῦ ἐννοιαν τῇ ψυχῇ. καὶ τούτῳ ἐστὶ Θεοῦ ἐνοίκησις, τὸ διὰ τῆς μνήμης ἐνιδρυμένον ἔχειν ἐν ἑαυτῷ τὸν Θεόν.
Fortitude he learns from Job, who, when the conditions of his life were reversed and he became in a moment of time poor instead of rich and childless when he had been blessed with fair children, remained the same, and always preserved his proud spirit unhumbled; nay, even when his friends who came to comfort him trampled upon him and helped to make his sorrow more grievous, he was not provoked to wrath. Again, if one considers how he may be at once meek and high-tempered, showing temper against sin, but meekness towards men, he will find David noble in the valiant exploits of war, but meek and dispassionate in the matter of requiting his enemies. Such too was Moses, who rose up in great wrath to oppose those who sinned against God, but endured with meekness of spirit all slanders against himself. And in general, just as painters in working from models constantly gaze at their exemplar and thus strive to transfer the expression of the original to their own artistry, so too he who is anxious to make himself perfect in all the kinds of virtue must gaze upon the lives of the saints as upon statues, so to speak, that move and act, and must make their excellence his own by imitation.

Prayer, again, following such reading finds the soul, stirred by yearning towards God, fresher and more vigorous. Prayer is to be commended, for it engenders in the soul a distinct conception of God. And the indwelling of God is this—to hold God ever in memory, His shrine established within us.

1 τίς ψυχής om. C.
2 ἤν om. Ed, Ben.; non tamen A, B, E.
3 εἰκόνας εἰκόνας A, B
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

οὕτω γινόμεθα ναὸς Θεοῦ, ὅταν μὴ φροντίσῃ γηώναις τὸ συνεχὲς τῆς μνήμης διακόπτηται, μηδὲ τοὺς ἀπροσδοκήτους πάθεσιν ὁ νοῦς ἐκταράττηται, ἀλλὰ πάντα ἀποφυγῶν ὁ φιλόθεος ἐπὶ Θεοῦ ἀναχωρῆ, ἐξελαύνων τὰ προσκαλούμενα ¹ αὐτῶν εἰς ἀκρασίαν πάθη, καὶ ² τοὺς πρὸς ἀρετὴν ἄγουσιν ἐπιτηδεύμασιν ἐνδιατρίβη.

Καὶ πρὸτὸν γε πάντων σπουδαζειν προσήκει, περὶ τὴν τοῦ λόγου χρῆσιν μὴ ἀμαθῶς ἔχειν, ἀλλ᾽ ἐρωτάν μὲν ἀφιλονείκως, ἀποκρίνεσθαι δὲ ἀφιλοτίμως, μὴ διακόπτοντα τὸν προσδιαλεγόμενου, ὅταν τι χρήσιμον λέγῃ, μηδὲ ἐπιθυμοῦντα τῶν ἐαυτοῦ λόγου ἐπιδεικτικῶς παρεμβάλλειν, μετρα ὀρίζοντα λόγῳ καὶ ἀκοῆς μαυθάνειν δὲ ἀνεπασχύντως καὶ διδάσκειν ἀνεπιφθόνως καὶ εἰ παρ᾽ ἐτέρου δεδιδακται, μὴ ἐπικρύπτειν ⁴ ὁσπερ αἱ φαύλαι τῶν γυμνακῶν, αἱ τὰ νόθα ὑποβαλλομεναι· ἀλλὰ κηρύσσειν εὐγνωμόνως τὸν πατέρα τοῦ λόγου. τούς δὲ φωνῆς ὁ μέσος προτιμητέος, ὡς μήτε διαφεύγειν τὴν ἀκοὴν ὑπὸ σμικρότητος μήτε φορτικῶν εἰσαί τῷ μεγέθει τῆς διατάσεως. προεξετάσαντα ἐν ἑαυτῷ τὸ ρήθησόμενον, οὕτω δημοσιεύειν τῶν λόγων. ἐυπροσήγορον ἐν ταῖς εὐσεβείς, γυναικῶν ἐν ταῖς ὀμιλίαις, οὐ διὰ τῆς εὐτραπελίας τὸ ἤδει θηρώμενον, ἀλλὰ διὰ τῆς εὐμενοῦς παρακλήσεως τὸ προσημένα ἔχοντα. πανταχοῦ τὸ τραχὺ, καὶ ἐπιτιμήσαι δεῖ, ἀπωθοῦμεν. προκαταβαλῶν γὰρ ἑαυτὸν διὰ ταπεινοφροσύνης, οὕτως ἐπιπαράδεκτος ἔση τῷ δεομένῳ

¹ προκαλούμενα Α, Β, Ε.
² αὐτῶν . . . καὶ ἡμᾶς εἰς κακίαν Α, Β, Ε.

18
We thus become temples of God whenever earthly cares cease to interrupt the continuity of our memory of Him, whenever unforeseen passions cease to disturb our minds, and the lover of God, escaping them all, retires to God, driving out the passions which tempt him to incontinence, and abides in the practices which conduce to virtue.

And, first of all, one should take heed not to be boorish in conversation, but to ask questions without contentiousness, and answer without self-display; neither interrupting the speaker when he is saying something useful, nor being eager to interject his own words for the sake of ostentation, but observing moderation both in speaking and in listening. One should not be ashamed to learn, nor should he grudge to teach; and if one has learned something from another, one should not conceal the fact, as degraded wives practise concealment when they palm off bastard children as their own, but one should candidly acknowledge the father of his idea. The middle tone of voice is to be preferred, neither so soft as to elude the ears, nor so loud and strong as to be vulgar. One should first reflect upon what one is going to say, and then deliver one's speech. One should be affable in conversation and agreeable in social intercourse, not resorting to wit as a means of gaining popularity, but depending upon the charm which comes from gracious politeness. On all occasions abjure asperity, even when it is necessary to administer a rebuke; for if you first abase yourself and show humility, you will easily find your way to

3 κα' om. editi; non tamen A, B, C, E, F.
4 ἐπικρυπτόμενον C, E.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

tῆς θεραπείας: πολλάκις δὲ χρήσιμος ἡμῖν καὶ ὁ τοῦ προφήτου τρόπος τῆς ἐπιπλήξεως, ὅσ τῷ Δαβίδ ἀμαρτόντι οὐ παρ' ἑαυτὸν ἐπηγαγε τῶν ὀρὸν τῆς καταδίκης, ἀλλ' ὑποβολῇ προσώπου χρησάμενος, αὐτὸν ἐκεῖνον τοῦ ἱδίου δικαστήν ἑκάθισεν ἀμαρτήματος; ὥστε αὐτὸν καθ' ἑαυτὸν προεξενεγκόντα τὴν κρίσιν μηδὲν ἐτι μέμψασθαι τὸν ἐλέγχαντα.

"Επεταὶ δὲ τῷ ταπεινῷ καὶ κατεβεβλημένῳ φρονήματι ὄμμα στυγνῶν καὶ εἰς γῆν συννενεκός, σχῆμα ἡμελημένον, κόμη αὐχμηρά, ἐσθήσης ῥυπώσα: ὥστε ἄ ποιούσιν οἱ πενθούντες κατ' ἐπιτήδειον, ταῦτα ἐκ τοῦ αὐτομάτου ἡμῖν ἐπιφαίνεσθαι. χιτῶν διὰ ζώνης προσεσταλμένος τῷ σώματι: τὸ μέντοι ζώσμα μῆτε ἀνω τῶν λαγώνων, γυναικῶδες γάρ μῆτε χαῦνον, ῥώτε διαρρέων τῶν χιτῶνα, βλακίκον γάρ καὶ τὸ βάδισμα μῆτε νωθρόν, ὡς ἔκλυσιν τῆς ψυχῆς κατηγορεῖν, μηδ' αὐν σφοδρῶν καὶ σεσοβημένον, ῥως ἐμπλήκτους αὐτῆς τὰς ὀρμὰς ὑποφαίνειν. σκοπὸς ἐσθῆτος εἰς, κάλυμμα εῖναι σαρκὸς πρὸς χειμῶνα καὶ θέρος αὐταρκεῖ: μῆτε δὲ ἐν χρώματι τὸ ἄνθηρον διωκέσθω μῆτε ἐν τῇ κατασκευῇ τὸ λεπτὸν καὶ μαλακῶν τὸ γὰρ τὰς ἐν ἐσθήτῃ εὐχροίας περισκοπεῖν ἵσον ἐστὶ γυναικείῳ καλλωπισμῷ, ὥν ἐκεῖναι ἐπιτηδεύουσιν, ἀλλοτρίῳ ἀνθεὶ παρεῖς καὶ τρίχας ἑαυτῶν κατα-

1 κριτὴν Α, Β.  2 βλαπτικῶν Ε.
the heart of him who needs your ministrations. We also frequently find useful the method of rebuke employed by the prophet,1 who did not of himself set a definite penalty on David when he sinned, but employed a fictitious character and constituted David judge of his own sin; so David first pronounced judgment against himself, and after that could not find any fault with his censor.

The humble and abject spirit is attended by a gloomy and downcast eye, neglected appearance, unkempt hair, and dirty clothes; consequently the characteristics which mourners effect designedly are found in us as a matter of course. The tunic should be drawn close to the body by a girdle; but let the belt not be above the flank, for that is effeminate, nor loose, so as to let the tunic slip through, for that is slovenly; and the stride should be neither sluggish, which would argue a laxity of mind, nor, on the other hand, brisk and swaggering, which would indicate that its impulses were rash. As for dress, its sole object is to be a covering for the flesh adequate for winter and summer. And let neither brilliancy of colour be sought, nor delicacy and softness of material; for seeking after bright colours in clothing is on a parity with women's practice of beautifying themselves by tinting their cheeks and dyeing their hair with artificial lustre. However,

1 Cf. 2 Samuel 11 and 12. David committed adultery with Bethsabee, and caused her husband, Urias, to be slain, that he might marry Bethsabee and so conceal his sin. The prophet Nathan assumed a similar crime, and caused David unwittingly to pronounce judgment against himself.

2 The mark of the old pagan philosophers. Cf. Aristoph., Birds, 1282, ἔφυσαν, ἕσωκράταν, "they were dirty, they were like Socrates."
βάπτωσαι. ἀλλὰ μὴν καὶ παχύτητος ούτως ἐχειν ὁ χιτῶν ὀφείλει ὡς μὴ δεῖσθαι κοινωνοῦ πρὸς τὸ θάλπειν τὸν ἐνδυόμενον. ὑπόδημα δὲ τὸ εὐτελὲς μὲν κατὰ τὴν ἀξίαν, ἀνενδεώς δὲ τὴν χρείαν ἀποπληροῦν.

Καὶ ἀπαξαπλῶς, ὡς ἐν τῷ ἐνδύματι ἤγείσθαι προσήκει τὸ χρείωδες, οὔτω καὶ ἐν τροφῇ ἀρτὸς ἐκπληρώσει τὴν χρείαν καὶ ὕδωρ θεραπεύσει τὴν δίψαν τῷ υγιαίνοντι καὶ ὡσα ἐκ σπερμάτων παροψήματα πρὸς τὰς ἀναγκαίας χρείας τῆς ἁγίων τῷ σώματι δύναται διασώσασθαι. ἔσθειεν δὲ μὴ λυσσόδη γαστριμαργίαν ἐμφαίνοντα, ἀλλὰ πανταχόθε το εὐσταθεῖς καὶ πράον καὶ περὶ τᾶς ἡδονᾶς ἐγκρατεὶς διασώζοντα· μηδὲ τότε τῶν νοῦν ἀργῶν ἐν τῇ περὶ Θεοῦ ἐννοίᾳ ἔχοντα, ἀλλ’ αὐτήν τῶν βρωμάτων τὴν φύσιν καὶ τὴν τοῦ ὑποδεχομένου σώματος κατασκευὴν ἀφορμὴν ποιεῖσθαι δοξολογίας. πῶς ποικίλα εἰδὴ τροφῶν τῇ ἱδιότητι τῶν σωμάτων ἀρμόζοντα παρὰ τοῦ πάντα οἰκονομοῦντος ἐπινεύονται. εὐχαί πρὸ τῆς τροφῆς ἀξίως γινέσθωσαν τῶν τοῦ Θεοῦ παροχῶν, ὅπεν τε νῶν δίδωσι, καὶ ὅπεν πρὸς τὸ μέλλον ἐταμείσατο. εὐχαί μετὰ τροφῆς ¹ εὐχαριστίαν τῶν δεδομένων ἔχουσαι καὶ αἰτησιν τῶν ἐπηγγελμένων. ὥσα μία τροφῆς ἀποτεταγμένη, ἡ αὐτή κατὰ περίοδον ἀπαντῶσα· ὡς ἐκ τῶν εἰκοσι τεσσάρων ὅρῳ τοῦ ἡμερονυκτίου μιὰν εἶναι μόλις ² ταύτην τὴν προσαναλισκομένην τῷ σώματι, τὰς δὲ λοιπὰς ἐν τῇ κατὰ νοῦν ἐνεργείαν ³ ἀπασχολεῖσθαι ⁴ τῶν ἁσκητῶν.

¹ τροφῆς: C, E. ² μόλις om. A, B, F.
letter II

the tunic ought to be of such thickness that it will require no auxiliary garment to keep the wearer warm. The sandal should be inexpensive, yet completely adequate to one’s needs.

And in general, just as one should consider practical utility in the matter of clothing, so too, in the matter of food, bread will satisfy actual needs, water will cure the thirst, if one is healthy, and there are besides all the dishes of vegetables and fruits that help to preserve the body’s strength for inevitable needs. And one should not exhibit frantic gluttony in eating, but on all occasions should preserve composure, gentleness, and restraint as regards the pleasures of the palate. And not even at table should one allow the mind to be unoccupied with thoughts of God, but one should make the very nature of the food and the structure of the body that receives it an occasion for His glorification. What varied forms of nutriment suited to the peculiarity of bodies have been conceived by Him who dispenseth all things! Before meals let prayers be said worthy of the bounties which God both gives now and has stored up for the future. After meals let prayers be said that include thanksgiving for the gifts received, and petitions for those promised. Let one hour, the same regularly each day, be set aside for food, so that out of the twenty-four hours of day and night, barely shall this one be expended on the body, the ascetic devoting the remainder to the activities of the mind.

3 εργασία Α, B.
4 ἀπασχολεῖν C; ἀποτληροῦν E.
"Τον δὲ κοῦφοι καὶ εὐαπάλλακτοι, φυσικῶς ἀκολουθοῦντες τῷ συμμέτρῳ τῆς διαίτης κατ' ἐπιτήδευσιν δὲ ταῖς περὶ τῶν μεγάλων μερίμναις διακοπτόμενοι. τὸ γὰρ βαθεῖ κάρφω κατακρατεῖσθαι, λυμένων αὐτοῦ τῶν μελῶν, ὡστε σχολὴν ἀλόγοις φαντασίας παρέχειν, ἐν καθημερινῷ θανάτῳ ποιεῖ τοὺς οὕτω καθεύδουντας, ἄλλῳ ὅπερ τοῖς ἄλλοις ὁ ὅρθρος ἑστὶ, τοῦτο τοῖς ἀσκηταῖς τῆς εὐσεβείας τῷ μεσονύκτιον, μάλιστα σχολὴν τῇ ψυχῇ τῆς νυκτερινῆς ἱσυχίας χαριζομένης, οὔτε ὀφθαλμῶν οὔτε ὡτῶν βλαβερὰς ἀκοὰς ἡ θέας ἐπὶ καρδίαν παραπεμπτῶν, ἄλλα μόνον καθ' ἐαυτὸν τοῦ νου τῷ Θεῷ συνόντος, καὶ διορθομένου μὲν ἐαυτὸν τῇ μνήμῃ τῶν ἡμάρτημένων, ὅρους δὲ ἐαυτῷ τιθέντος πρὸς τὴν ἐκκλίσιν τοῦ κακοῦ, καὶ τὴν παρὰ Θεοῦ συνεργίαν εἰς τὴν τελείωσιν τῶν σπουδαζομένων ἐπιζητοῦντος.

III

Κανδιδιανῷ

"Οτε εἰς χεῖρας ἔλαβον τὴν ἐπιστολήν σου, ἔπαθον τι ἀκοῆς ἄξιον. εὐλαβήθησαν αὐτὴν ὅσ τι δημοσίου προσαγγέλλουσαν, καὶ παρὰ δὲν ἐξέλυσαν καιρὸν τῶν κηρῶν, ἐφοβούμην προσβλέπων, ὡς οὔδεις ἐν αἰτίαις ὅπων Σπαρτιάτης Λακωνικήν

2 αὐτῷ: F.
3 ἀτόποις A, B.
4 ἐν αὐτ. C, E.
5 προβλέπων C, D.
LETTER III

Sleep should be light and easily broken, such as naturally follows a moderate diet; and it should be interrupted deliberately by meditations on high themes. For to be overcome by heavy torpor, in which the limbs are relaxed and play is given to foolish fantasies, causes those who sleep in this fashion to experience a daily death. On the contrary, what is cock-crow for the rest of men is midnight for the practisers of piety, when the quiet of night grants most leisure to the soul, when neither the eyes nor the ears conduct harmful sounds or sights to the heart, but the mind alone with itself communes with God, corrects itself through the recollection of past sins, sets up its barriers to ward off evil, and seeks God’s aid for the consummation of its longings.

LETTER III

To Candidianus

When I received your letter, I experienced a feeling that is worthy of your hearing. I stood in awe of it, as if it brought some state announcement, and while I broke the seal, I shuddered at the sight of it as no guilty Spartan ever did at

1 Placed at the beginning of Basil’s retirement to Pontus, and written to a governor of Cappadocia, who was a close friend to Basil and to Gregory of Nazianzus.
σκυτάλην. ἐπεὶ δὲ ἐλυσα, καὶ πάνθ' ἕκαστα ἐπεξήλθον, γελάσαι μοι ἐπῆλθε, τοῦτο μὲν ὑφ' ἱδονῆς, τοῦ μηδὲν ἀκοῦσαι νεώτερον, τοῦτο δὲ πρὸς τὰ Δημοσθένους τὰ σὰ κρίναντι. ὅτι ὁ μὲν, ἐπειδὴ ὅλιγοις τισὶ χρόνοιαὶ καὶ αὐληταῖς ἐχωρίζει, οὐκέτι ἦξιον Δημοσθένης, ἀλλὰ χορηγὸς ὀνομάζεσθαι. σὺ δὲ ὁ αὐτὸς εἰ, καὶ χορηγῶν καὶ μὴ (χορηγῶν μέντοι πλείσοι ² μυριάς στρατιωτῶν ἢ ὀσοὶς ἀνδράσιν ἐκεῖνος παρέσχε τὰ ἐπιτήδεια), ὃς γε οὖθ᾽ ἡμῖν ἀπὸ τοῦ σχῆματος ἐπιστέλλει, ἀλλὰ τῶν εἰσθότα τρόπον καὶ τῆς περὶ λόγους σπουδῆς οὐδὲν ὑφίσταται, ἀλλὰ τὸ τοῦ Πλάτωνος, ἐν χειμώνι καὶ ζάλῃ ³ πραγμάτων, οἶνον ύπὸ τεῖχε ⁴ τινὰ καρτέρῳ ἀποστάσις, οὐδενὸς θορύβου τὴν ψυχῆν ἀναπτύμπλασαι: μᾶλλον δὲ οὔδὲ ἐτέρους ἐὰς, ⁵ τὸ γε σαυτοῦ μέρος.

Καὶ τὰ μὲν σὰ τοιαῦτα, ⁶ μεγάλα καὶ θαυμαστὰ τοῖς συνορᾶν δυναμένοις, καὶ πάλιν οὐ θαυμαστὰ ⁷ τῷ πρὸς τὴν ὀλὴν προαίρεσιν τοῦ βίου κρίνοντι. ἀκονε δὴ καὶ τὰ ἡμέτερα, παράδοξά τε ὅντα καὶ ἀκολούθως ἡμῖν ἀπαντῶντα.

Ἀνὴρ τις ἄγροικος τῶν συνοικοῦντων ἡμῖν ἐν Ἀννήσοις, ⁸ οἰκέτου μου τελευτήσαντος, οὐ συμβο-

---

¹ πάνθ' om. A, Ed. Ben.: non tamem B, C, D, E, F.
² πλείονα A, B, F. ³ χαλάζη A, B.
⁴ τεῖχος τι καρτέρων A, B, C, D.
⁵ οὐτὲ θορύβουs add. E, F.
⁶ οὕτω add. A, B al. m., C, D, F.
⁷ τοῖς συνοράν . . . οὐ θαυμαστὰ om. E.
⁸ Ἀννήσοις B, C, D, F.

¹ The staff around which a strip of leather was rolled slantwise. The message was written lengthwise thereon, so
the Laconian skylæ. But when I opened it, and had read it all carefully, I began to laugh, partly through the joy of finding nothing alarming, and partly in comparing your situation with that of Demosthenes. You are aware that when he acted as choregus to some few dancers and flute-players, he asked to be called no longer Demosthenes, but Choregus. You, on the other hand, are the same, whether acting as choregus or not—although you so provide for more myriads of soldiers than is the number of the persons to whom Demosthenes furnished their requirements—since you do not write to us according to your station, but in your usual manner. And you have in no way given up your love of letters. Nay, as Plato says, in a very "storm and surge" of affairs you "withdraw under the shelter of a strong wall," as it were, and contaminate your soul by no disturbance—or rather, I should say, you do not suffer others, either, to do this, so far as in you lies to prevent it.

Such is your conduct; to those who are able to take it in, it seems great and wonderful; and yet it is not wonderful to one who can judge it with reference to the whole purpose of your life. Listen now to my story, which is incredible and yet actually occurred to us. It is as follows.

One of my servants died; a boorish fellow of our community of Annesi, without making known that when the leather was unrolled the writing became unintelligible. The recipient was supposed to have a similar staff around which he could roll the leather strip and thereby read it. This device was used by the Spartans for messages of state.

2 Plutarch, Mor. 817 C (Prac. Ger. Reipub.).
3 Rep. vi. 10.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

λαίον τι πρὸς αὐτὸν εἰπὼν ἑσχηκέναι, οὐ 2 προσελθὼν μοι, οὐκ ἐπατιασάμενος, οὐ παρ' ἐκόντος ἰξιώσας λαβεῖν, οὐκ ἀπειλήσας εἰ μὴ λάβοι βιώσασθαι, άθρόον 3 μετὰ τινων ὁμοίων αὐτῷ τὴν ἀπόνοιαν ἐπιθέμενος ἡμῶν τῇ οἰκία, τά τε γύναια τὰ φυλάττοντα συνέτριψε τυπτῶν, καὶ καταρρήξας τὰς θύρας ἐξεφόρησεν ἀπαντα, τὰ μὲν αὐτὸς λαβών, τὰ δὲ εἰς διαρπαγήν τοῖς βουλομένοις προθεῖς.

"Ἰν' οὖν μὴ ὁ ἑσχατος ὁρος ἡμεῖς τῆς ἁσθενείας ὁμεν καὶ παντὶ δόξωμεν ἐπιτήδειοι πρὸς ἐπι- χείρησιν, ἢν ἐν πάσι τοῖς πράγμασιν ἡμῶν σπουδὴν ἐπιδείξαι, καὶ ἵνα εἰσενέγκασθαι παρακλήθητι. μόνως γὰρ ἂν ἡμῖν οὕτω τὸ ἄπραγμον σώζοιτο, εἰ τῶ σῶ δραστηρίῳ συν- τεταγμένοι εἴημεν. γένοιτο δ' ἂν ἡμῖν ἄρκούσα δίκη, εἰ διὰ τοῦ παγάρχου συλληφθεῖς ἐν τῷ δεσ- μωτηρίῳ βραχύν κατακλεισθείη χρόνον. καὶ γὰρ οὐχ ὑπέρ ὧν πεπόνθαμεν ἀγανακτοῦμεν μόνον, ἀλλὰ καὶ τῆς πρὸς τὸ λοιπὸν ἀσφαλείας δεόμεθα.

IV

Ὀλυμπίῳ

Οἶα ποιεῖς, ὥθησις, τὴν φίλην ἡμῖν πενίαν καὶ φιλοσοφίας τροφὸν τῆς ἑσχατίας ἀπελαύνων;

1 εἰπὼν om. E, F. 2 οὐ om. A, B.
3 ἀθρόος E. 4 προστάγμασιν E.
5 δικαστηρίῳ C.

About 358. Olympius was a wealthy layman of 28
ne had had a contract with him, without coming to me about it, without putting in a claim, without demanding payment, although I was ready to pay, without threatening violence if he were not paid, of a sudden, with certain desperadoes like himself, attacked my house, beat and pounded the women-servants who guarded it, then broke down the doors, and carried off everything, taking some of the articles with his own hands, and offering the rest as plunder to whoever wished for them.

Now, in order that I may not be the very extreme of impotence, and that I may not seem to everybody a fair object of attack, pray bring now that zeal to bear which you have hitherto shown in all my affairs. For my tranquillity can only be preserved by my being placed under your efficient protection. As far as I am concerned, the culprit's punishment would be sufficient only if he were arrested by the district magistrate and locked up in jail for a short time. For I am not only indignant at what I have suffered, but I am also in need of security for the future.

LETTER IV

To Olympius

What do you mean, my dear Sir, by trying to drive my dear friend Poverty, nurse of philosophy, away from my retreat? In my opinion she would

Neocaesarea, and an influential friend and trusted sympathizer to Basil in his later troubles. Basil here very cleverly thanks him for certain gifts, while pretending to object to the receiving of such worldly things in his seclusion.
Collected Letters of Saint Basil

οἵμαι γὰρ ἂν σε καὶ ἐξουλης γραφῆν ὕπ’ αὐτῆς 
\( \text{φεῦγειν, εἰ τις αὐτῇ προσγένοιτο λόγος· ὅτι τοῦτῳ} \)
συνοικεῖν εἰλόμην ἐγὼ νῦν μὲν τὸν Ζήμωνα ἐπαίνοντι, ὃς ναυαγίῳ πάντα ἀποβαλὼν οὐδὲν ἄγεννὲς ἐφθέγξατο, ἀλλ’, εὐγε, εἰπεν, ὡ τὐχη,\(^2\) συνελαύνεις ἡμᾶς εἰς τὸ τριβώνιον, νῦν ἃν τὸν Κλεάνθην μισθῶ ὑδρο τὸν φρέατος ἀπαντλοῦντα, οὖν αὐτός 
τε διέξη καὶ τοῖς διδασκάλοις μισθοὺς ὑπετέλει. 
τὸν δὲ Διογένην οὐδὲ ἐπαίνοστα ποτε θαυμάζων τοῖς 
παρὰ τῆς φύσεως μόνοις ἀρκεῖσθαι φιλοτιμούμενον, 
ὡς καὶ τὸ κισσύβιον ἀπορρίψαι, ἐπειδῆπερ παρὰ 
παιδὸς ἐδίδαξθη κοίλαις ταῖς χερσίν ἐπικύπτων\(^3\) 
πίνειν. 
ταῦτα ἂν σοι καὶ τὰ τοιαῦτα ἦ σύνοικος 
ἡμῖν\(^4\) πενία μέμψατο, ταῖς μεγαλοδωρεαῖς 
ἐξοικισθείσα νῦν. 

\( \text{προσθεὶ} \) δὲ καὶ ἀπειλὴν τινα· 
ὁτι, εἰ σε ἐνταῦθα πάλιν λάβομι, Σικελίκην ἢ 
Ἰταλιώτιν τρυφήν ἀποδείξω τὰ πρότερα· οὕτω σε 
ἀκριβῶς τοῖς παρ’ ἐμαυτῆς ἀμυνοῦμαι.

Καὶ ταῦτα μὲν δὴ τοιαῦτα. ἦσθην δὲ 
ἀκούσας ἥρχθαι σε τῆς θεραπείας ἦδη, καὶ 
εὐχομαί σε ὀνασθαι αὐτῆς. 

\( \text{πρέποι δ’ ἂν τῇ ἱερᾷ} \) 

\( \text{σοὺ ψυχῇ ἄλυπος ὑπηρεσία σώματος.} \)

\(^{1}\) τοῦτῳ: add. μὲν A, B, C.
\(^{2}\) τύχη: add. ὅτι C.
\(^{3}\) ἐγχύπτων A, B, C.
\(^{4}\) ἡμῖν (ἐ μὲν) F; ἡμῖν A, B, C, E; ἡμῶν Ed. Ben.
prosecute you with an action for ejectment, if she could acquire the power of speech. She would probably say, "I chose to live with Basil because he at one time praises Zeno, who, on losing all in a shipwreck, uttered no ignoble word, but only 'Bravo, Fortune! You lend a hand in driving me into the philosopher's cloak';" and because at another time he praises Cleanthes, who drew water from a well for hire and thereby procured his means of livelihood and money to pay his teachers' fees. As for Diogenes, Basil never ceased admiring him, the philosopher who was so set upon being content with nothing but the gifts of nature that he even threw away his drinking-cup, after he had learned from a boy how to bend over and drink from the hollow of his hands." In some such manner my housemate, Poverty, might chide you for having driven her at this time from my house by your munificence. And she might even add some such threat as this: "If I catch you here again, I will show your past life to have been of Sicilian or Italian luxury, so relentlessly will I pay you off by the means at my command."

But I have written enough in this strain. I am glad to hear that you have already begun the course of treatment, and I pray that you will derive benefit from it. It would befit your holy soul that the service rendered by your body should be without pain.

1 Later adopted by the monks. Cf. Lucian, Pereg. 15; and Synesius, Ep. 147.

2 Cleanthes was also called Phreantlus (Φρέαντλος), "one who draws from a well." Cf. Val. Max. viii. 7; Sen. Ep. 44.
Οὐπω εἶχον τρίτην ἢ τετάρτην ἢμέραν πληγείς ἐπὶ τῇ ἄκοῦ τοῦ ἀφορήτου πάθους καὶ ἔτι ἀμφιβολος ὃν διὰ τὸ μηδὲ σαφῶς δυνηθήναι ἢμῖν τῶν ἀνιαρῶν τὸν μηνυτήν τὸ συμβαίν διηγησάσθαι, καὶ τῷ ἀπεύχεσθαι ἀληθῆ εἶναι δυσπαραδέκτως ἔχων πρὸς τὰ θρυλλοῦμενα, ἐδεξάμην γράμμα τοῦ ἐπισκόπου ἀκριβῶς σημαινοῦ τὴν ἀπευκτὴν ἀγγελίαν. ὥρ ὁ οὐσον μὲν ἐστέναξα καὶ ὅσον ἀφῆκα δάκρυν, τί χρὴ καὶ λέγειν; καὶ γὰρ τὸς οὐτω λίθινος τὴν καρδίαν ἢ ἔξω παντελῶς τῆς ἀνθρωπίνης φύσεως ὥστε ἀπαθῶς ἐνεγκεῖν τὸ συμβαίν ἢ μετρίῳ πάθει τὴν ψυχὴν καταληφθῆναι;

Οὐκον λαμπρὸν διαδοχή, ἐρείσμα γένους, πατρίδος ἐλπίς, γονέων εὐσεβῶν βλάστημα ύπὸ μυρίας εὐχαίς ἐντραφέν, ἐν αὐτῷ τῷ ἀνήθει τῆς ἡλικίας ὃν, ἐκ μέσου τῶν πατρικών χειρῶν ἀναρπασθεὶς οἰχεται. ταῦτα ποιαν ἀδάμαντος φύσιν οὐχ ἰκανα ἐκλύσαι καὶ εἰς συμπάθειαν ἀγαγεῖν; ὥστε οὐδὲν μέγα, εἰ καὶ ἡμῶν διὰ βάθους ἦψατο τὸ κακὸν, ὄλοκληρως ἢ ἄρχησ προσπεφυκότων ὑμῖν καὶ τᾶς το εὐφροσύνας ύμῶν καὶ τὰς λύπας ἴδιας ἕαυτῶν ποιομένων.

1 Νεκτάριω παραμυθητικὴ ἐπὶ τῷ νεῖ C; πρὸς Νεκτάριων τῶν νῦν ἀποβαλόντα D, F.
2 γράμματα B.
3 σημαινοῦ B.
4 μετριῳπαθῆ B, C, D, F.
5 λαμπρὰ C, D.
6 οὐν Ed. Ben.; non tamen A, B, C, D, F.
LETTER V

LETTER V

To Nectarius, in Consolation

It was not yet the third or fourth day after I had been shocked by the news of your intolerable misfortune, and I was still in perplexity because the bearer of the distressing message was unable to tell clearly all that had happened, and so earnestly was I praying that it might not be true that I was reluctant to give ear to the common report, when I received a letter from the bishop which fully disclosed the sad tidings. How greatly I mourned thereat, and what tears I shed, why need I tell? For who is so stony of heart or so entirely without human feeling as to endure such a blow with complete indifference, or to experience in soul but a moderate grief?

The heir of an illustrious house, the bulwark of his race, the hope of his fatherland, the offspring of pious parents, a lad nurtured amid countless prayers, in the very flower of youth—he is gone, torn from the very arms of his parents. Is there a heart of adamant that such things would not melt and draw to a feeling of compassion? It is therefore no strange thing that your misfortune deeply touched us also, who from the beginning have been wholly attached to you, and have made your joys and griefs our very own. And yet

καίτοιχε ἐδόκει, τόν γε μέχρι τοῦ παρόντος χρόνον, ὡδίνα εἶναι τὰ λυποῦντα ύμᾶς, ἐν τοῖς πλείστοις δὲ κατὰ βοῦν ύμῶν τὰ πράγματα φέρεσθαι, ἀλλ' ἀδρόως, βασκανία δαίμονος, πάσα ἐκείνη τοῦ οἴκου 1 ἡ εὐθυνία καὶ τῶν ψυχῶν 2 ἡ φαινότης ἴδιανται, καὶ ἐγενόμεθα τῷ βιώ διήγημα σκιθρωτόν. εἰάν μὲν οὖν ποτινάσθαι ἐπὶ τοῖς συμβάσι καὶ δακρύειν βουλώμεθα, οὐκ ἔξαρκέσθαι ἡμῶν ὁ χρόνος τοῦ βίου πάντες δὲ ἀνθρωποι μεθ' ἡμῶν στένοντες παρισώσαι τῷ πάθει τὸν ὀδυρμόν οὐ δυνήσονται ἀλλὰ κἂν τὰ τῶν ποταμῶν ἰεύματα 3 δάκρυνον γένηται, ἐκπληρῶσαι τῶν συμβαίντων τῶν θρήνον οὐκ ἔξαρκέσθαι.

Ἐὰν μέντοι θελήσωμεν τὸ τοῦ Θεοῦ δῶρον ὁ εἰσαπέθετο ἐν 1 ταῖς καρδίαις ἡμῶν προενεγκεῖν νῦν τῶν λογισμῶν λέγω τῶν σώφρων, δὲ καὶ ἐν ταῖς εὐθυνείας μέτρα οίδε ταῖς ψυχαῖς ἡμῶν ὀρίζειν, καὶ ἐν ταῖς κατηφεστέραις περιστάσεσιν εἰς ὑπόμονησιν ἀγειν τῶν ἀνθρωπίνων καὶ ὑποβάλλειν ἡμῖν ἃ τε εἴδομεν, ἃ τε ἴκουσαμεν, ὅτι γέμει τοῦ θλός τῶν τοιοῦτων παθῶν, καὶ πολλὰ τῶν ἀνθρωπίνων συμφορῶν ἐστὶ τὰ ὑποδείγματα, καὶ ἐπὶ πᾶσιν, ὅτι πρόσταγμα Θεοῦ ἐστὶ τὸ μὴ λυπεῖσθαι ἐπὶ τοῖς κεκοιμημένοις τούς εἰς Χριστὸν πεπιστευκότας, διὰ τὴν ἐλπίδα τῆς ἀναστάσεως, καὶ ὅτι τῆς μεγάλης ὑπομονῆς μεγάλοι παρὰ τῷ ἀθλοθέτῃ στέφανοι δόξης ἀπόκεινται· εἰαν ἐπιτρέψωμεν τῷ λογισμῷ ταῦτα ἡμῖν κατεπ-

1 ἐκεῖνων αἰτ. Α, Β, Κ, Δ. 2 τῶν ψυχῶν om. Α, Β, Κ, Δ. 3 το... ἰεύματα Α, Β, Κ, Δ.
hitherto at least it has always seemed that your griefs were few in number, and that for the most part your affairs ran smoothly with the stream; but suddenly, through the malice of the devil, all that happiness of home and that gladness of heart has been swept away, and our whole life has become a dismal tale. If, therefore, we would indulge in protestations and in tears because of what has happened, the span of our lives will not suffice; and though all mankind should mourn with us, they will not be able to match our sorrow with their lamentation; nay, even if the waters of the rivers should become tears, they would not suffice to satisfy our grief for what has happened.

If, however, we wish to make use of God's gift, which He has implanted within our hearts, we shall be comforted. By His gift I mean that sober reason, which knows how, both in fair weather to keep our souls within bounds, and, when the sky is more cloudy, to remind us of the lot of man, suggesting to us (what we have already both seen and heard) that life is full of such afflictions, that the examples of human misfortune are many, and above all, that it is God's command that those who put their trust in Christ shall not grieve for those who have been laid to rest, because of their hope of the resurrection, and again, that for great endurance great crowns of glory await us at the hands of the Judge. If, then, we permit reason to whisper to us these reminders, perchance we


2 Cf. Lam. 2. 18.

4 eV om. Ed. Ben.; non tamen A, B, C, D.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

άδειν, τάχα ἂν εὐροίμεν τινα μετρίαν τοῦ κακοῦ λύσιν. διὸ παρακαλῶ σε ὡς γενναίον ἀγωνιστὴν στήναι πρὸς τὸ μέγεθος τῆς πληγῆς, καὶ μὴ ὑποπεσεῖν τῷ βάρει τῆς λύπης, μηδὲ καταποθῆναι τὴν ψυχὴν, ἐκεῖνο πεπεισμένον, ὅτι κἂν ὦ λόγοι τῶν παρὰ Θεοῦ οἰκονομουμένων διαφεύγωσιν ἡμᾶς, ἀλλὰ πάντως γε τὸ παρὰ τοῦ σοφοῦ καὶ ἀγαπῶντος ἡμᾶς οἰκονομήθην ἀποδεκτὸν ἐστι, κἂν ἐπίπονοι γ. αὐτὸς γὰρ ὄδε ἐκάστω διατίθησι τὸ συμφέρον καὶ διὰ τὴν ἁμαρτίαν τί θησιν ἡμῖν τοῦ βίου τὰ πέρατα. ἐστι γὰρ τις αὐτία ἀνθρώπως ἀκατάληπτος, δι’ ἢν οἱ μὲν θάττον ἐντεῦθεν ἀπάγονται, οἱ δὲ ἐπὶ πλείου προστα- λαπωρεῖν τῷ ὁδυνηρῷ τούτῳ βίῳ καταλαμπάν- ονται.

"Ὡστε ἐπὶ πᾶσι προσκυνεῖν αὐτοῦ τὴν φιλαν-
θρωπίαν ὁφείλομεν καὶ μὴ δυσχεραίνειν, μεμνημέ-
νοι τῆς μεγάλης ἐκείνης καὶ ἀοιδίμου φωνῆς ἢν
ὁ μέγας ἄθλητης Ἰωβ ἀνεφθέγγετο, ἐπὶ μᾶς τραπέζης ἰδῶν δέκα παιδας ἐν βραχείᾳ καιροῦ ῥοπῇ συντριβέντας. Ὅ Κύριος ἐδωκεν, ὁ Κύριος ἀφείλετο· ὥς τῷ Κυρίῳ ἐδοξεν, οὕτω καὶ ἐγένετο, ἡμέτερον ποιησόμεθα τὸ βαύμα τοῦτο. ἵσος ὁ
μυσθὸς παρὰ τοῦ δικαίου κρίτου τοῖς τὰ ἱσα
ἐπιδεικνυμένοις ἀνδραγαθήματα. οὐκ ἀπεστερη-
θήμεν τοῦ παιδός, ἀλλ’ ἀπεδόκαμεν τῷ χρήσαντι
οὔδε ἡφανίσθη αὐτῷ ἢ ξωή, ἀλλ’ ἐπὶ τὸ βέλτιον
dιημείφθη: οὐ γῆ κατέκρυψε τὸν ἀγαπητὸν ἡμῶν,
ἀλλ’ οὐρανὸς ὑπεδέξατο. μικρὸν ἀναμείνωμεν,
καὶ συνεσόμεθα τῷ ποθομένῳ. οὔδε πολὺς ὁ

1 τίθησιν om. C, D.
shall find some slight relief from our trouble. Wherefore I exhort you, as a noble contestant, to stand firm against the blow, however great, and not to fall under the weight of your grief, nor yet to lose your courage, having assurance that even if the reasons for God's ordinances elude us, yet surely that which is ordained by Him who is wise and who loves us must be accepted, even if it be painful. For He Himself knows how He dispenses to each that which is best for him, and for what reason He sets for us unequal terms of life. For there exists a reason, incomprehensible to man, why some are sooner taken hence, while others are left behind to persevere for a longer time in this life of sorrows.

Therefore, above all, we ought to revere His loving-kindness and not repine, remembering that great and famous saying uttered by the great combatant Job when he saw his ten children in a brief moment of time slain at a single meal: "The Lord gave, and the Lord hath taken away: as it hath pleased the Lord, so is it done."¹ Let us make these marvellous words our own; equal is the reward at the hands of the righteous Judge for those who exhibit equally noble deeds. We have not been bereft of the boy, but we have given him back to the lender; nor has his life been destroyed, but merely transformed for the better; earth has not covered our beloved one, but heaven has received him. Let us abide a brief space, and we shall be with him whose loss we mourn. Nor will the period of separation be great, since in this life, as on a journey, we are all hastening to the same

¹ Job 1. 21.
Χρόνος τής διαστάσεως, πάντων ὁσπερ ἐν ὁδῷ τῷ βίῳ τούτῳ πρὸς τὸ αὐτὸ καταγώγιον ἐπειγομένων· ἐν ὃ ὁ μὲν προκατέλυσεν, οὐ δὲ ἐπήλθεν, οὐ δὲ ἐπείγεται, 1 πάντας δὲ ἐν ὑποδέχεται τέλος. εἰ γὰρ καὶ θάττον τὴν ὁδὸν προκατέλυσεν, ἀλλὰ πάντες τὴν αὐτήν πορευόμεθα καὶ πάντας τὸ αὐτὸ ἀναμέει κατάλυμα. μόνον γένοιτο ήμᾶς δι’ ἄρτης τῇ καθαρότητι ἐκείνου ὑμοιωθῆναι, ἵνα διὰ τὸ ἄδολον τοῦ ἱθοὺς τῆς αὐτῆς τοῖς ἐν Χριστῷ νηπίοις ἀναπαύσεως ἐπιτύχωμεν. 2

VI

Πρὸς τὴν ὁμόζυγον 3 Νεκταρίου παραμυθητικῆ.

'Εμελλόν ἀποσιωπάν πρὸς τὴν κοσμιότητά σου, λογιζόμενος ότι, ὁσπερ ὁφθαλμὸ φλεγμαίνοντι καὶ τὸ ἀπαλώτατον τῶν παρηγορημάτων ἀνίαν ἐμποιεῖ, οὕτω καὶ ψυχῇ ὑπὸ 5 θλίψεως βαρείας κεκακωμένη, καὶ πολλὴν παράκλησιν φέρη, ὁ λόγος ὁχληρὸς πως ἐίναι δοκεί, ἐν τῇ περιουδνίᾳ προσφερόμενος. ἐπεῖ δὲ με 6 εἰσήλθεν ὅτι πρὸς Χριστιανὴν μοι ὁ λόγος ἔσται πάλαι πεπαιδευμένην τὰ θεία καὶ ἐμπαράσκευον οὕταν πρὸς τὰ ἀνθρώπινα, οὔκ ἐνόμισα δίκαιον ἐίναι παραλιπεῖν τὸ ἐπιβάλλον μοι. οἴδα ποταπὰ τῶν μητέρων τὰ σπλάγχνα καὶ, ὅταν ἱδίος τὸ σὸν περὶ πάντας χρηστὸν καὶ ἱμερον ἐνθυμηθῶ, λογίζομαι πόσην

1 τῷ ποθεμένῳ . . . ἐπείγεται om. B; οὐδὲ πολὺς . . . ὑποδέχεται τέλος om. C, D.
2 τύχωμεν A, B, C, D. 3 ὁμόζυγα E, F.
3 ἐπὶ τῷ παιδὶ add. F. 5 ἀπὸ C. 6 οἱ C, D.

38
LETTER VI

caravansary; and although one has already taken up his lodging there, and another has just arrived, and another is hastening thither, yet the same goal will receive us all. For even though your son has finished his journey first, nevertheless we shall all travel the same path, and the same hospice awaits us all. Only may God grant that we through virtue may become like to him in purity, that by the blamelessness of our character we may obtain the same repose as the children of Christ.

LETTER VI

To the Wife of Nectarius, in Consolation

It was my purpose to maintain silence towards you, gentle lady, considering that just as to the eye when inflamed even the most delicate of soothing applications causes irritation, so to the soul, when afflicted by a crushing weight of sorrow, words offered in the very moment of anguish, even though full of comfort, seem vexatious. When it occurred to me, however, that I should be speaking to a Christian, long since instructed in the ways of God and experienced in the affairs of men, I deemed it wrong to neglect my duty. I know what the heart of a mother is, and when I think how very kind and gentle you in particular are towards all, I can

---

1 Cf. ps.-Plut. Mor. 113 C (Consol. ad Apollon.), where the same figure of life as a journey is used.

2 Accompanies Letter V.

3 Basil was one of the ten children of Emmelia, who was a model of Christian womanhood. Cf. Introd. p. xiv.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

eikos eti tois parousin einai tis alhiodona. paide ekimiwdhis ou perionta mev emakarisaan
pasaai meteres, kai nveantovous eautwv toisio-
tous einai, apobanonta de estenaxan, wos ekaste
 ton eauthe ghe katakrupasa. ekeivn ou thanasos
plhgha engenet paptidow dvvo,1 tis te hmeteras
kai tis Kilikwv. ekeivf to mega kai perifaines
yenos sygkatetepesen, osper ereismatos upaire-
thentos katasieithen. o symantita pounirov da-
monos, poson isxuse kakow exeragasathai. o
yhe, toiovtow anagkaseisai upodeixasthai pados.
egfike taca kai o hlios, ei tis aiisthisis autow,
to skubrowton ekeivn theama. kai ti an tis toso-
tov eipoi osou h amhakamia tis puxhes upoballei;
'All oih gar aprounhta ta hmetera, ws meina-
thisamev en to evaggeleio oti oude strouthion
pittei anue thelimatos tou Patros hymon. ooste
ei ti gegone, thelimati gegone tou ktiisantos hymas.
to de vouloimati tou Theou tis anvesthke; kata-
deixeimetha to symvban dysanassetoutes gar
outhe to gevomenon diorboymetha, kai eautow
prosapollemven. my kathgorhsoumen tis dikaias
kriseos tou Theou. amatheis esmen, ooste ta
arrieta autouv krimita dokimazein. vun sou
lambanei tis dokimh o Kuryios tis pros autouv
aguptis. vun sou parestei kairos dia tis upo-
monhis tis merida ton marturon labein. h ton

1 duowin F.

1 i.e. Basil’s and Nectarius’ country. This supports the
belief that the Nectarius mentioned in this and the previous
LETTER VI

estimate how great must be your grief at the present moment. You have lost a son, a man whom in life all mothers accounted fortunate, praying that their own sons might be of like mould; and when he died, they mourned as if each had buried her own. His death has stricken two countries, our own and the Cilicians. With him a great and illustrious family has fallen, dashed to the ground, as it were by the removal of the prop. Oh, plague of an evil demon, how great a calamity it has had the power to wreak! O earth, that has been compelled to submit to an affliction like this! Doubtless even the sun, if it had any power to feel, must have shuddered at that horrible sight. And what can anyone say commensurate with that which the soul in its utter despair prompts him to utter?

Yet nothing that befalls us is apart from the guidance of Providence, for we have learned from the Gospel that not even a sparrow falleth without the will of our Father. Therefore whatever has come to pass, has come by the will of Him who made us. And the will of God, who has ever withstood it? Let us accept what has happened; for if we are rebellious, we not only do not right the past, but ruin ourselves besides. Let us not condemn the just decision of God. We are too ignorant to test His ineffable decisions. Now is the Lord making His test of your love for Him. Now is the opportunity at hand for you through patience to play the martyrs' rôle. The mother of the letter was the future bishop of Constantinople, since the latter was from Tarsus in Cilicia.

2 σωτάνημα is used here as in the Septuagint. Cf. Ex. 9, 14; 1 Kings 8, 37; Eccl. 2, 14. 3 Cf. Matt. 10, 29.
Μακκαβαίων μήτηρ ἐπτὰ παΐδων εἰδεθαντον καὶ οὐκ ἐστέναξεν, οὔδε ἀφήκεν ἁγεμνίς δάκρυν, ἀλλ' εὐχαριστοῦσα τῷ Θεῷ ὅτι ἐβλεπεν αὐτοὺς πυρί καὶ σιδήρῳ καὶ ταῖς χαλεπώταταις αἰκίας τῶν δεσμῶν τῆς σαρκὸς λυμένους, εὐδόκιμος μὲν παρὰ Θεῷ, ἀοίδιμος δὲ παρὰ ἀνθρώποις ἐκρίθη. μέγα τὸ πάθος, φημὶ κἀγὼ ἀλλὰ μεγάλοι καὶ οἱ παρὰ τοῦ Κυρίου μισθοῖ τοῖς υπομένονσιν ἀποκείμενοι.

"Οστε ἐγένου μήτηρ καὶ ἐιδες τὸν παῖδα καὶ ηὐχαριστῆσας τῷ Θεῷ, ἥδεις πάντως ὅτι θυνητὴ οὔσα θυνητὸν ἐγένειςας. τὶ οὖν παράδοξον, εἰ ἀπέθανεν ὁ θυνητὸς; ἀλλὰ λυπεῖ ἡμᾶς τὸ παρὰ καιρόν. ἀδηλον εἰ μὴ εὐκαίρον τοῦτο, ἐπειδὴ ἡμεῖς έκλέγεσθαι τὰ συμφέροντα ταῖς ψυχαῖς καὶ ορίζειν προθεσμίας ἀνθρωπίνη ᾽ζωή ὁμοῦ εἴπιστάμεθα. περιβλεψί τὸν κόσμον ἀπαντα ἐν φ κατοικίες καὶ ἐνυόσον ὅτι πάντα θυνητά τὰ όρώμενα καὶ πάντα φθορᾶ ὑποκείμενα. ἰμάβλεψιον πρὸς τῶν σύρανων καὶ οὗτος ποτε θυείστατι πρὸς τὸν ήλιον οὔδε οὗτος διαμεῖν. οἱ ἀστέρες σύμπαντες, ᾽ζωὰ χερσαία καὶ ἐνυδρά, τὰ περὶ γῆν κάλλη, αὐτὴ ἡ γῆ, πάντα φθαρτά, πάντα μικρῶν ὑστερον οὖκ ἐσόμενα. ἡ πολύν ἐννοια παραμυθία ἐστο τοῦ συμβεβηκότος. μὴ καθ' εαυτὸ μέτρει τὸ πάθος, ἀφόρητον γὰρ οὔτω φανεῖται σοι ἀλλὰ τοὺς ἀνθρωπίνους πᾶσι συγκρίνουσα, ἐντεύθεν εὐρήσεις αὐτοῦ τῆς παραμυθίαν. ἐπὶ πάσι δὲ ἐκεῖνο

LETTER VI

Maccabees\(^1\) beheld the death of seven sons, and neither groaned nor shed an ignoble tear. Rather she gave thanks to God that she beheld her sons, albeit by fire and sword and by the most cruel tortures, set free from the bonds of the flesh; and thus she received commendation in the sight of God, and everlasting renown in the sight of men. Great is the suffering, I do admit; but great also are the rewards stored up by the Lord for those who patiently endure.

When you became a mother, and beheld your child, and rendered thanks to God, you knew for a certainty that you, a mortal woman, had given birth to mortal offspring. How then is it strange if this mortal has died? But it is the untimely loss that grieves us, you will say. Nay, it is not certain that his death is not timely, since we do not know how to select what is best for our souls, or how to define limits for the life of men. Look about you at the whole universe in which you live; and reflect that all the visible world is mortal and all things are subject to corruption. Look upward to the sky: this too will one day be dissolved; look at the sun: not even this will endure. The stars one and all, the living things of land and water, the beauties of the earth, the earth itself—all are doomed to perish, all in a little while will not be. Let the thought of these things be a consolation for what has befallen you. Do not measure your suffering by itself, for if you do, it will appear to you intolerable; if, however, you compare it with all things human, you will discover therein its consolation. But above all I have this to urge—that

\(^1\) Cf. Macc. 7.
VII

Γρηγορίῳ ἐταίρῳ ³

Οὐδὲ τότε ⁴ ἤγνωσσον, ὅτε ἐπέστελλον τῇ λογιοτητί σου, ὅτι πᾶσα θεολογικὴ φωνὴ ἐλάττων μὲν ἐστὶ τῆς διανοίας τοῦ λέγοντος, ἐλάττων δὲ τῆς τοῦ ἐπιζητοῦντος ἐπιθυμίας, διότι ὁ λόγος ἀσθενέστερον πως πέφυκε διακονεῖσθαι τοῖς νοουμένοις. εἰ οὖν ἀσθενῆς ἡμῶν ἡ διάνοια, ἐλάττων δὲ ταύτης ἡ γλώσσα, τῇ ἐχρῆν προσδοκάν ἡμᾶς ἐπὶ τοῖς εἰρημένοις, καὶ οὐχὶ πενίαν ἐγκληθῆσθαι λόγων; οὐ μὴν τούτου γε ἐνεκεν δυνατὸν ἦν σιωπῆ παρελθεῖν τῷ ἐπιζητοῦμεν.⁵ κίνδυνος γὰρ προδοσίας ἐν τῷ μὴ προχείρως

¹ ἐσθε Α, Β, Σ, Δ.
² ἀναλίσκουσα Α, Β, Σ, Δ.
³ Γρηγορίῳ ἐπισκοπᾶ ἐταίρῳ ὑπὶ οὖχ ἰκανός ὁ λόγος πρὸς παράστασιν τῆς νουμένης εὐσεβείας καὶ ἴνα συνηγορῇ τῇ ἀληθείᾳ. γρ. Εὐαγγ. πρεσβυτέρῳ Ε. τῷ αὐτῷ ὑπὶ οὖχ ἰκανός ὁ λόγος πρὸς παράστασιν τῆς νουμένης εὐσεβείας Δ, Β. τοῦ αὐτοῦ πρὸς τῶν μεγαν Γρηγόριον ὑπὶ οὖχ ἰκανός ὁ λόγος πρὸς παράστασιν τῆς νουμένης εὐσεβείας ἴνα καὶ τῇ ἀληθείᾳ συνηγορῇ Σ, Δ. Γρηγορίῳ βασίλειος Φ.
LETTER VII

you spare your partner in life; be a consolation one to the other; do not make the misfortune harder for him to bear by spending yourself upon your grief. I am by no means of the opinion that words suffice to give comfort; but I believe that there is need of prayer also to meet this affliction. Therefore I do pray the Lord Himself so to touch your heart with His ineffable power as to enkindle light in your soul by the exercise of good counsels, that you may have within yourself the sources of your consolation.

LETTER VII

To Gregory, my comrade

Even when I wrote to your learned self, I was not unaware that every theological expression is inferior to the thought of the speaker, and inferior to the desire of the questioner; because speech, I presume, is naturally too weak a thing to serve perfectly the conceptions of our minds. Thus if our thought is weak, and our tongue is inferior to our thought, what else should we have expected as a consequence of our pronouncements than that we should be criticized for poverty of words? However, I could not pass over your question in silence for this reason. For there is danger of treason, if one is not quick to answer the questions

1 Appears to have been written in his retirement at Pontus.
2 Cf. the homily (eiβ τὴν ἀγίαν τοῦ Χριστοῦ γένεσιν), "On the holy birth of Christ," where this statement is made more elaborately.

4 οὐδέποτε E. 5 ζητούμενον A, B, C, D.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

ἀποδιδόναι τὰς περὶ Θεοῦ ἀποκρίσεις τοῖς ἁγα-
πώσι τὸν Κύριον. ἐκεῖνα μὲν οὖν, εἴτε ἀρκοῦν-
tως ἔχειν δοκεῖ, εἴτε καὶ ἀκριβεστέρας τινὸς προσθήκης δεῖται, καὶροὺ ἰδίου πρὸς διόρθωσιν χρῆσθαι.

Τὸ δὲ νῦν ἔχον παρακαλοῦμέν σε, ὅ ἐπὶ παρεκαλέσαμεν ἡδὴ, χρῆσαι σεαυτὸν ὀλοκλήρως τῇ συννηγορίᾳ τῆς ἀληθείας καὶ ταῖς παρὰ τοῦ Θεοῦ ἐγγυνομέναις τῇ διανοίᾳ σου ὀρμαῖς πρὸς τὴν τοῦ ἁγαθοῦ σύστασιν, ταύταις ἀρκοῦμενοι καὶ παρ’ ἡμῶν μηδὲν ἐπιξητούντα πλέον, οἱ πολλοὶ ἐλάττους ὄντες τῆς ὑπονοίας βλάπτομεν μᾶλλον τῇ παρ’ ἐαυτῶν ἀσθενείᾳ τῶν λόγων ἦ τινα ἵσχύν διὰ τῆς συννηγορίας τῇ ἀληθείᾳ προστίθεμεν.

VIII

Τοῖς Καἰσαρείσιν ἀπολογία περὶ τῆς ἀποχωρή-
σεως, καὶ περὶ πίστεως

Πολλάκις ἔθαυμασα τὶ ποτὲ πρὸς ἡμᾶς πεπόνθατε καὶ πόθεν τοσοῦτον ἡττᾶσθε τῆς

1 τοῦ om. A, B, F. 5 τῶν λόγων C, D.
6 καὶ περὶ πίστεως om. F. 7 ἡττησθε F.

1 Written in the year 380, when Basil, troubled by the news that Dianius, the bishop who had baptized him, was a subscriber to the Arian creed of Ariminum as revised at Nica (at or near modern Hafsa, just to the south of Adrianople; cf. Theod., Hist. Eccl. 2, 16), had left Caesarea and taken refuge with Gregory at Nazianzus. This letter is clearly not addressed to the citizens of Caesarea, but rather to the monks of the Coenobium over which Basil had presided; cf. the Benedictine note.
LETTER VIII

about God which those ask who love the Lord. My previous discussion, then, whether it is regarded as adequate or whether it needs a supplement to make it more accurate, calls for a special opportunity for revision.

For the present, however, we urge you, as we have urged you before, to devote yourself entirely to the advocacy of the truth, and to those impulses which are implanted by God in your mind for the establishment of the good; and we beg you to rest content with these and ask nothing more of us; for by falling far short of our theme we do more harm to the reasoning by our own weakness than we add strength to the truth by our advocacy.

LETTER VIII

AN APOLOGY TO THE CAESAREA NS FOR HIS WITHDRAWAL, AND A TREATISE ON FAITH 1

I have often wondered what feelings you have conceived towards us, and for what reason you show

1 From the point of view of the Trinity, the chief work of the Cappadocians, and especially Basil, consisted in bringing back to the Church the group of the Semi-Arians, and determining once for all the orthodox Greek terminology. Cf. Introd., p. xxiii.—The present letter, and especially Letter XXXVIII, accomplished much in this way.

The more important terms as defined by Basil are:

δισύμονος, dissimilis, unlike.

οὐσία, substantia (although the Latin rendering is etymologically the same as ὑπόστασις), substance.

ὁμοουσίας, consubstantialis, consubstantial.

ὁμοούσιος, similis quoad substantiam, of similar substance.

ὁμοιοσ, similis, like.

ὑπόστασις, persona, person.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

ήμετέρας βραχύτητος, τῆς μικρᾶς καὶ ὀλίγης καὶ οὖν δὲν ἵσως ἐχούσης ἐράσμιον, καὶ λόγως ἡμᾶς προτρέπεσθε φιλίας τε καὶ πατρίδος ὑπομιμήσκοιτε, ὅσπερ φυγάδας τινὰς πατρικοῖς σπλάγχνοις προς ἑαυτούς πάλιν ἐπιστρέφειν πειρώμενοι. ἐγὼ δὲ τὸ μὲν φυγάς γεγονέναι ὁμολογῶ, καὶ οὐκ ἁρπηθείην τὴν δὲ αἰτίαν μᾶθοιτ' ἀν ἡδη ποθοῦντες.

Μάλιστα μὲν τῷ ἀδοκήτῳ τότε πληγεῖς, καθώπερ οἱ τοῖς αἰφνιδίοις ζῷοις ἀθρόως καταπλαγέντες, οὐ κατέσχον τοὺς λογισμούς, ἀλλ' ἐμάκρυνα φυγαδεύων, καὶ ἡνίκῃσθην χρόνον ἰκανὸν ἀφ' ὑμῶν, ἔπειτα δὲ καὶ πόθος τίς ὑπεισήμην οὖν2 τῶν θείων δομάτων καὶ τῆς περὶ ἐκείνα φιλοσοφίας. Πῶς γὰρ ἀν δυναίμην, ἔφη γὰρ, κρατήσαι τῆς συνοικούσης ἡμῶν κακίας; τὸς δ' ἀν μοι γένηται; 3 Λάβαν, ἀπαλλάττων με τοῦ Ἰσαὰ καὶ πρὸς τὴν ἀνωτάτω φιλοσοφίαν παιδαγωγῶν; ἀλλ' ἐπειδὴ, σὺν Θεῷ, τοῦ σκοποῦ κατὰ δύναμιν τετυχήκαμεν εὐρόντες σκέφτο τοιούτης ἐκλογῆς καὶ φρέαρ βαθύν, λέγω δὲ τὸ τοῦ Χριστοῦ στόμα Γρηγόριον, ὄλγον ἡμῶν, παρακαλῶ, ὀλίγον συγχωρήσατε χρόνον. αἰτούμεθα, οὐ τὴν ἐν ταῖς πόλεσι διατριβήν ἀσπαζόμενον; οὐδὲ γὰρ λέληθεν ἡμᾶς ὁ πονηρὸς διὰ τῶν τοιούτων τὴν ἀπάτην

1 ἁν add. F. 2 με F. 3 γένοιτο F.

1 Basil here calls Caesarea πατρίς; but this term may be applied to either the land of his birth or the place of his bringing up. Cf. Introd., p. xiii.
2 Cf. Acts 9, 15: "And the Lord said to him: Go thy way; for this man is to me a vessel of election, to carry
such deference to our inferiority—paltry and insignificant as we are, and possessing, I suppose, no lovable quality—that you address us with words of exhortation, recalling our friendship and fatherland, as though you were endeavouring to induce, by an appeal to love of country, a runaway person to return to his home. That I have become a runaway I acknowledge, nor would I deny it; but the reason for this you may now learn, since you so desire.

In the first place, and chiefly, I was so confounded at the time by the unexpected event, as men are utterly and in a moment confounded by a sudden noise, that I could not control my reason, but, taking flight, removed myself to a distance, and I have sojourned a considerable time away from you; in the second place, a longing stole into my heart for the doctrine of God, and for the philosophy pertaining thereto. For how, I asked myself, could I overcome the evil that dwelt within me? Who would be a Laban to me, and free me from Esau, and lead me to the highest philosophy? But inasmuch as we have, with God’s help, attained our goal as well as might be, having found a vessel of election and a deep well-spring—I mean Gregory, the mouthpiece of Christ—grant us, I beg, a brief space of time. We ask this not because we are fond of life in the cities—for we are very well aware that the Evil One devises deceit my name before the Gentiles, and kings, and the children of Israel.”

The city in which Basil is now staying is probably Nazianzus, the home of his friend Gregory; or more exactly the suburb Carbalca or Caprales (modern Gelvera), where Gregory’s estate was situated.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

toîς ἀνθρώποις προσμηχανόμενος· ἀλλὰ τήν συντυχίαν τήν πρὸς τοὺς ἁγίους ἐπωφελή μάλιστα κρίνοντες. ἐν γὰρ τῷ λέγειν τι περὶ τῶν θείων δογμάτων καὶ ἀκούειν πυκνότερον, ἐξίν δυσαπόβλητον θεωρημάτων λαμβάνομεν. καὶ τὰ μὲν καθ’ ἡμᾶς τοῦτον ἔχει τὸν τρόπον.

Τρείς δέ, οἱ θείαι μοι καὶ προσφιλέσταται πασῶν κεφαλαί, φυλαττεσθε τοὺς τῶν Φυλιστιαίων ποιμένας, μή τις λαθὼν ἐμφράξῃ ύμῶν τὰ φρέατα καὶ τὸ καθαρὸν τῆς γνώσεως τῆς περὶ τὴν πίστιν ἐπιθέλωση. τούτῳ γὰρ αὐτοῖς ἀεὶ ἔστιν ἐπιμελεῖς, μὴ ἐκ τῶν θείων Γραφῶν διδάσκειν τὰς ἀκεραιότερας ψυχάς, ἀλλ’ ἐκ τῆς ἐξοθεν σοφίας παρακρούσθαι τῇ ἀληθείᾳ. ο γὰρ ἀγέννητον καὶ γεννητὸν ἐπεισάγων ἡμῶν τῇ πίστει, καὶ τὸν ἄντα μὴ ὅντα ποτὲ δογματίζων, καὶ τὸν φύσει καὶ ἄει Πατέρα πατέρα γινόμενον, καὶ τὸ Πνεῦμα τὸ ἁγιον οὐκ ἅδιδον, οὐκ ἀντικρύς ἐστὶ Φυλιστεύς 1; βασκαίνου τοῖς τοῦ πατριάρχου ἡμῶν προβάτωις, ἵνα μὴ πίνωσιν ἐκ τοῦ καθαροῦ καὶ ἀλλομένου εἰς ξωὴν αἰώνιον ύδατος, ἀλλὰ τοῦ προφήτου λόγιον πρὸς ἑαυτοὺς ἐπισπάσσωται, τὸ Ἐμε ἐγκατέλιπον πηγὴν ύδατος ζῶντος καὶ ὄρυξαν ἑαυτοῖς λάκκους συντετριμμένους οἱ οὐ δυνήσονται υδώρ συσχείν, δέον ὁμολογεῖν Θεὸν τὸν Πατέρα, Θεὸν τὸν Υἱόν, Θεὸν τὸ Πνεῦμα τὸ ἁγιον, ὡς οἱ θείοι λόγοι καὶ οἱ τούτους υψηλότερον νευμακότες ἐδίδαξαν.

1 φυλιστιαῖος F.

1 The Arian formula is ἡ ποτὲ ὅτε οὐκ ἦν, “There was a time when he was not.”
for men by such means—but because we consider the society of holy men most helpful. For by speaking now and then about the doctrine of God, and more frequently by listening, we are acquiring a habit of reflection that will not easily be lost again. Such is our present situation.

But do you, O dear ones divine and best beloved of all, beware of the shepherds of the Philistines, lest they secretly obstruct your wells and pollute the purity of the knowledge of faith. For their aim is ever this, not to instruct the more stainless souls through the teachings of the divine Scriptures, but through extraneous wisdom to thrust the truth to one side. For he who introduces "unbegotten" and "begotten" into our faith, and declares that He who always was, at one time was not,¹ and that He who naturally and always was Father became Father, and that the Holy Spirit is not eternal, is he not an out-and-out Philistine? Does he not strive to bewitch the sheep of our patriarch, that they may not drink of the water which is pure and which leaps into everlasting life,² but that they may draw down upon themselves the words of the prophet,³ who says: "They have forsaken me, the fountain of living water, and have dug to themselves cisterns, broken cisterns, that can hold no water"? Yet they ought to confess that the Father is God, that the Son is God, and that the Holy Ghost is God, as the divine words and those who have had the highest conception of them have taught us.

¹ "But the water that I will give him shall become in him a fountain of water, springing up into life everlasting." John 4, 14.
² Jer. 2, 13.
Πρὸς δὲ τοὺς ἐπηρεάζοντας ἡμῶν τὸ τρίθεον, ἐκείνο λεγέσθω, ὅτι περ ἡμεῖς ἦνα Θεόν, οὐ τῷ ἀριθμῷ, ἀλλὰ τῇ φύσει ὁμολογοῦμεν. πάν γὰρ ὁ ἐν ἀριθμῷ λέγεται, τούτο οὐχ ἐν ὄντως οὐδ’ ἀπλοῦν τῇ φύσει ἐστὶν· ὁ δὲ Θεὸς ἀπλοῦς καὶ ἀσύνθετος παρὰ πᾶσιν ὁμολογεῖται· οὐκ ἀρα εἰς ἀριθμῷ ἐστὶν ὁ Θεὸς. ὁ δὲ λέγω τοιοῦτον ἐστὶν. ἐν ἀριθμῷ τὸν κόσμον εἶναι φαμεν, ἀλλ’ ὁ οὐχ ἐνα τῇ φύσει, ἀλλ’ οὐδ’ ἀπλοῦν τινὰ τούτων· τέμπω- μεν γὰρ αὐτὸν εἰς τὰ ἐξ ὄνων συνεστηκε στοιχεῖα, εἰς πῦρ καὶ ὕδωρ καὶ ἀέρα καὶ γῆν. πάλιν ὁ ἄνθρωπος ἦς ἀριθμῷ ὁνομάζεται· ἐνα γὰρ ἄνθρω- πον πολλάκις λέγομεν. ἀλλ’ οὐχ ἀπλοῦς τις οὕτως ἐστὶν, ἐκ σώματος καὶ φυχῆς συνεστῶς· ὁμοίως δὲ καὶ ἄγγελον ἔνα ἀριθμῷ ἐρωθεὶ, ἀλλ’ οὐχ ἐνα τῇ φύσει οὐδὲ ἀπλοῦν· οὐσίαν γὰρ μεθ’ ἀγνασμοῦ τὴν τοῦ ἄγγελον ὑπόστασιν ἐννοοῦμεν. εἰ τούνν πάν τὸ ἐν ἀριθμῷ ἐν τῇ φύσει οὐκ ἐστὶ, καὶ τὸ ἐν τῇ φύσει καὶ ἀπλοῦν ἐν ἀριθῳ οὐκ ἐστὶν, ἡμεῖς δὲ λέγομεν ἐνα τῇ φύσει Θεόν, πως ἐπεισάγουσιν ἡμῖν τὸν ἁριθμὸν, αὐτὸν πάντη ἡμῶν ἐξοριζοῦτον τὸς μακαρίας ἐκείνης καὶ νοη- τῆς φύσεως· ὁ γὰρ ἁριθμὸς ἐστὶν τοῦ ποσοῦ, τὸ δὲ ποσὸν τῇ σωματικῇ φύσει συνεξευκαίρισε τῆς φύσεως. σωμάτων δὲ δη- μοφιλῶν τὸν Κύριον ἡμῶν εἰναι πεπιστεύκαμεν. διὸ καὶ πᾶς ἁριθμὸς ἐκείνα σημαίνει τὰ ἐνυλον καὶ περιγράπτην ἐχειν λαχοῦντα τὴν φύσιν, ἡ δὲ μονάς καὶ ἐνας τῆς ἀπλῆς καὶ ἀπεριλήπτου οὐσίας ἐστὶ σημαντικῆς. ἡ τούνν ἁριθμῶν η κτίσμα ὁμολογῶν

1 ἀλλ’ om. F.  2 λέγομεν (ο fr. ω) F.  3 μετὰ F.
LETTER VIII

In reply to those who slander us as being Tritheists, let it be said that we confess one God, not in number but in nature. For not everything that is called one in number is one in reality nor simple in its nature; but God is universally admitted to be simple and uncompounded. Yet God is not therefore one in number. What I mean is this. We say that the universe is one in number, but not that it is one in nature, nor yet that it is simple; for we divide it into the elements of which it is composed: fire, water, air, and earth.¹ Again, man is called one in number; for we often speak of one man. But he is not simple, since he is composed of body and soul. Similarly we speak of an angel as one in number, but not as one in nature, nor yet as simple; for we conceive of the person of the angel as being substance along with sanctity. If then not everything which is one in number is one in nature, and what is one in nature and simple is not one in number, and we say that God is one in nature, how do they introduce number into our idea, when we banish it altogether from that blessed and spiritual nature? For number pertains to quantity; now quantity is joined as an attribute to corporeal nature; therefore, number is an attribute of corporeal nature. We believe that our Lord is the maker of bodies. Therefore every number signifies those things which have been given a material and circumscribed nature, whereas 'aloneness' and 'unity' are attributes of a substance that is simple and unlimited. He, then, who confesses the Son

¹ For the elements of the Greek philosophers, cf. Arist. Met. 1, 3.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

tον Τίον τοῦ Θεοῦ η το Πνεῦμα το ἀγιον, λανθάνει ἐνυλον καὶ περιγραπτὴν φύσιν εἰσάγων. περιγραπτὴν δὲ λέγω, οὐ μόνον τὴν περιεχομένην ὑπὸ τοπιον, ἀλλ’ ἣντερ καὶ τῇ προγνώσει ἐμπεριείληφεν ὁ μέλλων αὐτὴν ἀπὸ τοῦ μὴ ὄντος εἰς τὸ εἶναι παράγειν, ἤν καὶ ἐπιστήμην περιλαβέιν δυνατον ἔστi. πάν οὖν ἁγιον, ὁ περιγραπτὴν ἔχει τὴν φύσιν καὶ ἐπίκτητον ἔχει τὴν ἀγιότητα, οὐκ ἀνεπίδεκτον ἔστι κακίας. ὁ δὲ Τίος καὶ το Πνεῦμα το ἁγιον πηγὴ ἔστιν ἁγιασμοῦ, ύφ’ ἣς πάσα ἡ λογικὴ κτίσις κατ’ ἀναλογίαν τῆς ἁρετῆς ἁγιάζεται.

Καίτοι ἡμεῖς κατὰ τον ἀληθῆ λόγον οὕτε ὁμοιον οὕτε ἀνόμοιον λέγομεν τον Τίον τὸ Πατρί. ἐκατερον γὰρ αὐτῶν ἑπίσης ἀδύνατον. ὁμοιον γὰρ καὶ ἀνόμοιον κατὰ τὰς ποιότητας λέγεται; ποιότητος δὲ τὸ θεῖον ἐλεύθερον. ταυτότητα δὲ τῆς φύσεως ὠμολογοῦντες καὶ τὸ ὀμοούσιον ἐκδεχόμεθα καὶ τὸ ὀμοούσιον συνθετον φεύγομεν, τοῦ κατ’ οὐσίαν Θεοῦ καὶ Πατρὸς τον κατ’ οὐσίαν Θεοῦ καὶ Τίον γεγεννηκότος: ἐκ γὰρ τούτου τὸ ὀμοούσιον δείκνυται. ο γὰρ κατ’ οὐσίαν Θεὸς τῷ κατ’ οὐσίαν Θεὸ ὀμοούσιος ἔστιν.

Ἐπεὶ 2 δὲ λέγεται θεὸς καὶ ὁ ἀνθρώπος, ὡς τὸ Ἐγὼ εἶπα, θεοὶ ἐστε, καὶ ὁ δαίμων θεοῦ, ὡς τὸ 1 δ Φ. 2 ἐπείδη Φ.

1 So declared at Seleucia and Ariminum.
2 Cf. the essay “On the Holy Spirit” (περὶ τοῦ ἁγίου πνεύματος), where Basil deals at length with the heretic Aetius’s sophism that things naturally unlike are expressed in unlike terms, and, conversely, that things expressed in unlike terms are naturally unlike.
3 By reason of the simplicity of His nature, God’s attributes and His nature are one and the same. The attributes 54
LETTER VIII

of God or the Holy Spirit as number or creature, unwittingly introduces a material and circumscribed nature. By "circumscribed" I mean not merely the nature which is enclosed by space, but that which has also been comprehended in foreknowledge by Him who is to bring it from a state of non-being into a state of being; and this is a nature that can be comprehended by knowledge. Therefore everything holy, which has a circumscribed nature and whose holiness has been acquired, is not insusceptible of evil. But the Son and the Holy Ghost are the fountains of holiness; and by it every reasoning creature is made holy in proportion to its virtue.

And yet we, in accordance with the true doctrine, speak of the Son as neither like nor unlike to the Father. Each of these terms is equally impossible. For the words "like" and "unlike" are used with reference to qualities; but the divine is free from quality. However, in agreeing on identity of nature, we accept likewise the identity of substance, refusing to accept compositeness, since He who in substance was God and Father has begotten Him who in substance was God and Son; for thereby the identity in substance is proved. For He who is in substance God must have identity of substance with Him who in substance is God.

But when even man is called God, as in the saying: "I have said: You are gods," and when the demon is called god, as in the saying: "The of God are not really, but only virtually, distinct from one another and from His nature.

4 "I have said: You are gods, and all of you the sons of the most High." Psal. 81, 6.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

Oī theοί τῶν ἑθνῶν δαιμόνια, ἀλλ' οἱ μὲν κατὰ χάριν ὄνομάζονται, οἱ δὲ κατὰ ψευδός. ο̣ δὲ Θεός μόνος κατ' οὐσίαν ἔστι Θεὸς. μόνος δὲ ὅταν εἴπω, τὴν οὐσίαν τοῦ Θεοῦ τὴν ἁγίαν καὶ ἀκτιστον δῆλον, τὸ γὰρ μόνος λέγεται καὶ ἐπὶ τίνος ἄνθρωπον καὶ ἐπὶ φύσεως ἁπλῶς τῆς καθόλου. ἐπὶ τίνος μὲν, οὖν, φέρε εἰπεῖν, ἐπὶ Παύλου, οτι μόνος ἡρπάγη ἐως τρίτον οὐρανοῦ καὶ ἦκουσεν ἀρρήτα ῥήματα ἀ οὐκ ἔξων ἄνθρωπῳ λαλήσαι: ὑπὸ φύσεως δὲ τῆς καθόλου, ὡς ὅταν λέγῃ Δαβίδ, Ἀνθρωπος, ὅσεὶ χόρτος αἱ ἡμέραι αὐτοῦ. εὐταύθα γὰρ οὐ τὸν τινα ἄνθρωπον, ἀλλὰ τὴν καθόλου φύσιν δήλον. πᾶς γὰρ ἄνθρωπος πρὸσκαιρος καὶ θυτήσεις. οὕτω κακεῖνα γνοὺμεν ἐπὶ τῆς φύσεως εἰρημένα: τὸ ὁ μόνος ἔχων ἡθανασίαν, καὶ, Μόνῳ σοφῷ Θεῷ, καὶ τὸ Ὄνος ἀγαθὸς εἰ μὴ εἰς ὁ Θεὸς (τὸ γὰρ εἰς εὐταύθα τῷ μόνῳ ταύτων δήλοι), καὶ τὸ ὁ ταυτὰς τὸν οὐρανόν μόνος, καὶ πάλιν, Κυρίω τῷ Θεῷ σον προσκυνήσεις καὶ αὐτῷ μόνῳ λατρεύσεις, καὶ τὸ Ὄνος ἔστι Θεὸς πλὴν ἐμοῦ. τὸ γὰρ εἰς καὶ μόνος ἐπὶ Θεοῦ εἰς τῇ Γραφῇ οὐ πρὸς ἀντιδιαστολὴν τοῦ Θεοῦ ἢ τοῦ ἁγίου Πνεύματος λέγεται, ἀλλὰ πρὸς τοὺς μὴ ὄντας θεοῦς, ὀνο-

1 “For all the gods of the Gentiles are devils: but the Lord made the heavens.” Psal. 95, 5.
2 Cf. 2 Cor. 12, 4: ὅτι ἡρπάγη εἰς τὸν παράδεισον, καὶ ἦκουσεν ἀρρήτα ῥήματα ἀ οὐκ ἔξων ἄνθρωπῳ λαλήσαι. “That he was caught up into paradise, and heard secret words, which it is not granted to man to utter.” The first part of Basil’s quotation differs markedly from our version of the N.T. He adds μόνος, and substitutes ἐως τρίτον οὐρανοῦ for εἰς τὸν παράδεισον.
3 i.e., by metonymy.

56
LETTER VIII

gods of the Gentiles are devils," 1 yet the former are so termed in compliment and the latter falsely. But God alone is God in substance. And when I say "alone," I must make it clear that the substance of God is holy and uncreated; for the attribute "alone" is sometimes applied to a particular man, at other times to the nature which all men share. It is applied to a particular man, when, let us say for example, it is said of Paul "that he alone was caught up into the third heaven, and heard secret words which it is not granted to man to utter." 2 It is applied, however, to human nature, 3 as when David 4 says, "Man, his days are as grass"; for here it refers, not to any particular man, but to the nature which is shared by all men. Indeed, every man is ephemeral and mortal. In like manner, we understand the following words to have been referred to the Divine Nature, "Who alone hath immortality," 5 and, "To the alone wise God," 6 and, "None is good, except one, God" 7 (for here the word "one" means the same as the word "alone"), and, "Who alone spreadeth out the heavens," 8 and again, "Thou shalt adore the Lord, thy God, and Him alone shalt thou serve," 9 and, "There is no other God besides Me." 10 In fact, "one" and "alone" are applied to God in the Scriptures, not to distinguish Him from the Son or from the Holy Ghost, but to contrast Him with those who are not gods, but are falsely so

1 "He remembereth that we are dust: man's days are as grass; as the flower of the field, so shall he flourish." Psal. 102, 15.
2 1 Tim. 6, 16. 3 Rom. 16, 27. 4 Luke 18, 19.
5 Job 9, 13. 6 Deut. 6, 1. 7 Deut. 32, 39.
maçoméνοις δὲ ψευδῶς· ὥς τὸ Κύριος μόνος ἦγεν αὐτούς, καὶ οὐκ ἦν μετ' αὐτῶν θεὸς ἀλλότριος, καὶ τὸ Περείπλουν νυἱ 'Ἰσραήλ τὰ Βασαλεὶ καὶ τὰ ἄλση 'Ασταρώθ καὶ ἑδούλευον Κυρίῳ μόνῳ, καὶ πάλιν ὁ Παύλος, Ὡσπερ εἰς θεοὶ πολλοὶ καὶ κύριοι πολλοὶ, ἀλλ' ἡμῖν εἰς Θεός, ὁ Πατήρ, ἐξ οὗ τὰ πάντα, καὶ εἰς Κύριος, 'Ἰησοῦς Χριστὸς, δι' οὗ τὰ πάντα.

Ἀλλὰ ἐπούμεν ἐνταῦθα πῶς Ἐλς Θεὸς εἰρηκὼς οὐκ ἢρκέσθη τῇ φωνῇ (ἐφαμεν γὰρ ὅτι μόνος καὶ τὸ εἰς, ἐπὶ Θεοῦ, τὴν φύσιν δηλοί), ἀλλὰ καὶ τὸ Πατήρ προσέθηκε καὶ τοῦ Χριστοῦ ἐμνημόνευσεν. ὑπονοοῦ τοίνυν ὅτι οὐκ ἐξαρκεῖν φῶς ήν οὗ Παύλος, τὸ σκεῦος τῆς ἐκλογῆς, κηρύσσειν μόνον Θεοῦ τὸν Τιὸν καὶ Θεοῦ τὸ Πνεῦμα τὸ ἀγιον, ὁπερ διὰ τῆς Ἐλς Θεὸς ἐδήλωσε ῥήσεως, ἐὰν μὴ καὶ διὰ τῆς προσθήκης τοῦ Πατρὸς τοῦ εἰς οὗ τὰ πάντα δηλώση, καὶ διὰ τῆς μνήμης τοῦ Κυρίου τῶν Λόγου τοῦ δι' οὗ τὰ πάντα σημάνη καὶ πάλιν, διὰ τῆς Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ συμπαραλήψεως, τῷ ἐνανθρώπων πνειν παραγγείλης καὶ τῷ πάθος παραστήσει καὶ τῇ ἀνάστασιν φανερώσῃ. τὸ γὰρ Ἰησοὺς Χριστὸς τὰς τοιαύτας ἑννοίας ἡμῖν ἐμφαίνει. διὸ καὶ πρὸ τοῦ πάθους παρατείνας ὁ Κύριος, Ἰησοῦς Χριστὸς καταγγέλλεσθαι, καὶ διαστέλλεται τοῖς

1 τοῦ om. F. 2 ἀπαγγείλη F.

1 Deut. 32, 12. 2 1 Kings 7, 4.
3 Cf. 1 Cor. 8, 5–6: Ὡσπερ εἰς θεοὶ πολλοὶ, καὶ κύριοι πολλοὶ: ἀλλ' ἡμῖν εἰς θεὸς ὁ πατήρ, ἐξ οὗ τὰ πάντα, καὶ ἡμεῖς εἰς αὐτῶν καὶ εἰς Κύριος, Ἰησοῦς Χριστὸς δι' οὗ τὰ πάντα, καὶ ἡμεῖς δι' αὐτοῦ. "For there be gods many, and lords many: yet to us there is but one God, the Father,
called; for example, "The Lord alone was their leader: and there was no strange god with them"; ¹ and, "Then the children of Israel put away Baalim and the groves of Astaroth, and served the Lord alone"; ² and again the words of Paul ³: "Just as there be gods many, and lords many, yet to us there is but one God, the Father, of whom are all things, and one Lord, Jesus Christ, by whom are all things." ⁴

But here we may ask why, after having said "one God," Paul was not content with the saying (for we have said that "only" and "one," when applied to God, indicate the nature), but went on and added "Father" and mentioned Christ. Well, then, I suspect that Paul, the vessel of election, did not consider it enough in this passage to proclaim only God the Son and God the Holy Spirit, the thought which he has made manifest through the expression "one God," without at the same time, by the addition of "the Father," making manifest Him from whom all things are, and, by making mention of "the Lord," indicating the Word by whom are all things; and again, by including "Jesus Christ," proclaiming the Incarnation, setting forth the passion, and making manifest the resurrection. For the words "Jesus Christ" bring before our minds all these ideas. For this reason too, before His passion, the Lord asked not to be proclaimed as Jesus Christ; and "He commanded of whom are all things, and we unto him; and one Lord Jesus Christ, by whom are all things, and we by him." Note Basil's accurate quotation, with apparently purposeful omission of irrelevant material.

¹ In this passage Basil has been defending his contention that 'one' cannot be predicated of God.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

μαθηταίς, ἵνα μηδενὶ εἰπὼσιν, ὅτι αὐτὸς ἔστιν Ἰησοῦς ὁ Χριστὸς. πρόκειται γὰρ αὐτῷ τέλειωσαντὶ τὴν οἰκονομίαν, μετὰ τὴν ἐκ νεκρῶν ἀνάστασιν καὶ τὴν εἰς οὐρανοὺς ἀνάληψιν, ἐπιτρέψαι αὐτοῖς κηρύσσειν αὐτὸν Ἰησοῦν τὸν Χριστὸν. τοιούτων ἔστι καὶ τὸ Ἰνα γινώσκωσί σε τὸν μόνον ἀληθινὸν Θεόν, καὶ ὄν ἀπέστειλας Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν, καὶ τὸ Πιστεύετε εἰς Ἱνα αὐτὸς ἕμε ἀπεστεύετε: πανταχοῦ τὴν ἐννοιαν ἡμῶν ἀσφαλιζομένου τοῦ Πνεύματος τοῦ ἁγίου, ἵνα μὴ θατέρω προσβαίνοντες θατέρου ἑκπίπτωμεν, καὶ τῇ θεολογίᾳ προσέχοντες τῆς οἰκονομίας καταφρονῶμεν, καὶ γέννηται ἡμῖν κατὰ τὸ ἐλλειπον ἡ ἁσέβεια.

Τὰ δὲ ρήματα τῆς θείας Γραφῆς, ἀπερ λαμβάνοντες οἱ ἀντικείμενοι καὶ διαστρέφοντες πρὸς τὴν οἰκείαν συνείδησιν εἰς καθαρέσιν τῆς δόξης τοῦ Μονογενοῦς ἡμῖν προφέρουσιν, οὕτως ἐξετάσωμεν, κατὰ τὸ δυνατὸν ἡμῖν ἀναπτύσσοντες αὐτῶν τὴν διάνοιαν. καὶ πρῶτον ἡμῖν προτιθέσθω 2 τὸ Ἑγώ ζἶω διὰ τὸν Πατέρα· τοῦτο γὰρ ἐστὶν ἐν τῶν βελῶν τῶν εἰς οὐρανὸν πεμπομένων ὑπὸ τῶν ἁσβεῶν αὐτῶ κεχρημένων ἢν τὰ ἁληθὲς ὑπὸ τῆς προαίων, ὡς οἴμαι, ζῳς ἡ ἀνομαίζει
tὸν ἀπὸ Ἁθιῆς Ἰ. 2 προτιθεῖσθω Φ.

1 Matt. 16, 20. 2 John 17, 3. 3 John 14, 1. 4 οἰκονομία, “the divine dispensation,” relates to the Incarnation and consequent redemption of mankind, as distinguished from θεολογία, “theology,” which is concerned with all that relates to the divine and eternal nature of Christ.
His disciples, that they should tell no one that He was Jesus the Christ.”¹ For it was His intention, only after He had finished His mission, after the resurrection from the dead, and the assumption into heaven, to permit them to proclaim Him Jesus the Christ. Such is the meaning of the words: “That they may know Thee, the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom Thou has sent,”² and of these: “You believe in God; believe also in me.”³ Thus the Holy Spirit everywhere safeguards our understanding, lest in approaching the one idea we fall away from another; lest by attending to theology we think too little of the divine dispensation;⁴ and lest through our deficiency impiety be engendered within us.

The words of the divine Scriptures which our opponents seize, twist to suit their own peculiar persuasion, and offer to us for the destruction of the glory of the Only-begotten, let us now examine, unfolding their meaning to the best of our ability. And first let us consider the statement, “I live by the Father;”⁵ for this is one of the missiles hurled against heaven by those who have made impious use of it. These words, in my opinion, do not refer to his life in eternity⁶ (for everything

⁵ John 6, 58: ‘by the Father.’ “The preposition (Vulg. propter patrem) describes the ground or object, not the instrument or agent (by, through, διὰ τοῦ πατρός). Complete devotion to the Father is the essence of the life of the Son, and so complete devotion to the Son is the life of the believer. It seems better to give this full sense to the word than to take it as equivalent to ‘by reason of’: that is, ‘I live because the Father lives’” (Westcott. St. John, ad loc.).

⁶ i.e. before the creation of the world.
(πᾶν γὰρ τὸ δὲ ἔτερον ζῆν αὐτοζωὴν εἶναι οὕνευται, ὡς οὐδὲ τὸ ὅφε ἔτερον θερμανθὲν αὐτοθερμάτης εἶναι, ὁ δὲ Χριστὸς καὶ Θεὸς ἢμῶν εἵρηκεν, Ἑγὼ εἰμὶ ή ζωή), ἀλλὰ ζωὴν ταύτην τὴν ἐν σαρκὶ καὶ ἐν τῷ χρόνῳ τούτῳ γεγεννημένην, ἢν ἔζησε διὰ τὸν Πατέρα. Βουλὴσει γὰρ αὐτοῦ ἐπιδεδήμηκε τῷ βίῳ τῶν ἀνθρώπων καὶ οὐκ εἰπεν, Ἑγὼ ἔζησα διὰ τὸν Πατέρα, ἀλλ', Ἑγὼ ζῶ διὰ τὸν Πατέρα, σαφῶς τὸν παρόντα προσημαινών χρόνων. δύναται δὲ καὶ ζωήν λέγειν ἢν ζη ο Χριστὸς, τὸν λόγον τοῦ Θεοῦ ἔχων ἐν ἑαυτῷ. καὶ ὅτι τούτῳ ἐστὶ τὸ δηλοῦμενον, ἐκ τοῦ ἐπιφερομένου εἰσόμεθα. Καὶ ὁ τρόγων με, φησὶ, ζήσεται δὲ ἐμὲ πρόγομεν γὰρ αὐτοῦ τὴν σάρκα καὶ πίνομεν αὐτοῦ τὸ αἷμα, κοινωνοὶ γινόμενοι, διὰ τῆς ἐνανθρωπήσεως καὶ τῆς αἰσθητῆς ζωῆς, τοῦ Λόγου καὶ τῆς σοφίας. σάρκα γὰρ καὶ αἷμα πᾶσαν αὐτοῦ τὴν μυστικὴν ἐπιδημίαν ὄντως, καὶ τὴν ἐκ πρακτικῆς καὶ φυσικῆς καὶ θεολογικῆς συνεστῶσαν διδασκαλιῶν ἐδήλωσε, δὲ τρέφεται ψυχῇ καὶ πρὸς τὴν τῶν ὄντων τέως θεωρίαν παρασκευάζεται. καὶ ποτὸ ἐστί τὸ ἐκ τοῦ ρήτου ἱσως δηλοῦμενον.

Καὶ πάλιν, Ὁ Πατὴρ μου μείζων μον ἐστὶ κέχρηται γὰρ καὶ τούτῳ τῷ ρήτῳ τὰ ἀχάριστα κτισμάτα, τὰ τοῦ ποιηροῦ γεννημάτα. Ἑγὼ δὲ καὶ

1 αὐτοζωὴν F. 2 Κύριος F. 3 καὶ Θεὸς om. F. 4 προσημαινών F. 5 τε add. F.

1 Cf. John 11, 25: "'Εγὼ εἰμὶ ἡ ἀνάστασις καὶ ἡ ζωή.' "'I am the resurrection and the life.'"
which has life by or through something else cannot be self-existent, just as that which is heated by something else cannot be self-heating; and our Christ and God has said: “I am the life”\(^1\), but to that life which He has had in the flesh and in time here upon earth, which He lived by or through the Father. For it was of His own will that He came to sojourn among men as one of them; and He did not say, “I have lived by the Father,” but “I live by the Father,” referring clearly to the present time. And He can use the word “life” of the life which the Christ is living, since He has the word of God within Himself. And that this is what He means we shall perceive from the following: “And he that eateth Me,” He says,\(^2\) “the same also shall live by Me”; for we eat of His flesh, and drink of His blood, becoming partakers of His Word and Wisdom through His Incarnation and visible life. For by “flesh and blood” He referred to His entire mystic sojourn, and revealed the doctrine, composed of the real,\(^3\) the natural, and the theological, whereby the soul is nourished and prepared betimes for its ultimate contemplation of realities. This is what He probably means by those words.

Consider, again, this saying: “The Father is greater than I”;\(^4\) for those thankless creatures, the offspring of the Evil One, have made use even of this expression. I am convinced, however, that

\(^1\) Cf. John 1:4.

\(^2\) \(\pi\rho\alpha\kappa\tau\iota\kappa\iota\osigma\) probably means “real” as opposed to “speculative” or “logical.” Basil uses \(\pi\rho\alpha\gamma\mu\alpha\) frequently for “reality.”

\(^3\) John 14, 28.
ἐκ ταύτης τῆς φωνῆς τὸ ὁμοούσιον εἶναι τὸν Τιόν τῷ Πατρὶ δηλοῦσθαι πεπίστευκα. τὰς γὰρ συγκρίσεις οἶδα κυρίως ἐπὶ τὸν τῆς αὐτῆς φύσεως γινομένας. ἄγγελον γὰρ ἄγγελον λέγομεν μεῖζον, καὶ ἀνθρώπων ἄνθρωπον δικαιότερον, καὶ πτηνῶν πτηνοῦ ταχύτερον. εἰ τούπαν αἱ συγκρίσεις ἐπὶ τῶν ὁμοειδῶν γίνονται, μεῖζον δὲ κατὰ σύγκρισιν εἰρηται ὁ Πατὴρ τοῦ Τιόν, ὁμοούσιος τῷ Πατρὶ ὁ Τιός. ἐστι δὲ ταῖς καὶ ἀλλή ἐννοια ἐναποκειμένη τῷ ῥητῷ. τὰ γὰρ θαυμαστῶν εἰ μεῖζον ἐαυτοῦ τὸν Πατέρα ὀμολογήσε, Δόγος ὡν καὶ σὰρξ θεογνώσις, ὅποταν καὶ ἄγγελων ὑφῆς κατὰ τὴν δόξαν ἐλάττων καὶ ἀνθρώπων κατὰ τὸ εἴδος; ἩΛάπτωσας γὰρ αὐτὸν, φησί, βραχῦ τι παρ᾽ ἄγγέλους καὶ πάλιν, Τὸν δὲ βραχῦ τι παρ᾽ ἄγγέλους ἡλαπτωμένον, καὶ τὸ Εἴδομεν αὐτὸν, καὶ οὐκ εἰχεν εἴδος οὐδὲ κάλλος, ἀλλὰ τὸ εἴδος αὐτοῦ ἐκλείπου παρὰ πάντας τούς ὁ ἀνθρώπων. τούτων δὲ πάντων ἡμέσχετο διὰ τὴν πολλὴν αὐτοῦ περὶ τὸ πλάσμα φιλανθρωπίαν, ἵνα τὸ ἀπολογλῶς πρόβατον ἀνασώσηται καὶ τὸ σωθὲν καταμίξη καὶ τὸν κατελθόντα ἀπὸ Ἱερουσαλήμ εἰς Ἱεριχώ, καὶ διὰ τοῦτο περισπούντα λησταῖς, εἰς τὴν οἰκείαν ὑγιαίνοντα πάλιν ἐπαναγαίνῃ πατρίδα.

Ἡ καὶ τὴν φάτνην αὐτῷ ὑνείδισει ἀἱρετικὸς, δι᾽ ἑς ἄλογος ὡν ἑτράφη ὕπο τοῦ Δόγου; καὶ τὴν πενίαν προοίμεθα, ὅτι κλινιδίον οὐκ ἡπόρησεν ὁ

1 toûs om. F. 2 ὁ add. F.

1 Cf. John 1, 14. καὶ ὁ λόγος σὰρξ ἐγένετο, καὶ ἐσκήνωσεν ἐν ἡμῖν, ... πλήρης χάριτος καὶ ἀληθείας. “And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, ... full of grace and truth.”

64
LETTER VIII

in these words too we have a clear demonstration of the consubstantiality of the Son with the Father. For I know that comparisons must strictly apply to things of the same nature. Thus we speak of an angel as greater than an angel, and of a man as juster than a man, and of a bird as swifter than a bird. If, then, comparisons arise only among objects of the same species, and by comparison the Father has been called greater than the Son, then the Son is consubstantial with the Father. But there is another idea which is contained in this expression. What wonder is it that He confessed the Father greater than Himself, He who is the Word and was made flesh, since He was seen to be inferior both to the angels in glory and to men in form? For it is said: “Thou hast made him a little less than the angels”; and again: “Who was made a little lower than the angels”; and: “We have seen Him, and He hath neither form nor comeliness . . . , and His form was deficient before all men.” All these things He endured on account of His exceeding love for the work of His creation, that He might rescue the lost sheep, and restore it to the flock after He had saved it; and that He might bring back again in good health to his own country the man who “went down from Jerusalem to Jericho, and so fell among robbers.”

What, will the heretic reproach Him even for the manger, wherein, being as yet speechless, He was nurtured by the Word? Or will he cast up to Him His poverty, because He, the son of the carpenter,

COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

tou 1 τεκτονος νιός; διὰ τούτῳ Πατρὸς ἐλάττων ὁ Τίός, ὅτι διὰ σὲ γέγονε νεκρός, ἵνα σε τῆς νεκρότητος ἀπαλλάξῃ καὶ ξωῆς μέτοχον ἐπουρανίου ποιήσῃ; ὥσπερ ἄν, εἰ τις καὶ τὸν ιατρὸν αὐτίδοτο, ὅτι συγκύπτων ἐπὶ τὰ πάθη τῆς δυσωδίας συναπολαύη, ἵνα τοὺς πεπονθότας ἱάσηται.

Διὰ σὲ καὶ τὴν ὤραν καὶ τὴν ἡμέραν τῆς κρίσεως ἁγνοεῖ· καίτοι οὐδὲν λανθάνει τὴν ὄντως σοφίαν, Πάντα γὰρ δι’ αὐτῆς ἐγένετο, οὐδείς δὲ 2 ἀνθρώπων πῶποτε ο πεποίηκεν ἁγνοεῖ. ἀλλὰ τούτῳ οἰκονομεῖ διὰ τὴν σὴν ἀσθένειαν, ἵνα μήτε τῷ στενῷ τῆς προσθεσμίας οἱ ἁμαρτήσαντες τῇ ᾠδομίᾳ καταπέσωσιν, ὡς ὦχ ὑπολειμμένου καιροῦ μετανοιάς, μηδ’ αὐ πάλιν οἱ πολεμοῦντες μακρὰν τῇ ἀντικειμένη δυνάμει διὰ τὸ μῆκος τοῦ χρόνου λειποτακτήσωσιν. ἐκατέρους τοίς τοίνυν διὰ τῆς προσποιητῆς ἁγνοίας οἰκονομεῖ· τῷ μὲν διὰ τὸν καλὸν ἁγώνα συντέμνων τὸν χρόνον, τῷ δὲ διὰ τὰς ἁμαρτίας καιροῦ μετανοιάς ταμευόμενος, καίτοι ἐν τοῖς Εὐαγγελίοις έαυτοῦ συγκαταριθμήσας τοῖς ἁγνοοῦσι διὰ τὴν τῶν πολλῶν, ὡς ἐφὴν, ἀσθένειαν· ἐν ταῖς Πράξεσι τῶν ἀποστόλων, ὡς τελείοις κατ’ ἰδίαν διαλεγόμενος, καθ’ ὑπεξαίρεσιν

1 τοῦ om. F. 2 οὐδὲ F.
LETTER VIII

was not provided with a cradle? For this reason is the Son less than the Father—because He became mortal and died for your sake, that He might free you from mortality and make you a sharer in heavenly life? It is just as if one should censure the physician for bending over the bed of sickness and breathing in the foul odours that he may heal the sick!

It is for your sake that He knows not either the hour or the day of judgment; and yet nothing escapes the true wisdom; for all things were made by it,¹ and no one in the world is ever ignorant of that which it has made.² But thus He makes provision because of your weakness, that, on the one hand, sinners may not be plunged into despair by the scantiness of the term allotted to them, believing that no opportunity is left them for repentance, and again, on the other hand, that those who are waging a long war against the opposing power may not, because of the length of their time, desert their ranks. For each of these two classes, therefore, He makes provision by His assumed ignorance; for the one He cuts down the time in consideration of the good fight they are making, for the other, because of their sins, He dispenses opportunity of repentance. And yet in the Gospels He numbered Himself among the ignorant because, as I have said, of the weakness of the many; and in the Acts of the Apostles, as if discoursing separately to the perfect, of God is manifest in them; for God hath showed it unto them.

"For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even His eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse."
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

εαυτοῦ φησίν, Οὐχ ὑμῶν ἔστι γνῶναι χρόνους ἢ καιροὺς οὐς ὁ Πατὴρ ἔθετο ἐν τῇ ἱδίᾳ ἐξουσίᾳ.

Καὶ ταῦτα μὲν κατὰ τὴν προτέραν ἐπιβολὴν εἰρήσθω παχύτερον. Ἡδὴ δὲ ἐξεταστέον ύψηλότερον τὴν διάνοιαν τοῦ ρήτοι καὶ κρουστέον τὴν θύραν τῆς γνώσεως, εἰ πως δυνηθείην ἐξεγείραι τὸν οἰκοδεσπότην, τὸν τοὺς πνευματικοὺς ἄρτους διδόντα τοῖς αἰτοῦσιν αὐτὸν, ἐπειδή φίλοι καὶ ἀδελφοὶ εἰσίν οὖς ἐστιάσαι σπουδάζομεν.

Ὡς ἄγιοι μαθηταὶ τοῦ Σωτῆρος ἦμῶν ἐπέκεινα θεωρίας, ὡς ἐνὶ ἀνθρώποις, ἐλθόντες καὶ καθαρθέντες ἀπὸ τοῦ λόγου, τὸ τέλος ἐπιζητοῦσι καὶ τὴν ἐσχάτην μακαριότητα γνῶναι ποθοῦσιν, ὅπερ ἄγνωσιν καὶ τοὺς ἀγγέλους αὐτοῦ καὶ αὐτὸν ὁ Κύριος ἦμῶν ἀπεφήματο· ἡμέραν μὲν λέγων πᾶσαν τὴν ἀκριβῆ κατάληψιν τῶν ἐπινοίων τοῦ Θεοῦ, ὦραν δὲ τὴν ἐνάδος καὶ μονάδος θεωρίαν, ὅπος τὴν εἰδόσιν μόνῳ προσένευμε τῷ Πατρὶ. ὑπονοῶ τοίνυν ὅτι ἐκεῖνο λέγεται περὶ ἐαυτοῦ εἰδέναι ὁ Θεὸς ὁπερ ἔστι, κάκεινο μὴ εἰδέναι, ὅπερ οὐκ ἔστι. δικαιοσύνην μὲν γὰρ καὶ σοφίαν λέγεται εἰδέναι ὁ Θεὸς, αὐτοδικαιοσύνη καὶ σοφία ὑπάρχων, ἄδικιαν δὲ καὶ πονηρίαν ἄγνοεῖν οὐ γὰρ ἔστιν ἄδικία καὶ πονηρία ὁ κτίσας ἥμᾶς Θεός. εἰ τοίνυν ἐκεῖνο λέγεται περὶ ἐαυτοῦ εἰδέναι ὁ Θεὸς ὁπερ ἔστι, κάκεινο μὴ εἰδέναι ὅπερ οὐκ ἔστιν (οὐκ ἔστι δὲ ὁ Κύριος ἦμῶν κατὰ τὴν τῆς ἑνανθρωπήσεως ἐπὶ-68
LETTER VIII

He says, evidently to the exclusion of Himself: "It is not for you to know the times or moments which the Father hath put in his own power."

Let so much suffice in a rough way for the fulfilment of our first purpose. I must now examine more deeply into the meaning of the expression, and must knock at the gate of knowledge, if in any way I may be able to awaken the Master of the house, who gives spiritual bread to those who ask for it, inasmuch as those whom we desire to entertain are friends and brothers.

Our Saviour's holy disciples, having been brought to the highest degree of speculative knowledge attainable by man, and made clean by the Word, now enquire about the end, and long to know the ultimate felicity, of which our Lord declared that both His angels and He were ignorant; for by "day" He meant the accurate comprehension in its entirety of the purposes of God, by "hour" the contemplation of oneness andaloneness, the knowledge of which He assigned to the Father alone. Therefore I presume that God is said to know about Himself that which is, and not to know that which is not. For God is said to know justice and wisdom, being Himself justice and wisdom, but to be ignorant of unrighteousness and wickedness; for the God who made us cannot be injustice and ignorance. If, therefore, God is said to know about Himself that which is, and not to know that which is not; and if our Lord, according to the design of the incarnation

1 Acts 1, 7.
2 Cf. John 15, 3. "Hδη ύμεῖς καθαροὶ ἐστε, διὰ τὸν λόγον ὃν λελάθηκα υμῖν. "Now you are clean by reason of the word, which I have spoken to you."
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

νοιαν καὶ παχυτέραν διδασκαλίαν τῷ ἐσχατον ὅρεκτον), οὐκ ἄρα οἶδεν ὁ Σωτήρ ἡμῶν τὸ τέλος καὶ τὴν ἐσχατὴν μακαρίωτητα. ἀλλ' οὐδὲ οἱ ἄγγελοι, φησίν, ἵσασι· τουτέστιν, οὐδὲ ἦν αὐτοῖς θεωρία καὶ οἱ λόγοι τῶν διακονιῶν εἰσὶ τὸ ἐσχατον ὅρεκτον. παχεῖα γὰρ καὶ τούτων ἡ γνώσις συγκρίσει τοῦ πρόσωπον πρὸς πρόσωπον.

Μόνος δὲ ὁ Πατήρ, φησίν, ἐπισταται, ἐπεὶ 1 καὶ αὐτὸς ἐστὶ τὸ τέλος καὶ ἡ ἐσχάτη μακαρίωτης. οταν γὰρ μηκέτι Θεὸν ἐν τοῖς κατοπτροῖς μηδὲ διὰ τῶν ἀλλοτρίων ἐπιγνώσκομεν, ἀλλ' αὐτῶ ὡς μόνῳ καὶ εἰς προσέλθωμεν, τότε καὶ τὸ ἐσχατον τέλος εἰσόμεθα. Χριστοῦ γὰρ βασιλείαν 2 φασίν εἶναι πᾶσαν τὴν ἐνυλον γνώσιν τοῦ δε Θεοῦ καὶ Πατρὸς τὴν αὐλον, καὶ ως ἄν εἰποι τις, αὐτῆς τῆς θεότητος θεωρίαν. ἐστὶ δὲ καὶ ὁ Κύριος ἡμῶν καὶ αὐτὸς τὸ τέλος καὶ ἡ ἐσχάτη μακαρίωτης κατὰ τὴν τοῦ λόγου ἐπίνοιαν. τί γὰρ φησίν ἐν τῷ Εὐαγγελίῳ; Κάγω ἀναστήσωι αὐτὸν ἐν τῇ ἐσχάτῃ ήμέρᾳ, ἀνάστασιν λέγων τὴν ἀπὸ τῆς ἐνυλον γνώσεως ἐπὶ τὴν αὐλον θεωρίαν μετάβασιν, ἐσχάτην δὲ ἡμέραν τὴν γνώσιν ταύτην εἰσπών, μεθ' ἦν οὐκ ἐστίν ἐτέρα. τηνικάυτα γὰρ ὁ νοῦς ἡμῶν ἐξαινίσταται καὶ πρὸς ύψος μακάριον

1 ἐπειδὴ Φ.
2 In marg. τί ἐστι χριστοῦ βασιλεία Φ.

1 By παχυτέραν, "denser," Basil seems to mean acquired or empirical knowledge; cf. beginning of second paragraph below. "But since our intellect made dense by its earthly covering," etc. Cf. Is. 6, 10. "Make the heart of this people fat (ἐπαχώνθη), and make their ears heavy, and shut their eyes; lest they see with their eyes, and hear with their
and empirical knowledge,\(^1\) is not the ultimate end desired; then our Saviour does not know the end, that is, the ultimate felicity. But not even the angels, He says,\(^2\) know; that is, not even the contemplation which is in them nor the principles of their ministries are the ultimate end desired. For even their knowledge, in comparison with the knowledge which is face to face, is dim and obscure.\(^3\)

Only the Father, He says, knows; and this is because He Himself is the end, that is, the ultimate felicity. For when we no longer know God in a mirror or through any alien medium, but approach Him as "alone" and "one," then we shall know also the ultimate end. For they say that Christ's kingdom is all our material knowledge, but God's and the Father's the immaterial, that is, as one might say, the contemplation of divinity itself. But our Lord Himself is also the end, that is, the ultimate felicity, according to the design of the Word. For what does He\(^4\) say in the Gospel? "And I will raise him up in the last day"; meaning by "raising up" the transition from material knowledge to immaterial contemplation, and signifying by "last day" that knowledge beyond which no other knowledge exists. For only then is our mind arisen, and awakened to sublime felicity, when it

ears, and understand with their heart, and convert, and be healed." Cf. also Matt. 13, 15; Acts 28, 27.

\(^2\) Cf. Mark 13, 32. Περι δὲ τῆς ἡμέρας ἑκείνης καὶ τῆς ὄρας οὐδές οἶδεν, οὐδὲ οἱ ἄγγελοι οἱ ἐν οὐρανῷ, οὐδὲ ὁ υἱὸς, εἰ μὴ ὁ πατὴρ. "But of that day or hour no man knoweth, neither the angels in heaven, nor the Son, but the Father."

\(^3\) Cf. edition of Garnier-Marain, ad. loc.

\(^4\) John 6, 40.
In a similar way Basil speaks in Letter VI of "the beauties of the earth" (τὰ περὶ γῆν κάλλη); and in his commentary on Isaias, the Church is spoken of as "adorned with ornaments which become it" (Ιρέτουσιν εὐαίτη κοσμίοις κεκοσμημένη). Cf. also Gregory of Nazianzus, Letter CVII.

2 John 14, 28.
3 Matt. 20, 23.

4 Cf. 1 Cor. 15, 24. Εἶτα τὸ τέλος, ὅταν παραδίδῃ τὴν βασιλείαν τῷ Θεῷ καὶ πατρί, ὅταν καταργήσῃ πᾶσαν ἀρχὴν καὶ πᾶσαν ἐξουσίαν καὶ δύναμιν. "Afterwards the end, when he shall have delivered up the kingdom to God and the Father, when he shall have brought to nought all principality, and power, and virtue."
shall contemplate the "Oneness" and the "Aloneness" of the Word.

But since our intellect, made dense by its earthy covering, is imprisoned and mixed with the clay, so that it cannot gaze steadfastly upon pure contemplation, strictly guided as it is by the adornments that are akin to its own body, it strives to comprehend the activities of the Maker, judging these in the meantime from their effects, to the end that in this way, gradually growing in strength, it may one day acquire the power to approach the unveiled divinity itself. It is, I think, in accordance with this conception that the words were spoken: "The Father is greater than I," and "It is not Mine to give, but to them for whom it is prepared by My Father." For this is also what is meant by Christ’s delivering up the kingdom to God and the Father, since Christ is the first fruits and not the end, according, as I have said, to the empirical knowledge, that which speculates with reference to us and not with reference to the Son Himself. And that this is so is made clear by His answer to the disciples in the Acts of the Apostles when they asked for the second time: "When wilt Thou restore again the kingdom to Israel?" and He replied, "It is not for

5 Cf. 1 Cor. 15, 20. Νυνὶ δὲ Χριστὸς ἐγήγερται ἐκ νεκρῶν, ἀπαρχὴ τῶν κεκοιμημένων ἐγένετο. "But now is Christ risen from the dead, and become the first fruits of them that slept." Cf. also 1 Cor. 15, 23.

6 Cf. Acts 1, 6. Οἱ μὲν οὖν συνελθόντες ἐπηράτων αὐτῶν λέγοντες, Κύριε, εἰ ἐν τῷ χρόνῳ τούτῳ ἀποκαθιστάνεις τὴν βασιλείαν τῷ Ἰσραήλ. "They therefore who were come together, asked Him, saying: Lord, wilt Thou at this time restore again the kingdom to Israel?"

7 Acts 1, 7.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

γνώναι χρόνους ἢ καιροὺς οὕς ὁ Πατὴρ ἔθετο ἐν τῇ ἱδίᾳ ἔξουσίᾳ, τουτέστιν, οὐ τῶν συνεδεμένων σαρκὶ καὶ αἴματι τῆς τοιαύτης βασιλείας ἢ γνώσις.

Ταύτην γὰρ τὴν θεωρίαν ὁ Πατὴρ ἐναπέθετο τῇ ἱδίᾳ ἐξουσία: ἔξουσίαν λέγων τοὺς ἐξουσιαζο-μένους, ἰδίαν¹ δὲ, οὕς ² μὴ κατέχει ³ ἁγνοια τῶν κατωτέρω πραγμάτων. χρόνους δὲ καὶ καιροὺς μὴ μοι νόει αἰσθητοὺς, ἀλλὰ διαστήματά τινα γνώσεως ὑπὸ τοῦ νοητοῦ ἡλίου γινόμενα. δὲ γὰρ τὴν προσευχὴν ἐκείνην ἐπὶ πέρας ἀχθῆναι τοῦ Δεσπότου ἡμῶν. Ἡσυχός γὰρ ἐστίν ὁ προσευχό-μενος, Δὸς αὐτοῖς, ἵνα καὶ αὐτοὶ ἐν ἡμῖν ἐν ὅσι, καθὼς ἐγὼ καὶ σὺ ἐν ἐσμεν, Πάτερ. εἰς γὰρ ὅν ὁ Θεός, ἐν ἐκάστῳ γινόμενος, ἐνοὶ τοὺς πάντας· καὶ ἀπόλλυται ὁ ἀριθμὸς τῆς τῆς μονάδος ἐπιδημία.

Καὶ γὼ μὲν οὕτως ἐπέβαλον τῷ ῥήτῳ κατὰ τὴν δευτέραν ἐπιχείρησιν. εἰ δὲ τις βελτίων λέγοι ἢ διορθοὶ ἐυσεβῶς τὰ ἡμέτερα, καὶ λεγέτω καὶ διορθοῦσθω, καὶ ὁ Κύριος ἀνταποδώσει ὑπὲρ ἡμῶν. οὔδεις γὰρ παρ’ ἡμῖν αὐλίζεται φθόνος, ὅτι μηδὲ φιλονεικίας ἐνεκεν ἡ κενοδοξίας ἐπὶ τὴν ἐξέτασιν τῶν ῥημάτων κεχωρίκαμεν,

¹ idían Capps; idíous MSS. and edd. ² ὅν F. ³ μετέχει F.

¹ I.e. the days and hours of inner experience marked by a time-keeper within us.

74
LETTER VIII

you to know the times or the moments, which the Father hath put in His own power;” that is to say, the knowledge of such a kingdom does not belong to those who are imprisoned by flesh and blood.

This contemplation the Father has placed in His own power: by “power” He means those who are empowered, by “His own,” those who are not held down by their ignorance of things below. By “times and moments” pray do not understand those of sense, but certain distinctions of knowledge caused by the sun perceptible to the mind. For that prayer of our Master’s must needs be fulfilled; since it is Jesus who prayed: “Grant unto them that they also may be one in us, even as I and Thou, Father, are one.”

That is, God being one, and being in each, unifies all; and number is destroyed by the indwelling of the unity.

Such is my second attempt to deal with the text. If anyone can interpret it better, or amend our words in a spirit of reverence, let him both interpret and amend, and the Lord will reward him on our behalf. For no envy abides in our heart, because we were not led through rivalry or vanity to enter upon this investigation of the passages, but for the

2 Cf. John 17, 20-22. Ὁ νεπι τούτων δὲ ἐρωτῶ μόνον, ἀλλὰ καὶ νεπι τῶν πιστευόντων διὰ τοῦ λόγου αὐτῶν εἰς ἑαυτὸν πάντως ἐν ὧσι καθὼς σύ, πάτερ, ἐν ἐμοί, κἀγὼ ἐν σοί, ἵνα καὶ αὐτὸς ἐν ἑαυτῷ ἐν ὧσιν. ἵνα ὁ κόσμος πιστεύῃ διότι σύ με ἀπέστειλας. καὶ ἐγὼ τὴν δόξαν ἦν δέδωκάς μοι, δέδωκα αὐτοῖς, ἵνα ὧσιν ἐν, καθὼς ἥμεισ ἐν ἐσμεν. “And not for them only do I pray, but for them also who through their word shall believe in Me;

“That they all may be one, as Thou, Father, in Me, and I in Thee; that they also may be one in us; that the world may believe that Thou hast sent Me.

“And the glory which Thou hast given Me, I have given to them; that they may be one, as we also are one.”
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

ἀλλ' ὠφελείας ἐνεκεν τῶν ἀδελφῶν, ύπὲρ τοῦ μὴ δοκεῖν παρακρούσθαι τὰ ὀστράκινα σκεύη, τὰ τῶν θησαυρὸν ἔχοντα τοῦ Θεοῦ, ὑπὸ τῶν λιθο-καρδίων καὶ ἀπεριτμήτων ἀνθρώπων, τῶν ἐκ τῆς μωρᾶς ὁπλισμένων σοφιᾶς.

Πάλιν διὰ τοῦ σοφοῦ Σολομῶντος ἐν Παρομ-μίαις κέκτησται, ¹ Κύριος γὰρ, φησίν, ἐκτίσε με. καὶ ἀρχὴ ὀδῶν εὐαγγελικῶν ὀνομάζεται, ἀγονοῦν ἡμᾶς πρὸς τὴν βασιλείαν τῶν οὐρανῶν, οὐ κατ' οὐσίαν κτίσεις, ἀλλὰ κατὰ τὴν οἰκονομίαν ὁδὸς γεγονός. τὸ γὰρ γεγονέναι καὶ τὸ ἐκτίσθαι ταύτ-τὸν δηλοῖ. ως γὰρ ὁδὸς γέγονε, καὶ θύρα, καὶ ποιμήν, καὶ ἀγγελός, καὶ πρόβατον, καὶ πάλιν ἀρχιερεύς καὶ ἀπόστολος, ἀλλων κατ' ἀλλήν ἐπίνοιαι τῶν ὄνομάτων κειμένων.

Τῇ ἀν εἰποί πάλιν ὁ αἰρετικὸς περὶ τοῦ ἀνυπο-τάκτου Θεοῦ καὶ τοῦ δι' ἡμᾶς ἀμαρτίαν ἢμενον; γέγραπται γὰρ, ὡς ὁ ποταγῆς αὐτῷ τὰ πάντα, τοτε καὶ αὐτοῖς ὁ Τίνος ὑποταγήσεται τῷ ὑποτάξαντι αὐτῷ τὰ πάντα. οὐ φοβοί, ἀνθρωπε, τὸν Θεὸν ἀνυπότακτον ὄνομαζόμενον; τὴν γὰρ σὴν ὑποταγήν ἱδιὰν ποιεῖται, καὶ ἐν τῷ ἀντι-τείνειν σε πρὸς τὴν ἁρετήν, ἀνυπότακτον ἀεαύτον ὄνομαζε. οὖτω ποτὲ καὶ ἀεαυτὸν ἐφη εἰναι τὸν

¹ κτίσεται F. ² ἀμαρτίας F. ³ διὰ σὲ add. F.

¹ Cf. 2 Cor. 4, 6-7. Ὅτι ὁ Θεὸς ὁ εἰπὼν ἐκ σκότους φῶς λάμψαι, ὡς ἔλαυσεν ἐν ταῖς καρδίαις ἡμῶν, πρὸς φωτισμὸν τῆς γνώσεως τῆς ἐδέχθη τοῦ Θεοῦ ἐν προσώπῳ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ.
² Ἐξομεν δὲ τῶν θησαυρῶν τότῃν ἐν ὀστρακίνοις σκέυεσιν, ἣν ἦν ὑπερβολὴ τῆς δυνάμεως ἥ τοῦ Θεοῦ, καὶ μὴ ἐξ ἡμῶν.
³ For God, who commanded the light to shine out of darkness, hath shined in our hearts, to give the light of the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Jesus Christ.
LETTER VIII

benefit of our brothers, lest the earthen vessels\(^1\) which contain the treasure of God should seem to be deceived by those stony-hearted and uncircumcised men, who have armed themselves with their foolish wisdom.

Again, according to the words of the wise Solomon\(^2\) in the Proverbs, He was created; "For," he says, "the Lord created me." And He is called, "the beginning of the evangelical ways"—the ways which lead us to the kingdom of heaven; being not a creature in substance, but having become a "way" according to the "divine dispensation." For "becoming" and "being created" have the same signification. For just as He became a way, so too He became a gate, a shepherd, an angel, a sheep, and again a high priest and an apostle;\(^3\) different names being applied for different notions.

Again, what would the heretic say about the "unsubjected" God and Him who was made sin\(^4\) for us? For it is written: "And when all things shall be subdued unto Him, then the Son also Himself shall be subject unto Him that put all things under Him."\(^5\) Are you not afraid, sir, of the God who is called "unsubjected"? For He makes your subjection His own, and, because you struggle against virtue, He calls Himself "unsubjected." In this sense too He once spoke of Himself as "Him who was perse-

"But we have this treasure in earthen vessels, that the excellency of the power may be of God, and not of us."

\(^1\) Prov. 8, 22. 
\(^2\) Heb. 3, 1.
\(^3\) Cf. 2 Cor. 5, 21. Τὸν γὰρ μὴ γνώντα ἀμαρτίαν, ὑπὲρ ἡμῶν ἀμαρτίαν ἐποίησεν, ἵνα ἡμεῖς γινώμεθα δικαιοσύνη Θεοῦ ἐν αὐτῷ. "Him, who knew no sin, He hath made sin for us, that we might be made the justice of God in Him."

\(^4\) 1 Cor. 15, 28.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

διωκόμενον, Σαύλε γὰρ, φησὶ, Σαύλε, τί με διώκεις; ἡνίκα ἐπὶ Δαμασκὸν ἔτρεχε, τοὺς μαθητὰς τοῦ Χριστοῦ συνδήσαι βουλόμενος. καὶ πάλιν ἑαυτὸν γυμνὸν ὄνομάζει, εἶνός τινος τῶν ἀδελφῶν γυμνητεύοντος, Γυμνὸς γὰρ, φησίν, ἡμῖν, καὶ περιεβάλετε με. καὶ, ἄλλον ἐν φυλακῇ οὐντος, ἑαυτὸν ἔφη εἶναι τὸν καθεργομένον. αὐτὸς γὰρ τὰς ἁσθενίας 1 ἡμῶν ἥρε καὶ τὰς νόσους ἐβάστασε. μιὰ δὲ τῶν ἁσθενεῖσιν ἐστὶ καὶ ἡ ἀνυποταξία, καὶ ταύτην ἐβάστασε. διὸ καὶ τὰ συμβαίνοντα ἡμῖν περιστατικὰ ἱδιοποιεῖται ὁ Κύριος, ἐκ τῆς πρὸς ἡμᾶς κοινωνίας τὰ ἡμέτερα πάθη ἀναδεχόμενος.

'Αλλὰ καὶ τὸ Οὐ δύναται ὁ Τίὸς ποιεῖν ἀφ’ ἑαυτοῦ οὐδέν, λαμβάνονσιν οἱ θεομάχοι ἐπὶ καταστροφὴ τῶν ἀκοουόντων. ἐμοὶ δὲ καὶ τοῦτο τὸ ρητὸν μάλιστα καταγγέλλει τῆς αὐτῆς φύσεως εἶναι τὸν Τίὸν τῷ Πατρί. εἰ γὰρ ἔκαστον τῶν λογικῶν κτισμάτων δύναται τι ποιεῖν ἀφ’ ἑαυτοῦ, αὐτεξούσιον 2 ἔχον τὴν ἐπὶ τὸ χείρον τε καὶ κρείττον ροπή, ὃ δὲ Τίὸς οὐ δύναται τι ποιεῖν ἀφ’ ἑαυτοῦ, οὐ κτίσμα αὐτὸς. εἰ δὲ μὴ κτίσμα, ὀμοούσιος τῷ Πατρί. καὶ πάλιν, οὐδὲν τῶν κτισμάτων τὰ ὁσα βούλεται δύναται. Ὁ δὲ Τίὸς ἐν τῷ οὐρανῷ καὶ ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς πάντα ὁσα ἡθέλησεν ἐποίησεν. οὐκ ἄρα κτίσμα αὐτὸς. καὶ

1 ἁσθενίας F, ἁμαρτίας editi.
2 καὶ Ἐση add. F.

1 Acts 9, 4.
2 Matt. 25, 36.
3 Cf. Is. 53, 4. Οὕτως τὰς ἁμαρτίας ἡμῶν φέρει καὶ περὶ ἡμῶν ὁδυνάται, καὶ ἡμεῖς ἐλογισάμεθα αὐτῶν εἶναι, ἐν πόνῳ καὶ ἐν πληγῇ καὶ ἐν κακώσει. “Surely He hath borne our griefs, and
LETTER VIII

cuted” ; for He says,¹ "Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou Me?" when Saul was rushing to Damascus, wishing to imprison the disciples of Christ. And again He calls Himself "naked," when someone of His brethren is naked; for He says,² "I was naked, and you covered Me." And when another was in prison, He said that He Himself was the one who was confined. For He Himself took up our infirmities and bore our sickness.³ Now one of our infirmities is lack of subjection, and this He bore. Therefore it is that whatever adversities befall us, these the Lord makes His own, through His fellowship with us assuming our sufferings.

God’s enemies use also the following quotation ⁴ for the overthrow of those who listen to them: "The Son cannot do anything of Himself." But to me this statement likewise proclaims in a special manner that the Son is of the same nature as the Father. For if every creature endowed with reason can do anything by itself, having the inclination to the better and worse entirely within its own power, and the Son can do nothing by Himself, then the Son is no creature. And if He is no creature, He is consubstantial with the Father. Again, no creature can do all that it wishes. But the Son in heaven and on earth did everything that He desired. Therefore the Son is not a creature. Again, all creatures carried our sorrows; yet we did esteem Him stricken, smitten of God, and afflicted.⁵

Matt. 8, 17. "Ὅπως πληρωθή το ῥήθην διὰ Ἡσαίου τοῦ προφήτου, λέγοντος, Αὐτὸς τὰς ἀσθενείας ἡμῶν ἔλαβε, καὶ τὰς νόσους ἐβάστασεν. "That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying, Himself took our infirmities, and bore our sickness."

⁴ John 5, 19.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

πάλιν, πάντα τὰ κτίσματα ἢ ἐκ τῶν ἐναντίων συνέστηκεν ἢ τῶν ἐναντίων ἐστὶ δεκτικά. οὗ δὲ Τίος αὐτοδικαιοσύνη καὶ ἀυλὸς ἐστίν. οὔκ ἄρα κτίσμα ὁ Τίος. εἰ δὲ μὴ τούτο, ὀμοσύσιος τῷ Πατρὶ.

Καὶ αὐτῇ μὲν αὐτάρκης ἕμιν ἢ ἐξέτασις κατὰ τὴν δύναμιν τὴν ἡμετέραν τῶν τεθέντων ῥητῶν. ἦδη δὲ λοιπὸν καὶ πρὸς τοὺς ἀντιπροτούτας τῷ Πνεύματι τῷ ἀγίῳ τῷ λόγῳ χαρῆσωμεν, καθαρι- ροῦντες αὐτῶν πάν ύψωμα διάνοιας ἑπαρίσουσαν κατὰ τὴν γνώσεως τοῦ Θεοῦ. κτίσμα λέγεις τὸ Πνεύμα τὸ ἁγιον. πᾶν δὲ κτίσμα δοῦλον ἐστὶ τοῦ κτίσαντος. Τὰ γὰρ σύμπαντα, φησι, δούλα σά. εἰ δὲ δοῦλον ἐστὶ, καὶ ἐπίκτητον ἔχει τὴν ἀγιότητα. πᾶν δὲ ὁ ἐπίκτητον ἔχει τὴν ἀγιότητα οὔκ ἀνεπίδεκτον ἐστὶ κακίας. τὸ δὲ Πνεύμα τὸ ἁγιόν, κατ' οὐσίαν ὁ ἁγιον, πηγὴ ἁγιασμοῦ προσηγόρευται. οὔκ ἄρα κτίσμα τὸ Πνεύμα τὸ ἁγιον. εἰ δὲ μὴ κτίσμα, ὀμοσύσιον ἐστὶ τῷ Θεῷ. πῶς δὲ δοῦλον ἀποκαλεῖς, εἰπέ μοι, τὸν ὅλον τοῦ βαπτίσματος ἑλευθεροῦντα σε τῇ δουλείᾳ; Ὁ γὰρ νόμος, φησί, τοῦ Πνεύματος τῆς ζωῆς ἡλευ- θέρωσε μὲ ἀπὸ τοῦ νόμου τῆς ἀμαρτίας. ἀλλ' οὔδε τρεπτὴν αὐτῶν τοτὲ τὴν οὕσιαν τολμήσεις εἰπεῖν, ἀφορὸν εἰς τὴν φύσιν τῆς ἀντικειμένης δυνάμεως, ἢτις ὡς ἀστραπῇ πέπτωκεν ἀπὸ τοῦ

1 ἐστι om. F. 2 προσαγορεύεται F. 3 ἐστι om. F.

1 Basil doubtless has in mind the famous passage of St. Paul, Rom. 7, 15-25.
2 2 Cor. 10, 5.
are either constituted of antagonistic inclinations or are susceptible of them. But the Son is Righteousness itself and immaterial. Therefore the Son is not a creature. And if He is not a creature, He is consubstantial with the Father.

This examination of the passages cited, having been made to the best of our ability, will suffice for our purpose. We will now advance our argument against those who oppose the Holy Spirit, endeavouring to lay low all that haughtiness of spirit of theirs which “exalteth itself against the knowledge of God.” You assert that the Holy Spirit is a creature. But every creature is the slave of its creator; “for all things serve thee,” He says. And if He is a slave, the holiness which He possesses is an acquired attribute; and everything which possesses holiness as an acquired attribute is not susceptible of evil. But the Holy Spirit, being holy by His very substance, has been called “the fount of sanctification.” Therefore the Holy Spirit is not a creature. And if He is not a creature, He is consubstantial with God. But how, tell me, can you call him a slave who frees you from slavery through baptism? “For,” he says, “the law of the spirit of life hath delivered me from the law of sin.” But neither will you ever dare to call His substance changeable, if you will consider the nature of the opposing power, which like a flash of lightning fell

3 Psal. 119, 91.  
4 Cf. Rom. 1, 4. πνεῦμα ἁγιωσύνης, “spirit of sanctification.”  
5 Cf. Rom. 8, 2. “For the law of the spirit of life, in Christ Jesus, hath delivered me from the law of sin and of death.”
Ὁ ὀὐρανοῦ, καὶ ἔξεπεσε τῆς ὄντως ἕξως διὰ τὸ ἐπὶ-
κτητον ἔσχηκέναι τὴν ἁγιότητα καὶ ἐπηκολουθη-
κέναι τῇ κακῇ βουλῇ τὴν ἄλλοιςιν. τοὐγαροῦν
καὶ ἐκπέσων τῆς μονάδος καὶ τὸ ἄγγελικὸν ἀπορ-
ρίζας ἀξίωμα, ἀπὸ τοῦ τρόπου ὀνομασθῇ διά-
βολος, ἀποσβεσθείσης μὲν αὐτοῦ τῆς προτέρας
καὶ μακαρίας ἔξεως, τῆς δὲ ἀντικειμένης ταύτης
δυνάμεως ἀναφθείσης.

Ἐπειτα εἰ κτίσμα λέγει 1 τὸ Πνεῦμα τὸ ἄγιον,
πεπερατωμένη τὴν φύσιν αὐτοῦ εἰσάγει. πῶς
οὖν σταθήσεται τὸ Πνεῦμα Κυρίου πεπλήρωκε
τὴν οἰκουμένην, καὶ τὸ Ποῦ πορευθῶ ἀπὸ τοῦ
Πνεύματος σου; ἀλλ’ οὐδ’ ἀπλοῦν αὐτὸ τῇ
φύσει, ὡς οὐκεν, ὡμολογεί. ἀριθμῷ γὰρ ἐν αὐτῷ
ὄνομάζει. παῦ δὲ ἐν ἀριθμῷ, τούτῳ οὐχ ἄπλοιν,
ὡς ἔφην, ἑστὶν. εἰ δὲ μὴ ἄπλοιν ἑστὶ τὸ Πνεῦμα
τὸ ἄγιον, ἡς οὐσίας καὶ ἁγιασμοῦ συνεστηκε· τὸ
δὲ τοιοῦτον σύνθετον. καὶ τὰς οὐτοὺς ἄνοιχτος ὡς
σύνθετον εἰπεῖν τὸ Πνεῦμα τὸ ἄγιον, καὶ μὴ
ἄπλοιν καὶ κατὰ τὸν τῆς ἀπλωτητὸς λόγου
ὄμολούσιον Πατρὶ καὶ Τίῳ;

Εἰ δὲ δεῖ προσβῆναι 2 τὸ λόγῳ καὶ ἐποπτεῦσαι
tὰ μείζονα, ἐκ τούτου μάλιστα τὴν θείκη δύναμιν
tοῦ ἁγίου Πνεύματος θεωρήσωμεν. τρεῖς κτίσεις
εὐρήκαμεν ὀνομαζομένας ἐν τῇ Γραφῇ μίαν μὲν
καὶ πρώτην, τὴν ἀπὸ τοῦ μὴ ὄντος εἰς τὸ εἶναι

1 λέγοι F. 2 προσβῆναι F.

1 Cf. Luke 10, 18. Εἶπε δὲ αὐτοῖς, 'Ἐθεώρουν τὸν Σατανᾶν
ὦς ἀστραπὴν ἐκ τοῦ ὀυρανοῦ πεσόντα. "And He said unto
them, I beheld Satan as lightning fall from heaven."

2 Cf. Letter CCIV, where the name διάβολος is more
LETTER VIII

from heaven, and fell out of the true life, all because its holiness was an acquired attribute and its change a consequence of its evil desire. Accordingly, after it fell out of the aloneness and cast aside its angelic dignity, from its character it received the name of Devil, its former state of felicity having now been extinguished and this opposing power having been enkindled.

Furthermore, if the heretic asserts that the Holy Spirit is a creature, the nature he ascribes to it is circumscribed. How then can the following statements stand: “The spirit of the Lord hath filled the whole world,” and, “Whither shall I go from thy spirit”? But he goes still farther, as it seems, and will not admit that the Holy Spirit is simple, either. For he calls Him one in number. But, as I have said, not everything which is one in number is necessarily simple. And if the Holy Spirit is not simple, He is made up of substance and of sanctity, and as such is composite. Who is so foolish as to call the Holy Spirit composite and not simple, and yet, according to the very definition of simplicity, consubstantial with the Father and the Son?

Now if we are to go forward with the argument and examine higher subjects, let us next contemplate more particularly the divine power of the Holy Spirit. We find three creations mentioned in the Scriptures; one, and the first, the eduction from immediately connected with διαβάλλειν “to calumniate.” Διάβολος alone is used several times in the Bible in the sense of slanderer, but ὁ διάβολος is applied par excellence to the “Slanderer” as the prince of devils and the author of evil.

3 Wis. 1, 7. 4 Psal. 138, 7.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

παραγωγήν δευτέραν δέ, τὴν ἀπὸ τοῦ χείρονος εἰς τὸ κρείττον ἀλλοίωσιν τρίτην δέ, τὴν ἐξανάστασιν τῶν νεκρῶν. ἐν ταύταις εὐρήσεις συνεργὸν Πατρὶ καὶ Τίῳ τὸ ἁγιὸν Πνεῦμα. οὐρανῶν γὰρ οὐσίωσις. καὶ τί φησιν ὁ Δαβίδ; Τῷ λόγῳ Κυρίου οἱ οὐρανοὶ ἐστηρεωθησάν, καὶ τῷ πνεύματι τοῦ στόματος αὐτοῦ πᾶσα ἡ δύναμις αὐτῶν. πάλιν ἀνθρωπος διὰ βαπτίσματος κτίστηται. Εἶ τις γὰρ ἐν Χριστῷ, καινὴ κτίσις. καὶ τί φησι τοῖς μαθηταῖς ὁ Σωτῆρ; "Ἀπελθόντες μαθητεύσατε πάντα τὰ ἑθη, βαπτίζοντες αὐτοὺς εἰς τὸ ὄνομα τοῦ Πατρὸς καὶ τοῦ Τίου καὶ τοῦ ἁγίου Πνεύματος. ὁρᾶς κανταῦθα συμπαρὸν Πατρὶ καὶ Τίῳ τὸ ἁγιὸν Πνεῦμα. τί δὲ ἂν εἴποις καὶ περὶ τῆς ἀναστάσεως τῶν νεκρῶν, ὅταν ἐκλείψωμεν, καὶ εἰς τὸν χοῦν ἡμῶν ἐπιστρέψωμεν; Γῆ γὰρ ἔσμεν καὶ εἰς τὴν γῆν ἀπελευσόμεθα, καὶ 'Αποστέλει τὸ Πνεῦμα τὸ ἁγιὸν καὶ κτίσει ἡμᾶς, καὶ ἀνακαινίσει τὸ πρόσωπον τῆς γῆς. ἦν γὰρ Παῦλος ὁ ἁγιὸς ἐξανάστασιν εἰρήκε, ταύτῃν Δαβίδ ἀνακαινισμὸν προσηγόρευσε.

'Ακοῦσωμεν δὲ πάλιν τοῦ ἀρπαγέντος ἐως τρίτου οὐρανοῦ. τί φησιν; ὅτι Ναὸς τοῦ ἐν υμῖν ἁγίου Πνεύματος ἐστε. πᾶς δὲ ναὸς Θεοῦ ναὸς.

1 Psal. 32, 6.
2 2 Cor. 5, 17. The English version translates: "If then any be in Christ a new creature," etc.
3 Matt. 28, 19.
non-being into being; second, the change from worse to better; and third, the resurrection of the dead. In all these you will find the Holy Spirit cooperating with Father and Son. Take, for instance, the calling into existence of the heavens. And what does David say: 1 "By the word of the Lord the heavens were established; and all the power of them by the spirit of His mouth." And man is created again through baptism, "for if any be in Christ, he is a new creature." 2 And what does the Saviour 3 say to His disciples? "Going teach ye all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost." Here also you see the Holy Spirit present with the Father and the Son. And again, what would you say about the resurrection of the dead, when we shall have departed and returned to our dust? For, "Dust we are, and unto dust we shall return"; 4 and, "He will send forth the Holy Ghost, and He will create us, and renew the face of the earth." 5 For what Saint Paul called resurrection, David described as renewal.

But let us listen again to him who was snatched up to the third heaven. What does he say? 6 "You are the temple of the Holy Ghost, who is in you." But every temple is a temple of God. And if we

---


2 Cf. Psal. 103, 30. 'Εξαποστελεῖς τὸ πνεῦμά σου καὶ κτισθήσονται, καὶ ἀνακαινιεῖς τὸ πρόσωπον τῆς γῆς. "Thou shalt send forth thy spirit, and they shall be created: and thou shalt renew the face of the earth."

3 Cf. 1 Cor. 6, 19. Τὸ σῶμα ὑμῶν ναὸς τοῦ ἐν ὑμῖν Ἀγίου Πνεύματος ἐστίν. "Your members are the temple of the Holy Ghost, who is in you."
EL COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

ei δὲ ναὸς ἐσμεν τοῦ Πνεύματος τοῦ ἁγίου, Θεὸς τὸ Πνεῦμα τὸ ἁγίου. λέγεται1 δὲ καὶ ναὸς Σολομῶντος, ἀλλὰ ὡς κατασκευάσαντος. ei δὲ οὖν τὸς ἐσμεν ναὸς 2 τοῦ ἁγίου Πνεύματος, Θεὸς τὸ ἁγίον Πνεῦμα, Ὁ γὰρ πάντα κατασκευάσας Θεὸς. ei δὲ ὡς προσκυνούμενον καὶ ἐνοικοῦντος ἐν ἡμῖν, ὀμολογήσωμεν3 αὐτὸ εἶναι Θεόν. Κυρίω γὰρ τῷ Θεῷ σου προσκυνήσεις, καὶ αὐτῷ μόνῳ λατρεύσεις. ei δὲ τὴν Θεὸς φωνὴν παραίτοιντο, μανθανέτωσαν τίνος ἐστὶ σημαντικὸν τὸ ὄνομα τοῦτο. παρὰ γὰρ τὸ τεθεικέναι τὰ πάντα ἡ θεάσθαι τὰ πάντα 4 Θεὸς ὄνομαζεται. ei τούν Θεός εἰρηται παρὰ τὸ τεθεικέναι ἡ θεάσθαι τὰ πάντα, τὸ δὲ Πνεῦμα πάντα γινόμεσκε τὰ τοῦ Θεοῦ, ὡς τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ ἐν ἡμῖν τὰ ἡμέτερα, Θεὸς οὖν5 τὸ Πνεῦμα τὸ ἁγίον.

Καὶ πάλιν, ei η λαβαίρα τοῦ Πνεύματος ῥήμα ἐστὶ Θεοῦ, Θεὸς τὸ Πνεῦμα τὸ ἁγίον, ἐκεῖνον γὰρ ἐστίν η λαβαίρα, οὐ καὶ ῥήμα καλεῖται. καὶ6 ei καὶ δεξιὰ τοῦ Πατρὸς ὄνομαζεται (Δεξιὰ γὰρ Κυρίον ἐποίησε δύναμιν, καὶ Ἡ δεξιὰ σοι, Κύριε, ἐβραύσει ἐχθροὺς), δάκτυλος δὲ Θεοῦ τὸ Πνεῦμα τὸ ἁγίον, κατὰ τὸ ῥητὸν, τὸ Εἰ ἐγὼ ἐν δακτύλῳ Θεοῦ ἐκβάλλω τὰ δαιμόνια· ὅπερ ἐν ἐτέρῳ Ἑυαγγελίῳ γέγραπται, τὸ Εἰ ἐγὼ ἐν

1 λέγει F. 2 ναὸι F. 3 ὀμολογήσωμεν F. 4 τὰ πάντα ὁ om. F. 5 οὖν om. F. 6 καὶ om. F.

1 Heb. 3, 4. 2 Matt. 4, 10. 3 Cf. 1 Cor. 2, 10-11. A false etymology, of course. Θεός is properly connected with θυσία, "I sacrifice." 86
are a temple of the Holy Spirit, the Holy Spirit is God. We also speak of "the temple of Solomon," but as ascribed to him who built it. And if it is in this sense that we are the temple of the Holy Spirit, the Holy Spirit is God; for "He that created all things is God";¹ but if it is in the sense that the temple is of one who is worshipped and dwells within us, then let us confess that He is God. For "the Lord thy God shalt thou adore, and Him only shalt thou serve."² But if they reject the word "God," let them learn of what this word is significant. For He is called "God" (θε-ός) from His having established (τε-θει-κέναι) all things, or His seeing (θε-ἀγθαι) all things.³ If, therefore, He is called "God" from His having established or His seeing all things, and if the Spirit knows all the things of God, just as the spirit within us knows all the things of ourselves, then the Holy Spirit is God.

And again, if "the sword of the Holy Spirit is the word of God,"⁴ the Holy Spirit is God; for the sword is of Him of whom also the word is said to be. And if furthermore He is called the right hand of the Father (for "the right hand of the Lord hath wrought strength,"⁵ and "thy right hand, O Lord, hath slain the enemy"),⁶ and if the Holy Spirit is the finger of God, according to the saying: "If I by the finger of God cast out devils,"⁷ which in another Gospel reads, "If I by the Spirit of God

¹ Cf. Ephes. 6, 17. Καὶ τὴν περικεφαλαίαν τοῦ σώτηριον δέξασθε, καὶ τὴν μάχαιραν τοῦ πνεύματος, ὦ ἐστι βῆμα Θεοῦ. "And take unto you the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit (which is the word of God)."

² Psal. 117, 16. ³ Ex. 15, 6.

COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

Πνεύματι Θεοῦ ἐκβάλλω τὰ δαίμονια, τῆς αὐτῆς φύσεως τῷ ¹ Πατρὶ καὶ Τίῳ τὸ Πνεύμα τὸ ἄγιον.

Καὶ περὶ μὲν τῆς προσκυνητῆς καὶ ἀγίας Τριάδος τοσαῦτα ἦμιν ἐπὶ τοῦ παρόντος εἰρήσθων, οὐ γὰρ νῦν δυνατὸν πλατύτερον ἐξετάσαι τὸν περὶ αὐτῆς λόγον. ὑμεῖς δὲ λαβόντες παρὰ τῆς ἰμετέρας ταπεινώσεως σπέρματα, στάχυν ῥύμον ἑαυτοῖς γεωργῆσατε, ἐπεὶ καὶ τόκους, ὡς ἱστε, τῶν τοιούτων προσαπαίτομεθα. πιστεύω δὲ τῷ Θεῷ ὅτι καρποφόρήσετε καὶ τριάκοντα καὶ ἐξήκοντα καὶ ἑκατὸν διὰ τὴν καθαρότητα τοῦ βίου ὑμῶν. Μακάριοι γὰρ, φησίν, ² οἱ καθαροὶ τῇ καρδίᾳ, ὅτι αὐτοὶ τὸν Θεόν ὑγιοῦνται, καὶ μηδὲ ἄλλο τι, ἄδελφοι, τὴν βασιλείαν τῶν οὐρανῶν νοµίζητε ἢ τὴν τῶν ὄντων ἀληθῆ κατανόησιν, ἢν καὶ μακαριστή γνώµαζουσιν αἱ Θεῖαι Γραφαὶ. Ἡ γὰρ βασιλεία τῶν οὐρανῶν ἐντὸς ὑμῶν ἐστί, περὶ δὲ τὸν ἐντὸς ἄνθρωπον οὐδὲν ἐτερον ³ ἡ θεωρία συνισταται. θεωρία ἂν εἰη λοιπὸν ⁴ ἡ βασιλεία τῶν οὐρανῶν. ὅν γὰρ νῦν τὰς σκίας καθορώμεν, ὡς ἐν κατόπτρῳ, ὕστερον ἀπαλλαγέντες τοῦ γεώδους σώματος τούτου καὶ ἀφθαρτον ἐπενυσάμενοι καὶ ἀθάνατον, τούτων τὰ ἀρχέτυπα κατοψόμεθα. ὁψόμεθα δὲ, εἰ γε τῶν ἐαυτῶν βίου πρὸς τὸ εὐθές κυβερνήμεν καὶ τῆς ὀρθῆς πίστεως ποιοίμεθα πρόνοιαι, ἄν χωρίς οὐδείς ὑψέται τὸν Κύριον. Εἰς γὰρ κακότεχνον ψυχήν, φησίν, οὐκ εἰσελεύσεται σοφία, οὐδὲ κατοικήσει ἐν σώματι καταχρέω ἁμαρτίας. ⁵ καὶ μηδεὶς ὕποκρονέτω λέγων ὅτι τὰ ἐν ποσίν ἀγνοῶν,

¹ τφ om. F. ² φησίν om. F. ³ εστίν (sic) F. ⁴ λοιπὸν om. F. ⁵
LETTER VIII

cast out devils,’”¹ then the Holy Spirit is of the same nature as the Father and Son.

Concerning the adorable and Holy Trinity let so much suffice for the present; for we cannot now extend the discussion further. But do you, taking from our humility the seeds, grow for yourselves the ripe ear, since, as you know, we demand also usury from the same. I trust in God that through the purity of your lives you will gather a harvest both thirty and sixty and a hundredfold. For, “Blessed,” He says,² “are the clean of heart: for they shall see God.” And, brethren, consider not the kingdom of heaven as aught other than the true contemplation of the realities, which the Holy Scriptures call “blessedness”; “for the kingdom of heaven is within you.”³ And concerning the inner man, it consists of nothing but contemplation. Therefore the kingdom of heaven must be contemplation. For the things of which we now see only the shadows, as in a mirror, later, when we have been freed from this earthly body and have put on an indestructible and immortal body, we shall behold their archetypes. We shall behold them, provided that we guide our lives aright, and take forethought for the true faith; for without these things no one shall see the Lord. “For wisdom will not enter into a malicious soul, nor dwell in a body subject to sin.”⁴ Let no one interrupt me and say: “In your ignorance of things

¹ Matt. 12, 28. ² Matt. 5, 8.
³ Cf. Luke 17, 21. ἵδον γὰρ, ἡ βασιλεία τοῦ θεοῦ ἐν τοῖς ὑμῶν ἐστίν. “For lo, the kingdom of God is within you.”
⁴ Wis. 1, 4.

⁵ ἀμαρτίαις F.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

περὶ τῆς ἀσωμάτου καὶ πάντη ἀνύλου οὐσίας ἡμῖν φιλοσοφεῖς. καὶ γὰρ ἄτοπον κρίνω τὰς μὲν αἰσθήσεις εἳν ἀκωλύτως τῶν ἱδίων ἐμπιπλασθαί ὑλῶν, τὸν δὲ νοὺν μόνον εὑρισκεῖ τῆς οἰκείας ἐνεργείας. ὡς γὰρ ἡ αἰσθήσεις τῶν αἰσθητῶν, οὕτως ὁ νοῦς τῶν νοητῶν ἐπίβολος ἐστιν.

"Αμα δὲ καὶ τούτῳ λεκτέον, ὅτι τὰ φυσικὰ κριτήρια ἀδίδακτα πεποίηκεν ὁ κτίσας ἡμᾶς Θεὸς. οὐδεὶς γὰρ διδάσκει τὰς οὕσεις χρωμάτων ἢ σχημάτων ἀντιλαμβάνεσθαι, οὔτε ἀκοὴν ψόφων τε καὶ φωνῶν, οὔτε ὀσφρησιν ἀτμῶν εὐωδῶν τε καὶ δυσωδῶν, οὔτε γεύσιν χυμῶν καὶ χυλῶν, οὔτε ἀφὴν μαλακῶν καὶ σκληρῶν, ἢ θερμῶν καὶ ψυχρῶν. οὔτε τὸν νοῦν ἐπιβάλλειν τοῖς νοητοῖς διδάξοι τις ἄν. καὶ ὡσπερ εἰ τι πάθοιεν αὐτά, ἐπιμελείας μόνον προσδέονται, καὶ τὴν οἰκείαν ἐνέργειαν εὐκόλως ἀποπληροῦσιν οὕτως καὶ ὁ νοῦς, σαρκὶ συνδεθεὶς καὶ τῶν ἐκ ταύτης φαντασιῶν πληρωθεῖς, πίστεως δεῖται καὶ πολιτείας ὀρθῆς, αἵτινες καταρτίζοντι τοὺς πόδας αὐτοῦ ὁσεῖ ἐλάφου καὶ ἐπὶ τὰ ὕψηλα ἱστῶσιν αὐτὸν. τοῦτο τοι αὐτὸ καὶ ὁ σοφὸς παρεγγυὰ Σολομῶν, καὶ ποτὲ μὲν ἡμῖν προφέρει τὸν ἀνεπαίσχυντον ἐργατὴν τὸν μύρμηκα καὶ δι' αὐτοῦ τὴν πρακτικήν ἡμῖν ὀδὸν ὑπογράφει: ποτὲ δὲ τὸ τῆς

1 Cf. Psal. 17, 34. Ὁ καταρτιζόμενος τοὺς πόδας μου ὡς ἐλάφου, καὶ ἐπὶ τὰ ὕψηλα ἱστῶσιν με. "Who hath made my feet like the feet of harts: and who setteth me upon high places."

2 Cf. Prov. 6, 6. Ἡθί πρὸς τὸν μύρμηκα, ὡκυπηρε, καὶ ζήλωσον ἰδίων τὰς ὀδοὺς αὐτοῦ, καὶ γενῶν ἐκεῖνοι σοφῶτερος. "Go to the ant, O sluggard, and consider her ways, and learn wisdom."
LETTER VIII

that are before your feet, you philosophize to us about bodiless and altogether immaterial substance." For I consider it absurd that we should permit our senses to sate themselves without hindrance with their own material food, but that we should exclude the mind alone from its own particular activity. For just as the senses lay hold of things sensible, so the mind lays hold of things mentally perceptible.

But at the same time this also must be said, that the God who created us made the natural sense faculties to be independent of a teacher. For no one teaches sight—how to apprehend colours or shapes—nor hearing—how to apprehend sounds and voices—nor smell—how to apprehend pleasant and unpleasant odours—nor taste—how to apprehend flavours and savours—nor touch—how to apprehend things smooth and rough, or hot and cold. No more could anyone teach the mind how to lay hold upon things mentally perceptible. And just as the senses, if they take on an ailment, need care only, and then readily fulfil their own peculiar activities, so too the mind, being imprisoned in the flesh and filled with the phantasies therefrom, needs only faith and right conduct, and these "make its feet like the feet of harts and set it upon high places." ¹

Indeed this same advice is given by the wise Solomon, when on one occasion ² he sets the ant before us as an example of the unashamed worker, and thereby outlines the path which is practical for us; and on another ³ refers us to the "wise bee's

---

¹ Ecclesiasticus 11, 3. Rufinus says that the Latin Church ascribes this book to Solomon, but that Greeks know it as "the Wisdom of Jesus son of Sirach" (translation of Origen's Homily on Numbers xvii).

³ Ecclesiasticus 11, 3.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

σοφῆς μελίττης κηρόπλαστον ὀργανον, καὶ δι' αὐτῆς ἡ φυσικὴν θεωρίαν αὐτίττεται, ἐν ἢ καὶ ὁ περὶ τῆς ἀγίας Τριάδος ἐγκέκρηται λόγος, εἰπερ ἐκ καλλονῆς κτισμάτων ἀναλόγως ὁ γενεσιουργὸς θεωρεῖται.

'Ἀλλ' εὐχαριστήσαντες Πατρὶ καὶ Τιὸ καὶ ἀγίῳ Πνεύματι, πέρας ἐπιθῶμεν τῷ γράμματι, ἐπειδή πᾶν μέτρον ἁριστον, ὡς ἡ παροιμία φησίν.

IX

Μαξίμω φιλοσόφῳ

Εἰκόνες ὅντως τῶν ψυχῶν εἰσιν οἱ λόγοι. κατεμάθομεν οὖν σε διὰ τοῦ γράμματος, ὅσον φασίν, ἐξ ὑμῖν τῶν λέοντα· καὶ ἥσθημεν εὐρότες περὶ τὰ πρῶτα καὶ μέγιστα τῶν ἄγαθῶν οὐκ ἄργως διακείμενον, τὴν τε πρὸς τοῦ Θεοῦ ἀγάπην καὶ πρὸς τὸν πλησίον. σημεῖον δὲ ποιοῦμεθα τοῦ μέν, τὴν περὶ ἡμᾶς δεξιότητα σου, τοῦ δὲ, τὴν περὶ τὴν γνώσιν σπουδήν. ὅτι δὲ ἐν δυναῖν τούτοιν ἐστὶ τὰ ὀλα, γνώριμον παντὶ Χριστοῦ μαθητῇ.

1 τὴν om. F. 2 ὡς Capps; καὶ MSS. and editi. 3 A, B, C, D, E; μαξίμῳ φιλοσόφῳ περὶ τῶν ποιημάτων διομοσίου F. 4 πρὸς om. F.


92
LETTER IX

wax-moulding implement," 1 and thereby suggests the contemplation of nature, wherein is also blended the doctrine of the Holy Trinity—that is, if from the beauty of created things the nature of the creator is correspondingly inferred.

But giving thanks to the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, let me make an end to this letter, since everything is best in moderation, as the proverb 2 has it.

LETTER IX

To Maximus the Philosopher 3

In truth words are the images of the mind. So we have learned to know you from your letters, as truly as, according to the proverb, from the claw the lion. 4 And we are delighted to find you not slothful in your attitude towards the first and greatest of the virtues—love towards both God and neighbour. We hold as an indication of the latter your tenderness for me; as a proof of the former, your enthusiasm for knowledge. That everything is contained in these two is known to every disciple of Christ.

2 This saying was attributed to Cleobulus, one of the Seven Sages, who lived in Lindus in Rhodes at about 580 B.C.; cf. Diog. Laert. 89–93.

3 Written about A.D. 361.

4 Cf. Lucian, Hermotimus, 34: "They say indeed that one of the sculptors, Pheidias I believe, after looking at a lion's claw, calculated the size of the whole lion when fashioned in proportion to the claw."
A de 'epi'ghei' teis tōn Διονυσίου ἦλθε μὲν εἰς ἡμᾶς, καὶ πάνυ πολλά: οὐ πάρεστι γε μὴν τὰ βιβλία, διότι περὶ οὓς ἀπεστείλαμεν. ἔχομεν δὲ γνώμης οὕτως. οὐ πάντα θαυμάζομεν τοῦ ἀνδρός: ἐστὶ δὲ ᾗ καὶ παντελῶς διαγράφομεν. σχεδὸν γὰρ ταυτησί τῆς νῦν περιθρυλλομένης ¹ ἀσεβείας, τῆς κατὰ τὸ 'Ανόμουν λέγω, οὕτως ἐστιν, ὅσα γε ἡμεῖς ἱσμεν, ὁ πρῶτος ἀνθρώποις ² τὰ σπέρματα παρασχὼν. αὖτιν δὲ, οἶμαι, οὐ πονηρία γνώμης, ἀλλὰ τὸ σφόδρα βούλεσθαι ἀντιτείνειν τῷ Σαβελλίῳ. εἰώθα γοῦν ἀπεικ-άζειν ³ ἐγὼ φυτοκόμῳ, νεαροῦ φυτοῦ διαστροφῆν ἀπευθύνοντι, εἰτα τῇ ἀμετρίᾳ τῆς ἀνθολκῆς διαμαρτύρτοι τοῦ μέσον καὶ πρὸς τὸ ἐναντίον ἀπαγαγόντι τὸ βλάστημα. τοιοῦτον τι καὶ περὶ τῶν ἀνδρᾶ τοῦτων ὅτι ⁴ γεγενιμένον εὑρομεν. ἀντιβαίνων γὰρ σφοδρῶς τῇ ἁσβεία τοῦ Δίβνος, ἔλαβεν ἑαυτὸν εἰς τὸ ἐναντίον κακῶν ὕπο τῆς ἀγαν φιλοτιμιάς ᴿ ὑπευκχείς. ὃ γε τοσοῦτων ἐξαρκοῦν δείξαι, ὅτι οὐ ταύτων τῷ ὑποκειμένῳ Πατήρ καὶ Τίτος, καὶ ταύτη ⁶ ἔχειν κατὰ τοῦ βλασφημοῦντος τὰ νικητῆρα, ὦ δέ, ἵνα πάνω ἐναργώς καὶ ἐκ τοῦ περιόντος κατακρατῇ, οὐχ ἐτερότητα μόνον τῶν ὑποστάσεων τίθεται, ἀλλὰ


¹ Dionysius of Alexandria, after St. Cyprian the most eminent bishop of the third century. He studied under Origen, and succeeded Heracles, Origen's successor, as head of the Alexandrian School.
LETTER IX

The works of Dionysius for which you ask came to us, and numerous indeed they were. The books, however, are not at hand now, so we have not forwarded them. We hold the following opinion about them: we do not admire all the works of the man, and there are some which we even cross out of our lists entirely. For, so far as we know, this person is about the first to have furnished men with the germs of that impiety which is now so noised about, I mean the doctrine of unlikeness. But the reason, I think, is not perversity of mind, but an excessive desire to combat Sabellius. Indeed, I am wont to compare Dionysius with a gardener who, in trying to correct the bent of a young plant, by a miscalculation of the counter-strain, misses the mean, and draws the stem to the opposite side. Some such experience we find has happened to this man. For while violently resisting the irreverence of the Libyan, by his extravagant zeal he has unconsciously been carried over to the opposite evil. Although it was quite enough for him to show that the Father and Son are not the same in substance, and thus to have his triumphs over the blasphemer, yet in order that he might gain the mastery distinctly and with something to spare, he not only establishes a difference in persons

2 Cf. Introd., p. xxiii.
3 The active period of Sabellius was the close of the second and the beginning of the third century. He gave his name to the sect of Sabellianism, the Eastern name for the movement known as Patripassianism in the West.
4 Aristotle, Met. VI. 3. 1, says, "Substance seems most of all to be that which first exists" (μάλιστα δοκεῖ εἶναι οὐσία τὸ ὑποκείμενον πρῶτον). He has reference here to matter simply, in the metaphysical sense.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

καὶ οὐσίας διαφορὰν καὶ δυνάμεως ὑφεσιν καὶ
dόξης παραλλαγὴν. ὡστε ἐκ τούτου συνέβη, κακοῦ 1 μὲν αὐτούν κακὸν διαμεῖψαι, τῆς δὲ ὀρθότητος τοῦ λόγου διαμαρτεῖν. ταύτῃ τοῦ καὶ
παντοδαπὸς ἐστιν ἐν τοῖς συγγράμμασιν, 2 νῦν μὲν ἀναιρῶν τὸ ὁμοούσιον, διὰ τὸν ἑπ’ ἀδετήσει τῶν ὑποστάσεων κακῶς αὐτὸ κεχρημένον, νῦν
dὲ προσιέμενος ἐν οἷς ἀπολογεῖται πρὸς τὸν ὀμόνυμον. πρὸς δὲ τούτους καὶ περὶ τοῦ Πνεύ-
ματος ἀφίκη φωνᾶς ἥκιστα πρεποῦσα 3 τῷ Πνεύματι, τῆς προσκυνουμένης αὐτὸ θεότητος
ἐξορίζων καὶ κάτω ποὺ τῇ κτιστῇ καὶ λειτουργῷ
φύσει συναρμόδιων. ὁ μὲν οὐν 4 ἀνήρ τοιοῦτος.

Ἐγὼ 5 δὲ, εἰ χρῆ τούμον ἰδιον 6 εἰπεῖν, τὸ ὁμοίον
κατ’ οὐσίαν, εἰ μὲν προσκείμενον ἔχει 7 τὸ ἀπαραλ-
λάκτως, δέχομαι τὴν φωνὴν ὡς εἰς ταύτων τῷ
ὁμοούσιῳ φέρουσαν κατὰ τὴν υγίὴν 8 δηλοῦντι τοῦ
ὁμοούσιον διάνοιαν. ὁπερ καὶ τοὺς ἐν Νικαίᾳ
νοῆσαντας, Φῶς ἐκ Φωτὸς καὶ Θεὸν ἀληθινὸν ἐκ
Θεοῦ ἀληθινοῦ καὶ τὰ τοιαῦτα τὸν Μονογενῆ
προσεπόντας, ἐπαγαγεῖν ἀκολούθως τὸ ὁμοούσιον.
οὔτε οὖν φωτὸς πρὸς φῶς, οὔτε ἀληθεῖας πρὸς
ἀληθεῖαν ποτε, οὔτε τῆς τοῦ Μονογενοῦς οὐσίας.

1 κακοῦ . . . κακοῦ E, F.
3 τῷ om. et πνευματικῶς C, D.
5 ἐμὲ.
7 ἔχει A, B, C, D.

1 Dionysius of Rome, a Greek by birth, consecrated July 22, A.D. 259, on the death of Xystus, in the persecution of Valerian. When Dionysius of Alexandria was accused of holding doctrines akin to those of Sabellius, the Roman
(hypostases), but also a difference in substance (ousia), a diminution of power, and a variation of glory. The consequence is that he has exchanged one evil for another, and has fallen short of correctness of doctrine. Furthermore, he is variable in his writings, now discarding the doctrine of identity of substance because of Sabellius, who made evil use of it for the rejection of the doctrine of three Persons, now accepting it in the defence he wrote, addressed to his namesake. Besides, he uttered expressions regarding the Spirit which by no means befit the Spirit, banishing Him from the divinity we worship, and listing Him somewhere below, along with the created and ministering class of things. Such a man is Dionysius.

But if I may speak my own opinion, I accept the phrase "like in substance," provided the qualification "invariably" is added to it, on the ground that it comes to the same thing as "identity of substance," according, be it understood, to the sound conception of the term. It was with precisely this thought in mind that the fathers of Nicaea consistently added "of the same substance" when they addressed the Only-Begotten as "Light from Light," "True God from True God," and so forth. Now no one can possibly conceive of any variation either of light in relation to light, or of truth to truth, or of the

Dionysius wrote to him, and obtained such a satisfactory explanation that he declared him free from suspicion. Cf. Athanasius, Ép. de Sententia Dionysii, 1. 252. However, it is clear, as Basil has just intimated, that Dionysius of Alexandria had been incorrect in thought as well as in words, and did not at first grasp the true doctrine with the necessary distinctness.


COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

πρὸς τὴν τοῦ Πατρὸς ἐπινοήσαι τινα παραλαμάγην δυνατόν. εἰ τις σὺν οὕτως, ὡς εἶπον, ἐκδέχοιτο, προσέμει τὴν φωνήν. εἰ δὲ τις τοῦ ὁμοίου τὸ ἀπαράλλακτον ἀποτέμνει, ὁπερ οἱ κατὰ τὴν Κων-σταντινουπόλιν πεποιήκασιν, ὕποπτεύω τὸ ῥῆμα ὡς τού Μονογενοῦς τὴν δόξαν κατασμίκρυνον. καὶ γὰρ καὶ ἡ ἁμνόραίς ἐμφερείας, καὶ πλεῖστον τῶν ἁρχετυπῶν ἀποδεούσας, τὸ ὁμοίου πολλάκις ἐπινοεῖν εἰώθαμεν. εἶπει οὖν ἢπτον οἶμαι κακο-ουργεῖσθαι τὸ ὁμοούσιον, οὕτω καὶ αὐτὸς τίθεμαι.

Ἀλλὰ τί οὐκ ἐπιφοιτᾶς ἦμιν, διὸ ἁριστε, ὡστε παρόντας ἡμᾶς ἀλλήλους περὶ τῶν τοιούτων διαλεχθῆναι, καὶ μὴ γράμμασιν ἁψύχοις κατα-πιστεύειν τὰ τηλικάτα, ἀλλὰς τε μήτε πάνη δημοσιεύειν τὰ εἰαυτῶν ἐγνωκότας; ὅπως οὖν μὴ τὸ τοῦ Διογένους πρὸς τὸν Ἀλέξανδρον καὶ αὐτὸς ἡμῖν ἐπὶς, ὅτι ἵσων ἐστὶ παρ' ὑμῶν τὸ δεύρο καὶ πρὸς ὑμᾶς ἐνθένδε. ἡμεῖς μὲν γὰρ ὑπὸ τῆς ἀρρώ-στιας, μικρὸν δεῖν, ὥσπερ τὰ φυτὰ ἐπὶ τῆς αὐτῆς χώρας ἀεὶ κατεχόμεθα. καὶ ἀμα τὸ λαθεῖν βιώ-ςαντῶς ἐν τοῖς πρώτοι τῶν ἁγαθῶν ἄγομεν. σὺ δὲ ἐρρωσάτε τε, ὡς φασί, καὶ ἀμα πολίτην σεαυτὸν τῆς οἰκουμένης ποιήσας δίκαιος ἃν εἰης καὶ δεύρο

1 ἀποτέμνει Φ.
2 καὶ om. Α.
3 ἐπιλέγειν Α., Β., Ζ., Δ.
4 οἶμαι Ζ., Δ.
5 τῶν τοιούτων: τοῦτων Α., Β., Ζ., Δ.
6 ἐπὶ Α., Β., Ζ., Δ.

1 At the Acacian Council of Constantinople (360), where fifty bishops accepted the creed of Ariminum as revised at Nica (at or near modern Hafsa, just to the south of Adrianople), proscribing “substance” (οὐσία) and “person” (ὑπόστασις), and declared the Son “like the Father, as say the Holy Scriptures.” Cf. Theod. ii. 16 and Soc. ii. 40.
2 Cf. Theodoret, Ep. lxii, where he speaks of “Live your life in oblivion” (λάθε βιώσας) as a saying of “one of the 98
substance of the Only-Begotten to that of the Father. Accordingly, if anyone will accept the statement with my interpretation of it, I have no objection to make. But if anyone eliminates the invariability of the likeness, as those in Constantinople have done, I become suspicious of the expression, on the ground that it diminishes the glory of the Only-Begotten. For, as you know, we are often accustomed to conceive of "likeness" on the basis of similarities that are sometimes faint and sometimes fall far short of the archetypes. I have therefore myself adopted "likeness of substance," because I think that this term is less open to perversion.

But why do you not visit us, dear friend, that we may discuss such matters in each other's company, and not entrust subjects of such importance to lifeless words, especially since I have definitely decided not to make my own convictions public? I beg of you not to answer me as Diogenes did Alexander, saying, "You are just as near to me as I to you." For, by reason of my infirmities, I am, I may almost say, like a plant, always held to the same place; and at the same time I regard "life in oblivion" as among the highest of blessings. You, on the other hand, are in good health, according to report; and since, at the same time, you have made yourself a citizen of the world, you would be justified in coming to visit us even at this place, a part of your men once called wise," probably referring to Epicurus. For similar expressions, cf. Horace, Ep. i. xvii. 10; Ovid, Tristia, iii. iv. 25; and Euripides, Iph. in Aul. 17. Plutarch has an essay on the question, "Is the saying, 'Live your life in oblivion,' well said?" (εἰ καλῶς εἰρηται τὸ λάθε βιώσας).
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

φοιτάν ὦς εἰς μέρος τῆς σεαυτοῦ. εἰ γὰρ καὶ τοῖς πρακτικοῖς ύμῶν πρέπουσι δῆμοι καὶ πόλεις, αἰσ τὰς κατ' ἄρετὴν πράξεις ἐνεπιδείκνυσθε, ἀλλὰ γε πρὸς θεωρίαν καὶ τὴν κατὰ νοῦν ἐνέργειαν, δι' ἢς συναπτόμεθα τῷ Θεῷ, ἀγαθῇ συνεργῷς ἢ ἰσχυίᾳ ἢν πολλὴν ἐπὶ τῆς ἐσχατίας καὶ ἀφθονον γεωργοῦμεν σὺν αὐτῷ γε εἰπεῖν τῷ παρασχομένῳ ἡμῖν Θεῷ. εἰ δὲ πάντως δεῖ περιέπειν τὰς δυναστείας καὶ περιφρονεῖν τοὺς χαμαί κειμένους ἡμᾶς, σὺ δὲ ἀλλὰ γράφε ἡμῖν, καὶ ταύτῃ ποίει ἡδίως.

Χ

Πρὸς ἐλευθέραν

Τέχνη τίς ἐστι περιστερῶν θηρευτικὴ τοιαύτη. οταν μιᾶς ἐγκρατεῖς γένωνται οἱ τὰ τοιαύτα σπουδάζοντες, χειροθηκὴ τε ταύτην καὶ ὁμόσιτον ἐαυτοῖς ἀπεργασώντων· τότε μέρῳ τὰς πτέρυγας αὐτῆς χρίσαντες ἔωσι συναγγελασθῆναι ταῖς ἑξωθέν. ἡ δὲ τοῦ μύρου ἔκεινον εὐωδία τὴν αὐτόνομον ἔκεινην ἀγέλην κτῆμα ποιεῖται τῷ κεκτημένῳ τὴν τιθασοῦν· πρὸς γὰρ τὰς εὐπνοίας καὶ αἱ λοιπαὶ συνεφέπονται τε καὶ εἰσοικίζονται.

Τί δὲ βουλόμενοι ἑνυπεθεὶν ἀρχομαι τοῦ γράμματος; ὅτι λαβὼν τὸν νῦν Διονύσιον, τὸν ποτε

1 ἐπιδείκνυσθε Α, Β, Φ. 2 ταύτης add. Κ, Δ.
3 ἡμᾶς om. Φ. 4 ἡμῖν om. Ε, Φ.
5 πρὸς ἐλευθέραν προτρεπτικὴ εἰς τῷ μεταβέθαι πρὸς τὸν ἤψηλὸν βίον Φ.

100
own country, as it were. For even though communities and cities, wherein you display your activities in accordance with virtue, suit best your life of activity, yet for contemplation and the exercise of the mind, whereby we are joined to God, solitude is an excellent co-worker; and here, at the edge of the world, we enjoy a solitude abundant and bountiful, by the grace of that God who Himself has granted us the power to speak. If, however, you must by all means court the circles of influence and scorn us who lie upon the ground, at any rate do write to us, and thereby make us happier.

LETTER X

To a Widow ¹

There is a device used in hunting doves, and it is of this kind. When the fowlers capture one dove, they make it so tame that it will eat with them; then they anoint its wings with ointment, and permit it to flock with the doves outside. Now the sweet odour of the ointment brings the wild flock into the possession of the master of the tame bird; for, attracted by the fragrant scent, all the rest enter the cote with the tame one.

But with what purpose do I begin my letter thus? Because after taking your son Dionysius, once called

¹ Written during Basil’s retreat. “Widow” (ἐλευθέραν) is not to be taken as a proper name. A similar use is to be seen in Rom. 7. 3; Greg. Naz., Ep. 147.

6 ποιεῖ E. 7 ἐπομένῳ E. 8 εὐπνοούσας A, B, C, D.
Collected Letters of Saint Basil.

Διομήδης, καὶ τῷ θείῳ μύρῳ τάς τῆς ψυχῆς αὐτοῦ πτέρνυας διαχρίσας, ἐξεπεμψά πρὸς τὴν σὴν σεμνοπρέπειαν, ὡστε καὶ σὲ αὐτὴν συναναπτῆναι αὐτῷ καὶ καταλαβεῖν τὴν καλιὰν ἢν παρ’ ἡμῖν ἐπήξατο ὁ προειρημένος. ἡν οὖν ¹ ταῦτα ἵδοιμι ἐπὶ τῆς ἐμῆς ζωῆς καὶ τὴν σὴν σεμνοπρέπειαν πρὸς τὸν ψηλὸν βίον μεταθεμένην, πολλῶν προσώπων ἄξιων τοῦ Θεοῦ δεηθήσομαι τὴν κεχρεωστημένην τιμὴν ἀποπληρῶσαι αὐτῷ.

XI

Ἀνεπίγραφος, ἐπὶ φιλία ²

Τῇ τοῦ Θεοῦ χάριτι τὴν ἄγιαν ἱμέραν συνδιαγράφοντες τοῖς τέκνοις ἡμῶν καὶ ὅντως τελείαν ἔορτὴν ἔορτάσαντες τῷ Κυρίῳ διὰ τὴν ὑπερβάλλουσαν αὐτῶν περὶ τοῦ Θεοῦ ἁγάπην, προεπέμψαμεν μεθ’ ὑγείας πρὸς τὴν σὴν εὐγένειαν, εὐχόμενοι τῷ φιλανθρώπῳ Θεῷ καὶ αὐτοῖς δοθῆναι εἰρηνικὸν ἄγγελον βοηθὸν καὶ σύμπορον καὶ σὲ παρ’ αὐτῶν καταληφθῆναι ἐν ὑγείᾳ καὶ πάσῃ εἰρηνικῇ καταστάσει, ἵνα, ὅποιον ἐκ τῶν πολλῶν περιοτέρων τῷ Κυρίῳ καὶ εὐχαριστοῦντες αὐτῷ, εὐφραίνητε ³ ἡμᾶς, ἐως ἐσμεν ἐν τῷ κόσμῳ, ἀκούοντας τὰ παρ’ ἡμῶν. ἦν δὲ παράσχην ὁ ἄγιος Θεὸς ⁴ θάττον σε τῶν φροντίδων τούτων ἀπαλλαγῆναι, παρακαλοῦν.

¹ οὖν om. E. ² φιλία C. ³ εὐφραίνηται C. ⁴ Θεὸς om. C, D.

¹ The second name given at baptism. During the first three centuries, largely as a means of personal safety, the
LETTER XI

Diomedes,¹ and anointing the wings of his soul with the divine ointment, I have sent him forth to your ladyship, that you also may fly up with him, and enter the nest which he has built amongst us. Now if I live to see this sight, and to behold your ladyship a convert to our exalted life, I shall need many lives that are worthy in God’s sight, in order fully to repay to Him the honour which is His due.²

LETTER XI

Without Address, for Friendship’s Sake³

After, by God’s grace, we had spent the holy day with our children, and had solemnized a truly perfect feast to the Lord by reason of their abounding love of God, we sent them on in good health to your Highness. Meanwhile we prayed to the loving God both that there be granted to them an angel of peace as a helper and companion of their journey, and that you might be found by them in good health and perfect tranquillity, in order that, wherever you may be, serving the Lord and rendering thanks unto Him, you may make us happy as long as we are in the world, by letting us receive tidings from you. If the holy God soon permits you to be released from your cares, we beg you to con-

Christians assumed names which had no Christian association whatsoever.

² I.e., Basil would have to live his pious life several times over in order to be able to give proper thanks to God.

³ Of the same date as X. Probably written to Olympius, the recipient of Letter XII. Cf. Letter CCXI.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

μέν σε μηδὲν προτιμήσαι τῆς μεθ’ ἡμῶν 1 διαγωγής. οἴμαι γὰρ μὴ εὑρεῖν σε τοὺς οὕτως ἀγαπῶντας καὶ ἀντιποιούμενος τῆς παρ’ ἦμίν φιλίας. ἔως οὖν ἀν οἰκονομή ὁ ἁγιος τῶν χωρίσμον τούτων, διὰ πάσης προφάσεως παραμυθεῖσθαι ἡμᾶς γράμμασι καταξίου.

XII

'Ολυμπίῳ

"Ἐγραφεὶς ἡμῖν πρότερον μὲν ὀλίγα, νῦν δὲ οὐδὲ ὀλίγα: καὶ ἐσικεν ἡ βραχυλογία προϊόσα τῷ χρόνῳ παντελῆς γίνεσθαι ἀφώνια. ἐπάνελθε τοίνυν ἐπὶ τὸ ἔθος, ὡς οὐκ ἔτη σοι μεμψώμεθα λακωνίζοντα πρὸς ἡμᾶς διὰ γραμμάτων ἀλλὰ καὶ τὰ μικρὰ γράμματα, σύμβολα ὑντα τῆς μεγάλης σου διαθέσεως, πολλοῦ ἄξια ποιησόμεθα. μόνον ἐπίστευλε ἡμῖν.

XIII

'Ολυμπίῳ

"Ωσπέρ τῶν ἅλλων ὄρμων ἐκαστον ἐν τῇ οἰκείᾳ ὀρα ἀπαντᾶ, ἐν ἦρι μὲν τὰ ἀνθῆ, ἐν θέρει δὲ οἱ ἀστάχνες, τῷ δὲ μετοπῶρῳ τὸ μῆλον, οὕτω χειμώνος καρπὸς εἰσιν οἱ λόγοι.

1 παρ’ ἡμῖν C, D.

104
LETTER XI

sider nothing more urgent than a sojourn with us. For I am sure that you have found none who so love you or value so highly your friendship. Therefore, so long as the Holy One ordains this separation, deign to console us with a letter on every pretext.

LETTER XII

To Olympius ¹

You used to write us little enough, but now you do not write even that little; and if your brevity keeps increasing with the time, it seems likely to become complete speechlessness. Therefore return to your old custom, for I shall never again find fault with you for practising Laconic brevity on me by letter. Nay, even your little letters, seeing that they are tokens of magnanimity, I shall value highly. Only write to me.

LETTER XIII

To Olympius ²

Just as all things that come with the seasons have each its own proper season for recurring—the flowers in spring, the ears of corn in summer, the apple in autumn—so winter's fruit is conversation.

¹ Of the same date as X. Cf. Letter IV, note 1.
² Closely connected with the preceding letter.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

XIV

Γρηγορίῳ ἐταίρῳ

Ἐγὼ τοῦ ἀδελφοῦ μοι ἐπιστείλαντος Γρηγορίῳ πάλαι βούλεσθαί ἡμῖν συντυχεῖν, προσβέντος δὲ ὁτι καὶ σοὶ αὐτὸ τοῦτο δεδομένον ἔστι, τὸ μέν τι καὶ διὰ τὸ πολλάκις ἀπατηθῆναι ὁ οἴκηρως ἔχων πρὸς τὸ πιστεύειν, τὸ δὲ τι καὶ ὑπὸ ἀσχολίων περιστώμενος, ἐπιμείναι οὐκ ἠδυνηθήν. δεῖ γὰρ με ἢδη ἀπελαύνειν ἐπὶ τὸν Πόντου, ἐν ὧν τάχα ποτε, τοῦ Θεοῦ Βουληθέντος, τῆς πλάνης λῆξομεν. μόλις γὰρ ἀπογνωστος τῶν ματαιῶν ἐλπίδων, ἃς ἐπὶ σοὶ εἰχόν ποτε, μᾶλλον δὲ τῶν ὑμνῶν, εἰ δεὶ ἀληθεύτερον εἶπεῖν (ἐπαινὸ γὰρ τὸν εἰπόντα τὰς ἐλπίδας εἶναι γρηγοροῦντων ἐνύπνια), κατὰ βίον ἐζήτησιν ἐπὶ τὸν Πόντου ἀπῆλθον. ἔνθα δὴ μοι ὁ Θεὸς χωρίων ὑπέδειξεν ἀκρίβως συμβαίνον τῷ ἐμῷ τρόπῳ, ὡστε, οἴον πολλάκις εἰώθαμεν ἀργοῦντες ἀμα καὶ παίζοντες τῇ διανοίᾳ συμπλάττειν, τοσοῦτον ἐπὶ τῆς ἀληθεῖας καθοράν. Ὄρος γὰρ ἐστίν ψυχῆς Βασιλείας ὕλη κεκαλυμμένων, ψυχροῖς ὑδασι καὶ διαφανέσιν εἰς τὸ κατ' ἀρκτον κατάρρυτον. τοῦτον ταῖς υπωρείαις πεδίον ὑπτιον ὑπεστόρεσται, ταῖς ἐκ τοῦ ὄρους νοτίσι διηνεκῶς πιανώμενον. ὕλη δὲ τούτω αὐτομάτως περιφυείσα ποικίλων καὶ παντοδαπῶν δένδρων,
LETTER XIV

LETTER XIV

To Gregory, a friend

Although brother Gregory wrote to me that he had long wished to visit us, and added that you had formed the same purpose, I was, on the one hand, so loth to trust you because you have often deceived me, and, on the other hand, so distracted by business that I could not delay my departure. For I was obliged to leave immediately for the Pontus, where some time soon, God willing, I shall cease my wandering. For after renouncing with difficulty those vain hopes which I had once placed in you—or rather, if I may use a truer word, my dreams (since I commend the man who said that hopes are waking men’s dreams)—I departed for Pontus in search of a place of abode. There indeed God showed me a spot exactly suited to my taste, so that I really beheld just such a place as I have often been wont in idle reverie to fashion in my imagination.

There is a high mountain, covered with a thick forest, watered on its northerly side by cool and transparent streams. At its base is outstretched an evenly sloping plain, ever enriched by the moisture from the mountain. A forest of many-coloured and multifarious trees, a spontaneous growth surrounding


6 συμβαίνοντα C. 7 εἰάθειμεν C. 8 τούτων C.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

μικροῦ δειν ἀντὶ ἔρκους αὐτῷ γίνεται, ὡς μικρὰν εἶναι πρὸς τοῦτο καὶ τὴν Καλυψοῦς νῆσον, ἢν δὴ πασῶν πλέον ὁμηρος εἰς κάλλος θαυμάσας φαίνεται. καὶ γάρ οὐδὲ πολὺ ἀποδεί τοῦ νῆσος εἶναι, ἑνεκά γε τοῦ πανταχόθεν ερύμασι περιεύρεσθαι. φάραγγες μὲν γάρ αὐτῷ βαθείαι κατὰ δύο μέρη περιεβρώγασι, κατὰ πλευράν δὲ ἀπὸ κρημνοῦ ὁ ποταμὸς υπορρέων τεῖχος ἐστὶ καὶ αὐτὸς διηνεκές καὶ δυσέμβατον. ἐκ δὲ τοῦ ἐπὶ θάτερα τεταμένον εἶναι τὸ ὄρος δ’ ἀγκώνων μηνοειδῶν ταῖς φάραγξιν ἐπὶ ψηλακάμενον, τὰ βάσιμα τῆς υπωρείας ἀποτείχίζει. μία δὲ τις εἰσόδους ἐπ’ αὐτῆς, ἢς ἡμεῖς ἐσμέν κυρίοι, τὴν γε μὴν οἴκησιν αὐχένη τις ἔτερος ὑποδέχεται, ὐψηλὸν τινα ἐπὶ τῆς ἀκρας ἀνέχων τένοντα, ὡστε τὸ πεδίον ἐκ τοῦτον ύψηλόσθαι ταῖς ὤψει καὶ ἐκ τοῦ μετεώρου ἐξείναι καὶ τοῦ ποταμοῦ περιρρέωνα καθοράν, οὐκ ἑλάττωνα τέρψιν, ἐμοιγε δοκεῖν, παρεχόμενον ἢ τοῖς ἐκ τῆς Ἀμφιπόλεως τῶν χτισμόνα καταμανθάνουσιν. οἱ μὲν γὰρ σχολαιοτέρω τῷ ρεύματι περιλυμνάζων, μικρὸν δειν καὶ τὸ ποταμὸς εἶναι ὑπὸ τῆς ἡσυχίας ἀφήρηται. οὗ δὲ δεύτερα ὅν ἐγὼ οἶδα ποταμῶν ρέων βραχύ τι τῇ γειτονί πέτρα παρατραχύνεται. ἀφ’ ἤς ἀναχειμένος εἰς δὴν βαθεῖαν περιεί-

---

1 The river Strymon (Struma) in Macedonia rises in Mt. Scomius, flows first S. and then S.E., passes through the
the place, acts almost as a hedge to enclose it, so that even Kalypso's isle, which Homer seems to have admired above all others for its beauty, is insignificant as compared with this. For it is, in fact, by no means far from being an island, since it is shut in on all sides by barriers. Two deep ravines break off abruptly on two sides, and on a third side, at the bottom of a cliff, the river which glides gently by forms a wall, being itself a continuous and impassable barrier; and since the mountain stretches along the fourth side, and is joined to the ravines through bending sides which take the shape of a crescent, the passes at the base are blocked off. However, there is one entrance here, and we are in control of it. Adjoining my dwelling is another neck of land, as it were, which supports at its summit a lofty ridge, so that from the former the plain below lies outspread before the eyes, and from the elevation we may gaze upon the encircling river, which in my mind at least furnishes no less pleasure than they receive who receive their first impression of the Strymon from Amphipolis. For the latter, as it spreads out with its somewhat sluggish current to form the lake, almost ceases to be a river, by reason of the stillness of its waters; whereas the former, as it flows more swiftly than any other river I know, for a short space is roughened by the rock which borders upon it. As the river recoils from this rock, it coils itself into a lake Presias, and immediately S. of Amphipolis, which it nearly encircles, falls into a bay of the Aegean Sea, called after it Strymonicus Sinus. Cf. Hes., Th. 339; Aesch., Ag. 192; Hdt. vii. 75; Thuc. ii. 96, iv. 108, v. 7; and Strabo, p. 323.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

λείται, ὡς τε ἡδίστην 1 ἐμοὶ καὶ παντὶ θεατῇ παρεχόμενος, καὶ χρείαν τοῖς ἐπιχωρίοις αὐταρκεστάτην, ἵχθυνν γε 2 πλήθος ἀμύθητον ταῖς δίναις 3 ἐντρέφοιν.

Τί δεὶ λέγειν τὰς ἐκ τῆς γῆς ἀναπνοάς, ἢ τὰς ἐκ τοῦ ποταμοῦ αὐρας; τὸ γε μὴν τῶν ἀνθέων πλήθος ἢ τῶν φῶτον, ὡς καί ἄλλοι μὲν ἀν ἐν τοῖς θαυμάσεις 4 ἐμοὶ δὲ οὐ σχολή τούτοις προσέχειν τὸν νῦν. ὁ δὲ μέγιστον εἰπτεῖν ἔχομεν τοῦ χωρίου, ὅτι πρὸς πᾶσαν ὑπάρχον 5 καρπῶν φορὰν ἐπιτιθείοις δι’ εὐκαρίαν τῆς θέσεως, ἡδίστου ἐμοὶ πάντων καρπῶν τὴν ἡσυχίαν τρέφει, 6 οὐ μόνον καθότι τῶν ἀστικῶν θορυβῶν ἀπῆλλακται, ἀλλ’ ὅτι οὐδὲ ὁδίτην τινὰ παραπέμπει πλὴν τῶν κατὰ θῆραν ἐπιμιγνυμένων ἡμῖν. πρὸς γὰρ τοῖς 7 ἄλλοις καὶ θηροτρόφοις ἐστίν, οὐχὶ ἄρκτων ἢ λύκων τῶν ὑμετέρων (ὡς γένοιτο), ἀλλ’ ἐλάφων ἀγέλας καὶ αἰγών ἀγρίων καὶ λαγωνίως βόσκει, καὶ εἰ τι τούτως ὀμοίων.

'Αρ’ οὖν οὐκ ἐνθυμῆθη παρ’ ὅσον ἦλθον κινδύνου ὁ μάταιος ἐγὼ, τοιοῦτον χωρίον τὴν Τιβέρινην, τῆς οἰκουμένης τὸ βάραθρον, φιλονεικῶν ἀνταλλάξασθαι; πρὸς ὅπερ νῦν ἐπειγομένω συγγνώσῃ, πάντως γὰρ οὐδὲ Ἀλκμαίων Ἐχινάδας 8 εὐρὼν ἐτὶ τῆς πλάνης ἤνεςχετο.

1 μεγίστην C, πασῶν add. E. 2 τε MSS. 3 περιελούμενον add. E. 4 ἐθαυμάσειν E, F. 5 ὑποουργίαν C. 6 ἐκτρέφει E. 7 αὐτοίς A, B. 8 νήσους E.

1 The Tiberina was a district near Gregory’s home at Nazianzus; cf. Greg. Naz., Epp. vi and vii.
LETTER XIV

depth whirlpool, furnishing me, and every spectator, with a most pleasant sight, and providing the natives of the region with complete independence as to food, since it nourishes in its eddies an innumerable multitude of fish.

Why need I mention the exhalations from the land, or the breezes from the river? Someone else might well marvel at the multitude of the flowers or of the song-birds; but I have not the leisure to turn my thoughts to these. The highest praise, however, which I can give to the place is that, although it is well adapted by its admirable situation to producing fruits of every kind, for me the most pleasing fruit it nourishes is tranquillity, not only because it is far removed from the disturbances of the city, but also because it attracts not even a wayfarer, except the guests who join me in hunting. For besides its other excellences it abounds in game, not those bears and wolves of yours (God forbid); but it feeds herds of deer and wild goats, hares, and animals like these.

Do you not therefore realize the risk that I in my folly but narrowly escaped taking, when I was eager to exchange such a spot for the Tiberina,¹ that pit of the whole world? You will forgive me for hastening, as I do now, to this place. For after all, not even Alcmaeon, after he had discovered the Echinades,² could endure to wander longer.

² Alcmaeon slew his mother; but the Erinnys, the avenger of matricide, drove him mad, allowing him no rest anywhere. He finally obtained relief in a land which was not under the rays of the sun when the matricide was committed. This land was the Echinades, islands at the mouth of the river Acheloüs, whose muddy stream is perpetually depositing new earth, and forming additional islands.
'Αρκαδίῳ κόμητι πριβατῶν

'Εδωκαν μείζονα τὴν χάριν ἡ ἐλαβον οἱ πολίται τῆς μητροπόλεως ἠμῶν, παρασχόμενοι μοι ἀφορμὴν τῶν πρὸς τὴν σὴν τιμίότητα γραμμάτων. αὐτός μὲν γὰρ ἡ φιλανθρωπία, ἦς ἔνεκεν τὴν ἐπιστολὴν ἐλαβον παρ' ἡμῶν, καὶ πρὸ τῶν ἠμῶν ἑνώμην γραμμάτων ὑπῆρχε, διὰ τὴν συνήθη καὶ τὴν ἐκ φύσεως ἐνυπάρχουσάν σοι πρὸς πάντας ἡμερότητα.

Ἡμεῖς δὲ τὴν ἀφορμὴν τοῦ προσφεβέγγεσθαι σοι τὴν ἀμίμητον καλοκαγαθίαν μέγιστον κέρδος ἐθέμεθα, εὐχόμενοι τῷ ἀγίῳ Θεῷ προκόπτοντί σοι ἐν τῇ πρὸς αὐτὸν εὐαρεστήσει καὶ ἐπὶ μείζον τῆς περὶ σὲ περιφανείας αὐξανομένης, αὐτοὶ τε ἐπευφραίνεσθαι καὶ τοῖς ἐυεργετουμένοις ὑπὸ τῆς σῆς ἐπιστασίας συνήδεσθαι λαβεῖν δέ ποτε καὶ τοὺς ἐγχειρίζοντας σοι τὰ γράμματα ἠμῶν ἡμέρως ἱδεῖν, καὶ ἀποτεμφώσθαι μετὰ πάντων καὶ αὐτούς, ἀνυμνοῦντας τὴν σὴν πραότητα, ἀεὶ μαθόντας ὅτι οὐκ ἀχρηστὸς αὐτοῖς ἡ παρ' ἡμῶν πρεσβεία πρὸς τὴν ἀνυπέρβλητον σου καλοκαγαθίαν γεγένηται.

1 ἡμετέραν C. 2 προσφεβέγγασθαι C.
LETTER XV

LETTER XV

To Arcadius, Imperial Treasurer

The citizens of our home city conferred a greater favour than they received when they gave me the opportunity of writing a letter to your honour. For your good-will, to gain which they procured this letter from me, was theirs even before we wrote, by reason of that wonted and inborn kindness which you possess toward all.

We have counted it a very great advantage to have this opportunity of addressing your inimitable excellency, and we pray to the holy God that we may both ourselves continue to rejoice in your ever-increasing favour in His sight and in your ever-waxing distinction, and that we may also join in the happiness and pleasure of those who enjoy the benefits of your administration of your high office. We pray also that you may one day receive this our letter, and with kindness look upon those who deliver it to you, and that you may send them also back in possession of all they ask, singing the praises of your gentle courtesy, and with a lasting remembrance of our successful intercession on their behalf with your unsurpassed excellency.

1 Written during Basil's retirement in Pontus. The official addressed managed the enormous revenues of the fiscus and kept account of the privileges granted by the emperor.

2 The Benedictine editors consider this last sentence impossible as it stands. The passage, however, seems entirely clear.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

XVI

Πρὸς Εὐνόμιον τὸν αἱρετικὸν

Ὁ ἑφικτὴν εἶναι λέγων τῶν ὄντων τὴν εὑρεσιν, ὁδῷ τινὶ πάντως καὶ ἀκολουθία διὰ τῆς τῶν ὄντων γνώσεως παρέβαλεν ἐαυτοῦ τὴν διάνοιαν καὶ τοὺς εὐλήπτους τε καὶ μικροτέρους ἐγγυμνασθεὶς διὰ τῆς καταλήψεως, οὕτω καὶ εἰς τὴν ἐπέκεινα πάσης ἐννοίας προίγαγεν ἐαυτὸν καταληπτικὴν φαντασίαν.

Οὐκοῦν ὁ τὴν περὶ τῶν ὄντων εἶδησιν κατειληφέναι μεγαλαυχοῦμενος τὸ σμικρότατον τῶν προφανομένων, ὅπως ἔχει φύσεως, ἐρμηνευσάτω, καὶ τίς ἡ τοῦ μύρμηκος φύσις, εἰπάτω. εἰ πνεύματι καὶ ἄσθματι συνέχεται αὐτῷ ἡ ζωή; εἰ ὅστεος τὸ σῶμα διείληπται, εἰ νεύροις καὶ συνδέσμοις τᾶς ἀρμονίας τετόνωταί εἰ μνών περιβολή καὶ ἀδένων ἡ τῶν νεύρων περικρατεῖται θέσις, εἰ τοῖς νωτιαίοις σπουδύλοις ἐκ τοῦ βρέγματος ἐπὶ τὸ ὀφραῖον ὁ μυελὸς συμπαρατείνεται, εἰ τῇ περιοχῇ τοῦ νευρώδους ὑμένοις, τοῖς κινοῦμένοις μέλεσι τῆς ὀρμητικῆς ἐιδίδωσι δύναμιν εἰ ἐστιν ἐν αὐτῷ τὸ ἥπαρ, καὶ τὸ χοληδόχον ἀγγείον ἐπὶ τοῦ ἠπατος, νεφροὶ τε καὶ καρδία καὶ ἀρτηρίαι.

1 Sic E, F: Εὐνόμιφ Α, B, C, D: πρὸς Ἐυνόμιον αἱρετικὸν ὅτι μηδὲ τὴν τοῦ μύρμηκος φύσιν ἐπιστάμενος τὴν πάντα νοῦν ὑπερέχουσαν δύναμιν φυσιολογεῖν ἐπεξείρησεν C.
2 προέβαλεν editi; παρεβαλεν A, B, C, D, E, F.
3 πρὸς C, D. 4 ἐαυτὸν editi, sed ἐαυτὸν MSS.
4 τῷ σῶματι E.
5 κοινόλοιος C, D.
LETTER XVI

AGAINST EUNOMIUS, THE HERETIC

He, who says that the discovery of things actually existing is attainable, no doubt had some sort of method and procedure by means of which, through his apprehension of actually existing things, he has applied his own powers of reasoning: and, by first training himself to apprehend the insignificant and easily comprehensible, he has advanced his apprehensive faculty to the apprehension of that which is beyond all intelligence.

Now then let him who boasts of having apprehended the knowledge of things actually existing interpret the nature of the most insignificant of phenomena. For instance, let him tell what is the nature of the ant. Is its life sustained by respiration and breath? Is its body provided with a system of bones? Are its joints kept taut by sinews and ligaments? Is the position of the sinews under the control of a covering of muscles and glands? Is its marrow stretched along the dorsal vertebrae from brow to tail? Is it by means of its envelope of sinewy membrane that the marrow gives to the movable members the power of propulsion? Does it possess a liver, a gall-bladder near the liver, kidneys, a heart, arteries, veins,

1 The bishop of Cyzicus, against whose Liber Apologeticus Basil wrote his Adversus Eunomium. This letter, however, is not one of Basil’s, but a portion of Gregory of Nyssa’s work Against Eunomius, 10 (Migne, P.G. 45, 828). Cf. Fr. Diekamp, Ein angeblicher Brief des heilig. Basilius gegen Eunomius: Theol. Quartalschrift, 77, 1895, 277–285.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL


Ὁ τούντων ὁμών τὴν γνώσιν ἐπικομπάζον, τέως τὴν τοῦ μύρμηκος φύσιν εἰπάτω: εἰθ' οὕτω φυσιολογεῖτω τὴν πάντα νοῦν ὑπερέχουσαν δύναμιν. εἰ δὲ τοῦ βραχυτάτου μύρμηκος οὕτω περιέλαβες τῇ γνώσει τὴν φύσιν, πῶς τὴν ἀκατάληπτον τοῦ Θεοῦ δύναμιν μεγαλαυχεῖς φαντάζεσθαι;

XVII

'Ωριγένει

Καὶ ἀκούομενος εὐφραίνεις, καὶ ἀναγινωσκόμενος δι' ὅν γράφεις ἐνεργειστέρας3 ἡμῶν παρέχεις εὐφροσύνας. καὶ χάρις πολλή τῶν ἁγαθῶν Θεῶν, τῷ μηδὲν ἐλαττωθῆναι ποιῆσαι τὴν ἀλήθειαν ἐν τῇ προδοσίᾳ τῶν δῆθεν ύπερκρατοῦσιν, ἀλλὰ δι' ἡμῶν4 τὴν συννηγορίαν τοῦ λόγου τῆς εὐσεβείας ἀναπληρώσατε. ἔκεινοι μὲν οὖν, ὡς τὸ κόψει τὸ τὸ ἀκόντιον, καὶ εἰ τὶς ἄλλη ἄνδροφόνος βοτάνη, πρὸς ὀλίγον ἀνθίσαστες ταχύ ἀποξηραν-

1 εἰ om. A, B, F. 2 ἀπὸ add. C, D. 3 ἐνεργειστέρας A, B, F. 4 ἡμῶν E, F.

116
membranes, and cartilage? Is it smooth-skinned, or covered with hair? Has it an uncloven hoof, or are its feet divided into toes? How long does it live? How does it reproduce its kind? How long is the fetus carried in the womb? How is it that ants neither all walk, nor all fly, but some belong to the things that move upon the ground, while others travel through the air?

Let him, therefore, who boasts the knowledge of actually existing things, first tell us of the nature of the ant. Then and not till then may he investigate the nature of the power which surpasses all understanding. If, however, you have not yet comprehended the nature of the smallest ant by knowledge, how can you boast that the incomprehensible power of God is apparent to you?

LETTER XVII

To Origen

It is a delight to listen to you, and to read your works affords us a still more lively pleasure. Abundant thanks to the good God, who has not allowed the truth to succumb to the treachery of those who claim, forsooth, to prevail, but has furnished through you an advocacy of the doctrine of the true religion! They, however, like hemlock or aconite and every other deadly herb, after a brief

---

1 This letter, written during the reign of Julian, is the sole source for our information about this Origen. It is conjectured that he was a layman, who, alike as a rhetorician and a writer, was popularly known as a Christian apologist.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

θήσονται. οῦμιν δὲ ἀνθηρὸν καὶ ἢεὶ νέον ὁ Κύριος τῶν μισθῶν τῶν ὑπὲρ τοῦ ὄνοματος αὐτοῦ λαληθέντων παρέξει.

'Ανθ' ὑν καὶ παράσχοι οὐμιν 1 ὁ Κύριος 2 πᾶσαν εὐθηνίαν οίκου, καὶ εἰς παῖδας παῖδων τῆς εὐλογίαν διαιβιβάσαι. τὰ δὲ εὐγενέστατα παιδία, τοὺς ἐναργεῖς τῆς σής χρηστότητος χαρακτῆρας, εἶδον ἢδεως καὶ περιεπτυξίμην, καὶ εὐχομαι αὐτοῖς ὁσα ἄν αὐτὸς ὁ πατὴρ εὐξη.

XVIII

Μακαρίῳ καὶ Ἰωάννῃ 3

Οὐτέ γεωργοῦν οἱ κατὰ γεωργίαν ξενίζουσι πόνοι, οὐτέ ναύταις ὁ κατὰ θάλασσαν χειμῶν ἀπροσδόκητος, οὐτε τοῖς μισθαρμοῦσιν ὁ 4 ἱδρὸς παράδοξος, οὐτέ μὴν τοῖς εὐσεβῶς ξὴν ἔλομένοις αἱ κατὰ τὸν ἐνεστῶτα κόσμον θλίψεις ἀμελετητοί. 5 ἀλλ' ἐκάστῳ τῶν εἰρημένων οίκείοις καὶ γνώριμος τοῖς μετισοῦσι 6 συνεξευκταί πόνος, οὐ δὲ ἐαυτὸν αἰρετός, ἀλλὰ δὲ ἀπόλαυσιν ἀγαθῶν προσδοκώμενον. ἐλπίδες γὰρ, πάντα τὸν τῶν ἀνθρώπων συνέχουσαι καὶ συγκροτοῦσαι βίον, τὴν ἐφ' ἐκάστῳ τούτων παραμυθοῦνται δυσκολίαν.

Τῶν μὲν οὖν ὑπὲρ γῆς καρπῶν ἡ τῶν κατὰ γῆν ποιούντων, οἱ μὲν παντάπασιν ἐψευσθῆσαν

1 ημίν E. 
2 ὁ Κύριος om. C, D, E. 
3 Μακαρίῳ καὶ Ἰωάννῃ E, F. Μακαρίῳ A, B, F. Μακρίῳ καὶ Ἰωάννῃ ὡστε μηδὲν επὶ ταῖς διαβολαῖς παράσσεσθαι C, D. 
4 θεινοὶ om. E, sed non alia MSS. 
5 ἡ . . . θλίψεις ἀμελετητος A, B, C, D, F.
LETTER XVIII

period of bloom will quickly wither. But as for you, the Lord will bless you with endless youth and bloom as your reward for your defence of His name.

Wherefore may the Lord also grant you all well-being at home, and may His blessings pass on to your children's children. I was delighted to see and embrace your noble children, express images of your own goodness, and in my prayers I invoke as many blessings for them as you their father can invoke.

LETTER XVIII

To Macarius and John

The labours of the farm do not seem strange to the farmer; the storm at sea is not unexpected by the sailor; sweat causes no wonder to the hired labourer; and so to those who have chosen to live the life of piety the afflictions of this world are not unforeseen. Nay, to each of the aforesaid is joined a labour that is appropriate and well known to those who share it—a labour which is not chosen for its own sake, but for the enjoyment of expected blessings. For hopes, which hold and weld together man's entire life, give consolation for the hardships which fall to the lot of each of these.

Now of those who labour for the fruits of the earth or for earthly things, some are completely

1 The heretics will not prevail in the end, he says, however successful they may be now.

2 Probably written in the reign of Julian. Note the MS. variations of the former of the two names addressed.

6 τοῖς μετίσσοις om. A, B, C, D, F.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

tῶν ἐλπίδων, μέχρι μόνης φαντασίας τῶν προσδοκώμενων 1 τὴν ἀπόλαυσιν έχοντες, οἷς δὲ καὶ κατὰ γνώμην ἐκβήναι συνέβη τὸ τέλος, δεύτερας ἐδέστε πάλιν ἐλπίδος, παραδραμούσης καὶ μαρανθείσης ἐν 2 τάχει τῆς προτέρας. μόνοις δὲ τοῖς ὑπὲρ εὐσεβείας καμοῦσιν οὐ ψεύδος ἡφαίνεσθαι 3 τὰς ἐλπίδας, οὐ τέλος ἐλυμήνατο τοὺς ἄθλους, 4 βεβαιαὶ καὶ μονίμου διαδεχομένης τῆς τῶν οὐρανῶν βασιλείας.

Μὴ τοίνυν ὑμᾶς παρατέτω διαβολὴ τυχεῖσιν, μηδὲ φοβεῖτω τῶν κρατοῦντων ἀπειλήν, μὴ γέλως λυπεῖτω καὶ ὑβρις τῶν γνωρίμων, μηδὲ κατάγνωσις παρὰ τῶν κηδεσθαί προσποιούμενών, ἵσχυρότατον πρὸς ἀπάτην δέλεαρ προβαλλομένων 5 παραίνεσεως προσποίησιν, 6 ἐνώ ἂν ὁ τῆς ἀληθείας ἢμιν συναγωγίζῃται λόγος, ἀντιμαχέσθω δὲ τοῖς πᾶσι λογίσμοις ὀρθοῖς, σύμμαχος παρακαλών γενέσθαι καὶ βοηθοῦν 7 αὐτῶ τῶν τῆς εὐσεβείας διδάσκαλων τὸν Κύριον ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν, δι’ ὅν καὶ τὸ κακοπαθεῖν ἢδυ καὶ τὸ ἀποθανεῖν κέρδος.

XIX

Γρηγορίῳ ἐταῖρῳ 8

Γράμμα ἡλθέ μοι πρώην παρὰ σοῦ, ἀκριβῶς σῶν, οὐ τοσοῦτον τῷ χαρακτήρι τῆς χειρός, ὅσον

1 τῶν προσδοκώμενων om. F. 2 ἐν om. E.
3 παρηφάνισε E. 4 τοῖς ἄθλοις A, B, C, D, F.
5 ἵσχυρότατον . . . προβαλλομένων om. A, B, F.
6 προσποίησει A, B.
7 παρακαλῶν . . . βοηθοῦν om. A, B, C, D, F.

1 2 0.
deluded of their hopes, in that they have this enjoyment of expected things merely in phantasy; while others, for whom the result has by chance been as they wished, are in need of a second hope, since the first has speedily gone past them and withered away. Only for those who toil for piety’s sake has no delusion blasted their hopes, no result spoiled the rewards, for the kingdom of heaven, firm and enduring, receives them.

Therefore, so long as the word of truth is on our side, let no false slander disturb you, no threat of the powerful terrify you; let not the ridicule and insults of your acquaintances offend you, nor yet the condemnation of those who pretend to care for you and who offer you deceit’s most potent lure—the pretence of giving advice. Against them all let right reason give battle, summoning to be its ally and helper the teacher of piety, our Lord Jesus Christ, for whom to suffer is a delight and “to die is gain.”

LETTER XIX

To Gregory, a Friend

The day before yesterday a letter came to me from you. It was indeed strictly yours, not so much

---

1 Phil. 1, 21.
2 This letter to Gregory of Nazianzus was probably written at Caesarea, shortly after Basil had been made a presbyter. Cf. Letter XIV and Introd., p. xxii.

---

8 Sic E; τῷ αὐτῷ Α, Β; τῷ αὐτῷ ἀπολογία διότι ἐπιστεύ-λαντι εὐθὺς οὐκ ἄντεγραψαν Λ, C.
XX

Λεοντῖς σοφιστή

Χρόνια μέν σοι καὶ τὰ παρ’ ἦμῶν γράμματα, οὐ μὴν χρονιώτερα τῶν αὐτόθεν, καὶ ταῦτα πολλῶν καὶ συνεχῶν ἐπιδημησάντων ἦμῶν ἀπὸ τῆς ὑμετέρας· οἷς εἰ πᾶσιν ἐφεξῆς γράμματα ἐπετίθης, οὐδὲν ἦν τὸ κόλπον αὐτῷ σοι δοκεῖν συνεῖναι ἦμᾶς καὶ οἰονεὶ παρόντας καὶ συνόντας ἀπολαύειν· οὔτω συνεχές ἦν τὸ πλήθος τῶν πρὸς ἦμᾶς ἀφικνούμένων.

Ἀλλὰ τί οὐκ ἐπιστέλλεις; καίτοιγε οὐδὲν ἐργον σοφιστή, ἢ τὸ γράφειν μάλλον δὲ εἰ καὶ τῆς χειρὸς ἐχεις ἄργος, οὐδὲ γράφειν δεῖσαι, ἀλλος γὰρ σοι διακομῆσαι. γλώττης δὲ χρεία μόνης· ἢ κἂν ἦμῖν μὴ διαλέγηται, ἀλλ’ ἐνὶ γε πάντως τῶν συνόντων λαλῆσαι, κἂν μηδεὶς παρῇ,

1 Sic A, B, C, D, E; γραμματοφόρος editi.
2 ἐπιτίθεις C, D, E.
in handwriting as in the letter's peculiar quality. For though the sentences were few they offered much thought. I did not answer it immediately, because I myself was away from home, and the letter-carrier departed straightway as soon as he had handed the letter to one of my friends. We now through Peter salute you, and thereby at the same time fulfil my obligation to send greetings, and furnish you with another opportunity of writing. Surely no trouble is involved in writing a Laconic note, such as the letters which come to me from you invariably are.

LETTER XX

To the sophist Leontius

Our letters to you are far between, yet no more so than yours to us, in spite of the fact that many people are ever journeying hither from your land. If you had entrusted a letter to each one of these in turn, there would have been nothing to prevent my imagining myself in your very company and enjoying you as though I were present with you; so continuous has been the number of arrivals here.

But why do you not write? Surely a sophist has nothing to do but write; or rather, if your hand is slothful, you need not even write, for someone else will do it for you. The only requirement is a tongue. If this does not converse with us, it will surely talk with one of your pupils, and if no pupil

\[1\] Written in 364. Basil refers to a Leontius in Letter XXXV.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

εφ’ έαυτής διαλέξεται σιωπήσει δε ούδαμώς, σοφιστική τε ούσα καὶ Ἀττική, οὐ μᾶλλον γε ἡ αἱ ἀπόδονες, ὅταν τὸ ἔαρ αὐτὰς πρὸς ὁδὴν ἀναστήσῃ.

Ἡμῖν μὲν γὰρ τὸ πυκνὸν τῆς ἀσχολίας τούτο ἐν ὁ νῦν ἐσμὲν κἂν παραίτησιν ἐνέγκου τυχὸν πρὸς τὴν ἐνδειαν τῶν γραμμάτων[--] καὶ τὸ οἶνοετε ἑρμυπώσθαι λοιπὸν τῇ κατακορεί συννηθεία[---] πρὸς ἰδιωτισμὸν ὄκνον εἰκότως ἐμποιεῖ προσφθέγγεσθαι ὑμᾶς τοὺς σοφιστάς, οὐ, εἰ μὴ τι ἄξιον τῆς ὑμετέρας αὐτῶν σοφίας ἄκουσεσθε, δυσχερανεῖτε καὶ οὐκ ἄνεξεσθε. σὲ δὲ που τὸ ἐναυτίον εἰκὸς ἐπὶ πάσης προφάσεως δημοσιεύειν σαυτοῦ τῇ φωνῇ, ἑπιτήδειον οὖντα εἰπεῖν ἢν αὐτὸς οἴδα Ὑπελήνων. οἴδα γὰρ, ὡς οἴμαι, τοὺς ὄνομαστο- τάτους τῶν ἐν ὑμῖν, ὅστε οὐδεμία παραίτησις σιωπῶντι. καὶ ταῦτα μὲν εἰς τοσοῦτον.

Ἄπεστείλα δὲ καὶ τὰ πρὸς Εὐνόμιον ἃ εἶτε παιδιάν χρὴ καλεῖν, εἶτε μικρὸ παιδίας σπου- δαιότερα, αὐτῷ σοι κρίνειν παρίημι. ὅς πρὸς μὲν τὰ οἰκεία σαυτοῦ οὐκέτι, οἴμαι, χρῆξεις, πρὸς δὲ τῶν ἐνδιαστρόφων τοὺς ἐντυγχάνοντας οὐκ ἀγεννές σοι ὀπλόν ἔσεσθαι προσδοκῶ. οὐ τῇ δυνάμει τοῦ συντάγματος καταπιστεύουτες τοσοῦτον, ἀλλ’ ἄκριβῶς γνωρίζουτε ἀπὸ ὀλίγων ἀφορμῶν ἐπὶ πολλά σε ὑμάς εὐρετικόν. εὰν δὲ τι σοὶ καὶ ἀσθενέστερον ἔχειν τῆς χρείας κατα-

1 γε Α, Β. 2 Sic MSS.; πραγμάτων Ed. Ben.
3 κατακορεὶ συννηθεία] κατακορία Α, Β, C, D.
4 αὐτοῦ Β. 5 ἡμῖν Α, Β. 6 ὅσον E.

1 A dogmatic work in three books, “Rebuttal of the Apologetic of the impious Eunomius” (Ἀνατρεπτικὸς τοῦ
is at hand, it will go on conversing by itself. But in no event will it be silent, being both sophistic and Attic, any more than the nightingale when spring stirs it to song.

In our case the mass of business in which we are now engaged might perhaps afford some excuse for our failure to write. Besides, the stain, as it were, that I have taken on by my tiresome association with the vulgar makes me naturally reluctant to address you sophists, who will become vexed and impatient unless you hear something worthy of your own wisdom. You, I suppose, on the other hand, will naturally accept every pretext to publish your words abroad, since of all the Greeks whom I know you are the best fitted to speak. And I know, I think, the most celebrated men among you. There is then no excuse for your silence. But I have said enough on this subject.

I have sent you also my work against Eunomius. Whether we should call this child's play or something a little more serious than child's play, I leave you to judge. You yourself, I imagine, are no longer in need of the book for your own enlightenment, but against such of the perverse as read it, I believe you will find it no mean weapon; it is not so much that I feel confidence in the potency of my essay, but rather that I am keenly aware that you have the ingenuity to go far with scanty resources. But if any argument strikes you as

\[ \text{LETTER XX} \]

\[ \text{ἐπολογητικοῦ τοῦ δυσεβῶς Εὐνομίου}, \] composed in 363 or 364. In the year 360 Eunomius had been deprived of his episcopate in Cyzicus because of his Arian views.

\[ 1 \text{I.e. he can make much of the argument which Basil advances in the book in question.} \]
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

Φανή, μὴ κατοκνήσῃς ἐλέγξαι. τούτῳ ἡμᾶς μάλιστα φίλος κόλακος διευήνομα, τῷ τῶν μέν προς ὡδονὴν ὀμιλεῖν, τῶν δὲ μηδὲ τῶν λυποῦντων ἀπέχεσθαι.

XXI

Λεοντίῳ σοφιστῇ

'Εοικέ τι τῆς κοινῆς καταστάσεως καὶ εἰς τὰ ἦαυτοῦ πράγματα ὁ Χρηστὸς Ἰωυλιανὸς ἀπολαύειν. ἀπαιτεῖται γὰρ καὶ αὐτὸς καὶ ἐγκαλεῖται σφοδρῶς, ἐπειδὴ πάντα νῦν ἀπαίτουμένων καὶ ἐγκαλουμένων γέμει. πλὴν ὅσον οὐχὶ εἰσφορῶν ἐξελεμματα, ἀλλ' ἐπιστολῶν. καίτοι πόθεν αὐτῷ ἐλλέειπται ἀγνῶς ἕδωκε γὰρ ἄει ἐπιστολῆν, τὴν δὲ ἐκομίσατο. εἰ μὴ τί ποιον καὶ παρὰ σοι ἡ πολυθρύλλητος αὐτὴ τετραπλῆ προτετίμηται. οὐδὲ γὰρ οἱ Πυθαγόριοι τοσοῦτον προετίμησαν τὴν τετρακτύν, ὅσον οἱ νῦν ἐκλέγουντες τὰ δημόσια τὴν τετραπλῆν. καίτοις ἰσως τὸ ἐναντίον εἰκὸς ἢν, σοφιστὴν ὄντα καὶ εὐποροῦντα λόγων τοσοῦτων, αὐτὸν ἡμῖν εἰς τὴν

1 τούτῳ ἐν τούτῳ E. 2 μήτε A, B, C, D. 3 καὶ τῷ E, F. 4 σοῦ C, D.

1 For this sentiment, oft-repeated, see Plutarch, πῶς ἄν τις διακρίνεις τὸν κόλακα τοῦ φίλου (How one should distinguish a flatterer from a friend).

2 Written in the year 364. A very puzzling letter unless Leontius is identified with "the good Julian." Julian or Leontius has written to complain of Basil's not answering his letters; and this is Basil's reply. Cf. Letter CCXCIII.

126
LETTER XXI

weaker than it should be, do not hesitate to criticize. For herein especially does a friend differ from a flatterer; the flatterer speaks to give pleasure, but the friend refrains from nothing, even that which gives pain.¹

LETTER XXI

To the sophist Leonius²

The good Julian seems to take advantage of the general situation with reference to his own affairs. For he too keeps demanding payment and making vehement accusations, at this time when all the world is teeming with men who demand payment and make accusations; but in his case it is not for default in taxes but in letters. Yet how it comes that he has suffered any default I do not know; for invariably he has only bestowed a letter after he has already received one. Unless it be, perchance, that you too have a preference for the much-talked-of "fourfold."³ For not even the Pythagoreans clung so tenaciously to their "quaternion,"⁴ as the tax-collectors of to-day do to their "fourfold"! And yet perhaps the opposite would be the only fair arrangement—that you, who are a sophist and so well supplied with words in that amount, should

³ According to the Benedictine note this refers to no regular tax, but to a punishment for unpaid taxes, demanding four times the ordinary amount. Cf. Ammianus Marcellinus, xxvi. 6.

⁴ The term applied by the Pythagoreans to the sum of the first four numbers, one, two, three, and four—the numbers applied respectively to the point, the line, the surface, and the solid, and considered by them to be the root of all creation.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

tων τετραπλασίων ἐκτισιν ὑποκείσθαι. καὶ μὴ όιον ταύτα δυσχεραίνοντας ἡμᾶς γράφειν. χαίρω γάρ σου καὶ ταύς μέμψεσιν, ἐπειδὴ τοῖς καλοῖς φασί πάντα μετὰ τῆς τοῦ καλοῦ προσθήκης γίνεσθαι. ὦστε καὶ λύπας αὐτοῖς καὶ ὅργας ἐπιπρέπειν. 1 ἡδιον γοῦν ἀν τίς ἵδοι ὁργιζόμενον τὸν ἀγαπώμενον, ἡ θεραπεύοντα ἔτερον. μήποτε οὖν ἀνής ἐγκαλῶν τοιαῦτα. γράμματα γὰρ ποὺ ἐσται αὐτά τὰ ἐγκλήματα, 2 ὃν ἐμοὶ οὐδὲν ἀκούσμα τιμιώτερον, οὐδὲ πλείονα φέρον τὴν ἠδονήν.

XXII

Περὶ τελειότητος βίου μοναχῶν 3

Πολλῶν ὅντων τῶν ὑπὸ τῆς θεοπνεύστου Γραφῆς δηλουμένων τῶν κατορθοῦσθαι ὀφειλόν- των τοῖς ἐσπουδακόσιν εὐαρεστήσαι τῷ Θεῷ, περὶ μόνων τέως τῶν ἐπὶ τοῦ παρόντος κινηθέντων παρ’ ὑμῖν, ὡς ἐμαθον ἐξ αὐτῆς τῆς θεοπνεύστου Γραφῆς, ἐν συντόμῳ ὑπομνήσει εἰπεῖν 4 ἀναγκαίως 5 προεθυμήθην, τὴν περὶ ἐκάστου μαρτυρίαν εὐληπτον οὖσαν καταλείψας ἐπιγινώσκειν

1 ἐπιπρέπειν C, D, F.
2 γάρ του . . . ἐγκλήματα om. A, B.
3 ἀνεπίγραφος, κανῶν ἀκριβῆς τῆς κατὰ τὸ εὐαγγελίον τοῦ Χριστοῦ ἀσκητικῆς πολιτείας C D.
4 εἰπεῖν om. C, D, E.
5 ἀναγκαίως om. C, D.

128
LETTER XXII

yourself be liable to us for the payment of the "fourfold." Now do not think that we write these words with any ill-feeling. For I delight even in your censures, because, as they say, "Every act of the beautiful carries with it a bit of beauty added," and consequently outbursts of both grief and anger become them. At any rate one would rather see a beloved friend indulge in anger than anyone else in flattery. Do not then cease making charges like the last. For these very accusations will probably take the form of letters, than which nothing is more valued by me and nothing brings me greater pleasure.

LETTER XXII

Without address; on the Perfection of the Monastic Life

Since in the divinely inspired Scriptures many directions are set forth which must be strictly observed by all who earnestly wish to please God, I desire to say, necessarily in the form of a brief reminder, a few words based upon the knowledge which I have derived from the divinely inspired Scriptures themselves, regarding for the present merely those questions which have at this present time been stirred up among you. By so doing I shall leave behind me, in a form easy to apprehend, their testimony on every point for those to observe

1 Probably written in 364. This letter is an excellent illustration of the fact that St. Basil based his conception of the religious life entirely upon the Holy Writ. It is to be noted that Basil here identifies the monastic life with the ideal Christian life. Cf. Introd. p. xix.
"Οτι δει τον Χριστιανόν άξια της ἐπουρανίου κλήσεως 2 φρονείν, καὶ άξιος τοῦ εὐαγγελίου τοῦ Χριστοῦ πολιτεύεσθαι. ὅτι οὐ δει τὸν Χριστιανόν μετεωρίζεσθαι, οὔδε ἀφέλκεσθαι ὑπὸ τινος ἀπὸ τῆς μνήμης τοῦ Θεοῦ καὶ τῶν αὐτῶν θελημάτων καὶ κριμάτων. ὅτι δει τὸν Χριστιανόν, κρείττονα τῶν κατὰ τὸν νόμον δικαιωμάτων γενόμενον ἐν πάσι, μήτε ὁμώνει μήτε ψευδεσθαι. ὅτι οὐ δει βλασφημεῖν ὅτι οὐ δει υβρίζειν. ὅτι οὐ δει μάχεσθαι ὅτι οὐ δει εαυτῶν ἐκδικεῖν ὅτι οὐ δει κακόν ἀντὶ κακοῦ ἀποδιδόναι ὅτι οὐ δει ὀργίζεσθαι. ὅτι δει μακροθυμεῖν πάν 3 οτιοῦν πάσχοντα, καὶ ἐλέγχειν εὐκαίρως τῶν ἀδικοῦντα, οὐ μὴν ἐν πάθει τῆς ἑαυτῶν ἐκδικήσεως, ἀλλ' ἐν ἐπιθυμίᾳ τῆς τοῦ ἀδελφοῦ διορθώσεως, κατὰ τὴν ἐντολὴν τοῦ Κυρίου. ὅτι οὐ δεῖ κατὰ ἀπόντος ἀδελφοῦ λέγειν τι σκοπῷ τοῦ διαβάλλειν αὐτῶν, ὅπερ ἐστὶ καταλαλία, καν ἀληθὴ ἢ τὰ λεγόμενα. ὅτι δεῖ τὸν καταλαλοῦντα ἀδελφὸν ἀποστρέφεσθαι. ὁ· ὅτι οὐ δεῖ εὐτράπελα φθέγγεσθαι. ὅτι οὐ δεῖ γελάν οὔδε γελοιαστὸν ἄνεχεσθαι. ὅτι οὐ δεῖ ἀργολογεῖν, λαλοῦντά τι ὁ μήτε πρὸς ὥφελειαν τῶν ἀκούοντων ἐστὶ μήτε πρὸς τὴν ἀναγκαίαν

1 ἀτινα ἐστιν τεῦτα add. C, D. 2 κληρονομίας C, D. 3 πάντοτε C, D.

1 Heb. 3. 1. 2 Phil. 1. 27. 3 Luke 12. 29. 4 Matt. 5. 20. 5 Titus 3. 2. 6 1 Tim. 2. 13. 7 2 Tim. 2. 24. 8 Rom. 12. 19. 9 Rom. 12. 17. 10 Matt. 5. 22. 11 James 3. 8. 12 Titus 2. 15.
LETTER XXII

who are too much occupied for reading; these will then be competent to recall the truth to others.

The Christian ought to think thoughts worthy of his heavenly vocation,¹ and conduct himself worthily of the Gospel of Christ.² The Christian should not be frivolous³ or easily drawn away by anything from the remembrance of God and from His will and judgments. The Christian, being in all things superior to the ordinances of the law, should neither swear nor lie.⁴ He ought not to speak evil,⁵ to insult,⁶ wrangle,⁷ revenge himself,⁸ render evil for evil⁹ or get angry.¹⁰ He should be long-suffering,¹¹ should endure to suffer anything whatever, and should rebuke an offender in due season,¹² not with a feeling for personal vengeance, but with a desire for his brother's correction,¹³ according to the commandment of the Lord. The Christian should say nothing behind a brother's back with the purpose of slandering him, for it is slander in any case, even if what is said is true.¹⁴ He ought to turn away from him who practises slander against a brother.¹⁵

The Christian ought not to speak in a light vein.¹⁶ He ought not to make merry or tolerate merry-makers.¹⁷ He must not talk idly, prattling of things which neither conduce to the benefit of his listeners

¹³ Matt. 15. 18. ¹⁴ 2 Cor. 12. 20, and 1 Peter 2. 1.
¹⁵ 1 Peter 8. 16-17, and James 4. 11. ¹⁶ Eph. 5. 4.
¹⁷ "This charge is probably founded on Luke 6. 21 and 25, and James 4. 9. Yet our Lord's promise that they who hunger and weep 'shall laugh,' admits of fulfilment in the kingdom of God on earth. Cheerfulness is a note of the Church, whose members, if sorrowful, are yet always rejoicing. (2 Cor. 6. 10)." Jackson.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

καὶ συγκεκρωμένην ἡμῖν ὑπὸ τοῦ Θεοῦ χρείαν· ὥστε καὶ τοὺς ἐργαζομένους στουνδάξειν καθ' ὅσον δυνατόν μετὰ ἁσυχίας ἐργάζεσθαι, καὶ αὐτοὺς δὲ τοὺς ἀγαθοὺς λόγους πρὸς ἑκείνους κινεῖν, τοὺς πεπιστευμένους μετὰ δοκιμασίας οἰκονομεῖν τὸν λόγον πρὸς οἰκοδομήν τῆς πίστεως, ἵνα μὴ λυπηθῇ τὸ Πνεῦμα τὸ ἅγιον τοῦ Θεοῦ. ὅτι οὐ δεῖ τῶν ἐπιεισερχομένων τινὰ ἐπ’ ἐξουσίας ἐγγίζειν ἢ λαλεῖν τινὶ τῶν ἄδελφῶν, πρὶν ἄν οἱ ἐπιτεταγμένοι τὴν φροντίδα τῆς ἐν πάσιν εὐπαθίας δοκιμάσωσι πῶς ἀρέσκει Θεῷ πρὸς τὸ κοινὴ συμφέρον. ὅτι οὐ δεῖ οἶνῳ δεδουλώσθαι, οὔτε περὶ κρέα ἐμπαθῶς ἐχεῖν, καὶ καθόλου περὶ οὐδὲν βρώμα ἢ πόμα φιλήδων εἶναι· ὁ γὰρ ἀγωνιζόμενος πάντα ἐγκρατεύεται. ὅτι τῶν διδομένων ἐκάστῳ εἰς χρήσιν οὐδὲν ὡς ἰδιον ἔχειν δεῖ ἢ ταμιεύεσθαι· ἐν μέντοι τῇ φροντίδι πᾶσιν ὡς δεσποτικοῖς προσέχοντα, μηδὲν τῶν παραρρυπτομένων ἢ ἀμελουμένων, ἀν οὕτω τὺχῃ, παροράν. ὅτι οὐ δεῖ οὗτε αὐτὸν ἑαυτὸν κύριον εἶναι τινα, ἀλλ’ ὡς ὑπὸ Θεοῦ παραδεδομένον εἰς δουλείαν τοῖς ὁμοψύχοις ἄδελφοῖς, οὕτω καὶ φρονεῖν πάντα καὶ ποιεῖν, ἐκαστὸν δὲ ἐν τῷ ἰδίῳ τάγματι.

"Ὅτι οὐ δεῖ γογγυζεῖν, οὔτε ἐν τῇ στενοχωρίᾳ τῶν πρὸς τὴν χρείαν οὔτε ἐν τῷ καμάτῳ τῶν ἔργων, ἐχόντων τὸ κρίμα περὶ ἐκάστου τῶν ἐπιτεταγμένων τῇ τούτων ἐξουσίᾳ. ὅτι οὐ δεῖ κραυγὴν γίνεσθαι, οὔτε ἀλλο τι σχήμα ἢ κῑνημα

1 ἡμῖν υπὸ om. E. 2 ἐχεῖν add. C, D. 3 ἄδελφοῖς om. C, D.

1 Eph. 5. 4. 2 1 Peter 4. 3. 3 Rom. 14. 21.
LETTER XXII

nor to the activities that are indispensable and permitted us by God; so that both the workers may as far as possible have silence in which to apply themselves zealously to their work, and that they themselves, who have been entrusted after trial with the dispensation of the word for the upbuilding of the faith, may speak only good words to the workers, lest God's Holy Spirit be grieved. No one of those who enter into positions of authority should approach or speak with one of the brothers, before those charged with the general discipline shall examine how this is pleasing to God, with an eye to the common good. The Christian ought not to be a slave to wine, nor fond of meat, nor in general to find pleasure in food or drink; for "everyone that striveth for the mastery refraineth himself from all things." He ought not to hold or store up as his own what is given to all for their own use; but he should take heed for all things carefully as belonging to the Master, and permit nothing that is thrown aside or, if this should be the case, neglected, to pass unseen. He should not consider himself as his own master, but as having been delivered by God into servitude to his brethren of like spirit, so he should always think and act; "but everyone in his own order."

The Christian should not grumble, either at the scarcity of his necessities or at the labour of his tasks, for those charged with authority in these matters have final decision over each thing. There should be no clamour, or any scene or commotion

4 2 Tim. 3. 4. 5 1 Cor. 9. 25. 6 Acts 4. 32. 7 1 Cor. 9. 19. 8 1 Cor. 15. 23. 9 1 Cor. 10. 10.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

ἐν δὲ χαρακτηρίζεται θυμός, ἡ μετεωρισμὸς ἀπὸ τῆς πληροφορίας τοῦ παρείναι. τὸν Θεόν. ὅτι δεὶ τῇ χρείᾳ συμμετρεῖν τὴν φωνήν, ὅτι οὐ δεὶ θρασέως ἡ καταφρονητικὸς τινὶ ἀποκρίνεσθαι ἢ ποιεῖν τι, ἀλλ' ἐν πάσι τὸ ἐπιεικὲς καὶ τὸ τιμητικὸν πρὸς πάντας δεικνύειν. ὅτι οὐ δεὶ ἐννεεῖν ὀφθαλμῷ μετὰ δόλον, ἡ ἀλλῷ τινὶ σχῆματι ἢ κινήματι μέλους κεχρῆσθαι, ὁ λυπεῖ τῶν ἀδελφῶν ἡ καταφρονήσιν ἐμφαίνει.

"Ὅτι οὐ δεὶ καλλωπίζεσθαι ἐν ὑμαΐς ἡ ὑποδήμασιν, ὅπερ ἐστὶ περπερεία. ὅτι δεὶ εὔτελεστὶ κεχρῆσθαι τοῖς πρὸς τὴν χρείαν τοῦ σώματος. ὅτι οὐ δεὶ ύπερ τὴν χρείαν καὶ πρὸς δαφύλειαν ἀναλίσκειν οὐδέν, ὅπερ ἐστὶ παράχρησις. ὅτι οὐ δεὶ τιμὴν ἐπίζητεῖν, ἡ πρωτείων ἀντιποιεῖσθαι. ὅτι δεὶ ἐκαστὸν προτιμάν ἐαυτὸν πάντας. ὅτι οὐ δεὶ ἀνυπότακτον εἶναι. ὅτι οὐ δεὶ ἄργων ἐσθείες τοῦ ἐργάζεσθαι δυνάμενον, ἀλλὰ καὶ τῶν ἀσχολούμενοι περὶ τι τῶν κατορθουμένων εἰς δόξαν Χριστοῦ ἐκβιάζεσθαι ἐαυτὸν εἰς τὴν σπουδὴν τοῦ κατὰ δύναμιν ἔργου. ὅτι δεὶ ἐκαστὸν δοκιμασία τῶν προσεπτῶν, μετὰ λόγου καὶ πληροφορίας, οὕτω ποιεῖν πάντα, ἀχρι καὶ αὐτοῦ τοῦ φαγεῖν καὶ πιεῖν, ὡς εἰς δόξαν Θεοῦ γινόμενα. ὡς ὅτι οὐ δεὶ ἀφ' ἔτερον εἰς ἔτερον ἐργον μεταβαίνειν ἄνευ τῆς δοκιμασίας τῶν εἰς τὸ διατυποῦν τὰ τοιαύτα ἐπιτεταγμένων, ἐκτὸς εἰ μὴ ποιοῦν τιν"
LETTER XXII

wherein anger is expressed,¹ or any other elation of the mind which draws us away from the full assurance of God's presence.² The voice should be modulated according to circumstances. The Christian should neither answer anyone nor act boldly or contemptuously,³ but in all things he should exhibit modesty⁴ and reverence to everyone.⁵ He ought not to wink covertly nor use any other posture or gesture which grieves a brother or shows contempt.⁶

The Christian should not be ostentatious in clothing or sandals, for all this is idle boasting.⁷ He should wear cheap clothes according to the need of the body. He should consume nothing beyond what is necessary or which tends to extravagance, for all this is abuse. He should not strive for honour nor always seek the first place.⁸ Each one should hold all men above himself.⁹ He should not be disobedient.¹⁰ He who is able to work ought not to eat the bread of idleness,¹¹ but even he who is busy about some duty established to the glory of Christ should constrain himself to zeal for such work as he can do.¹² Each one should, by the approval of his superiors, with reason and with full assurance, so do all things, even to actual drinking and eating, as being to the glory of God.¹³ The Christian should not turn from one work to another without the approval of those assigned for the regulation of such

¹ Eph. 4. 31. ² Heb. 4. 13. ³ Titus 3. 2. ⁴ Phil. 4. 5. ⁵ Rom. 12. 10, and 1 Peter 2. 17. ⁶ Rom. 14. 10. ⁷ Matt. 6. 29 and Luke 12. 27. ⁸ Mark 9. 37. ⁹ Phil. 2. 3. ¹⁰ Titus 1. 10. ¹¹ Phil. 2. 3. ¹² 1 Thess. 4. 11. ¹³ 2 Thess. 3. 10.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

ἀπαραίτητος ἀνάγκη εἰς βοήθειαν τοῦ ἀδυνατήσαντος καλούχη αἰφνίδιον. ὅτι δεῖ ἐκαστὸν μένειν ἐν ὧ ἐτάχθη, καὶ μὴ ὑπερβαίνοντα τοῦ ἰδίου μέτρον ἐπιβαίνειν τοῖς μὴ ἐπιτεταγμένοις, εἰ μὴ τὶ ἄν οἱ ταύτα πεπιστευμένοι δοκίμασος τινα χρῆζοντα βοηθείας. ὅτι οὐ δεῖ ἀφ’ ἐτέρου ἐργαστηρίον εἰς ἐτέρου εὑρίσκεσθαι τινα. ὅτι οὐ δεῖ κατὰ φιλονεικίαν ἢ ἐρωτὶ τὴν πρὸς τινα ποιεῖν τι.

"Ὅτι οὐ δεῖ φθονεῖν τῇ ἐτέρου ἕνδοκιμήσει, οὔτε ἐπικαίρειν ἐλαττώμασι τινος. ὅτι δεῖ ἐν ἀγάπῃ Χριστοῦ λυπεῖσθαι μὲν καὶ συντρίβεσθαι ἐπὶ τοῖς τοῦ ἀδελφοῦ ἐλαττώμασιν, εὑρισκεσθαι δὲ ἐπὶ τοῖς κατορθώμασιν. ὅτι οὐ δεῖ ἠδιαφορεῖν ἐπὶ τοῖς ἀμαρτάνουσιν ἢ ἐφησυχάζειν αὐτοῖς. ὅτι δεῖ τὸν ἐλέγχοντα μετὰ πάσης εὐσπλαγχνίας, φόβῳ Θεοῦ καὶ σκοπῷ τοῦ ἐπιστρέψαι τον ἀμαρτάνοντα, ἐλέγχειν. ὅτι δεῖ τὸν ἐλεγχόμενον ἢ ἐπιτιμώμενον καταδέχεσθαι προθύμως, γνωρίζοντα τὸ ἐαυτοῦ ὀφελον ἐν τῇ διορθώσει. ὅτι οὐ δεῖ, ἐγκαλουμένου τινὸς ἄλλον, ἐνώπιον ἐκείνου ἢ ἄλλων τινῶν ἀντιλέγειν τῷ ἐγκαλοῦντι. ἐὰν δὲ ἄρα ποτὲ ἄλογον φανῆ τὸ ἐγκληματία τινι, κατ’ ἰδίαι κινεῖν λόγον πρὸς τὸν ἐγκαλοῦντα, καὶ ἢ πληροφορεῖν ἢ πληροφορεῖσθαι.

"Ὅτι δεῖ ἐκαστὸν, ὃς δύναμις, 3 θεραπεύειν τὸν ἐχοντά τι κατ’ αὐτοῦ. ὅτι οὐ δεῖ μνησικακεΐν τῷ ἀμαρτήσαντι καὶ μετανοοῦντι, ἂλλ’ ἐκ καρδίας ἀφεῖναι. ὅτι δεῖ τὸν λέγοντα μετανοεῖν ἐφ’ ἀμαρτήματι μὴ μόνον κατανυγῆναι ἐφ’ ὧ ἡμαρτεν,
LETTER XXII

matters, unless perchance some inevitable necessity suddenly calls one to the aid of the helpless. Each one should remain where he has been placed, and not transgress his own bounds to enter upon unbidden places, unless those entrusted with these matters judge one to be in need of aid. He should not be found going from one workshop to another. He should do nothing out of a feeling of rivalry or contentiousness toward anyone.

The Christian should not be envious of another's good reputation, nor rejoice over his faults. Through love for Christ he should be grieved and distressed at his brother's faults and rejoice over his successes. He should not be indifferent to sinners or silent before them. He who reproves another should do so with all tenderness, in fear of God and with a view to reforming the sinner. He who is reproved or reprimanded should endure it willingly, recognizing the benefit received in being set aright. When a person is being accused, the Christian should not, before him or other persons, contradict the accuser. But if the accusation should ever seem unjust, the Christian should arrange a private conversation with the accuser, and either give or receive full information.

Each one should, according to his power, entertain a kindly feeling for everyone who has a grievance against him. He should not hold past wrongs against the repentant sinner, but should grant forgiveness from the bottom of his heart. He who says that he repents of a sin should not only feel remorse for his sin, but should also produce

1 1 Cor. 13. 6.  2 1 Cor. 12. 26.  3 1 Tim. 5. 20.
4 2 Tim. 4. 2.  5 2 Tim. 4. 2.  6 2 Cor. 2. 7.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

άλλα καὶ καρποὺς ἀξίους ποιῆσαι τῆς μετανοίας. οτι ο ἐπὶ τοὺς πρῶτους ἀμαρτήμασι παιδευθεῖς καὶ τῆς ἀφέσεως ἀξίωθείς, ἐὰν πάλιν ἀμάρτη, χείρον τοῦ προτέρου κατασκεύαξει, εὐαυτῷ τὸ κρίμα τῆς ὁργῆς. οτι δεὶ τὸν μετὰ τὴν πρώτην καὶ δευτέραν νοεθείς αἰτιμένοντα τῷ ἐλαττώματι εαυτοῦ φανεροῦσθαι τῷ προετῶτι, ἐὰν ἀρα ύπὸ πλειόνων ἐπιτιμηθεῖς ἐντραπῆ. ἐὰν δὲ μηδὲ ὦτω διορθώσηται, ὡς σκάνδαλον ἐκκοπτέσθαι τοῦ λοιποῦ, καὶ ὡς ἐθνικῶν καὶ τελῶν ὀρᾶσθαι πρὸς τὴν ἀσφαλείαν τῶν τὴν σπουδὴν τῆς ὑπακοῆς ἐργαζομένων, κατὰ τὸ εἰρημένον, 'Ἀσεβῶν καταπι- πτόντων, δίκαιοι ἔμφοβοι γίνονται. δεί δὲ καὶ πειρεῖν ἐπὶ αὐτῷ, ὡς μέλους ἐκκοπτέντος ἐκ τοῦ σώματος.

'Οτι οὐ δεὶ ἐν 1 παροργησμῷ ἀδελφοῦ ἐπιδύναι τῶν ἰλιοῦ, μὴ ποτε ἡ νυξ διαστῇ μεταξὺ ἀμφο- τέρων 2 καὶ καταλίπῃ ἐν ἡμέρα κρίσεως ἀπαραι- τητον ἐγκλήμα. οτι οὐ δεὶ καιρὸν ἀναμένειν ἐπὶ τῇ εαυτοῦ διορθώσει, διὰ τὸ μὴ ἀσφαλεῖς ἑχειν περὶ τῆς αὐριοῦ, ὡς πολλοὶ πολλὰ θουλευ- σάμενοι τὴν αὐριον οὐ κατέλαβον. ὡς οὐ δεὶ ἀπατᾶσθαι χορτασία κοιλίας, δὴ ἤς γίνονται φαντασία νυκτεριναί. οτι οὐ δεὶ περισσάσθαι εἰς ἀμετρὸν ἐργασίαν καὶ ύπερβαίνειν τοὺς ὄρους τῆς αὐταρκείας, κατὰ τὸν ἀπόστολον εἰπόντα· 'Ἐχοντες δὲ διατροφὰς καὶ σκεπάσματα, τούτως ἀρκετηθησόμεθα· ὡς κὶ περισσεῖα ὑπὲρ τὴν χρείαν εἰκόνα πλεονεξίας ἐμφαίνει, δὴ πλεονεξία ἀπόφασιν ἑχει εἴδωλολατρείας. ὡς οὐ δεί

1 ἐπὶ C.
2 διαστῇ μεταξὺ ἀμφοτέρων] μεταστήσει ἀμφοτέρους C.

138
fruits worthy of repentance. And he who has been corrected for his first faults and has been thought worthy of forgiveness, if he sins again, prepares for himself a judgment of anger worse than the first. And he who, after the first and second admonition, abides by his shortcoming, should be disclosed to the one in authority, if perchance he may repent when admonished by more. If even so he is not set aright, he should be cut off from the rest as a cause for scandal, and should be regarded as a heathen and publican, for the sake of the safety of those zealous in obedience, according to the saying, "When the impious fall, the righteous tremble." Yet all should mourn for him, as though a member has been cut off from the body.

The sun should never set on a brother's wrath, lest some time night stand between both and leave an inevitable charge for the day of judgment. The Christian should not await an opportunity for his own reform, because the morrow is not secure, since many who have made many plans have not reached the morrow. He should not be deceived by the filling of his belly, for nightmares come from this. He should not busy himself with excessive work, and thus overstep the bounds of sufficiency, as the apostle says, "Having food and wherewith to be covered, with this we are content;" because an abundance which goes beyond necessity gives an

COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

ψιλάργυρον εἶναι, ουδὲ θησαυρίζειν εἰς ἀνωφελῆ ἃ μὴ δεῖ. ὅτι δεῖ τὸν προσερχόμενον Θεῷ ἀκτη-μοσύνην ἀσπάζεσθαι κατὰ πάντα, καὶ ἱκαθηλω-μένου εἶναι τῷ φόβῳ τοῦ Θεοῦ, κατὰ τῶν εἰπόντα: Καθηλωσον ἐκ τοῦ φόβου σου τὰς σάρκας μου' ἀπὸ γὰρ τῶν κριμάτων σου ἐφοβήθην.

Δῷ δὲ ὁ Κύριος μετὰ πάσης πληροφορίας ὑμᾶς ἀναδεξαμένους τὰ εἰρημένα, εἰς δόξαν Θεοῦ καρποὺς ἀξίους τοῦ Πνεύματος ἐπιδείξασθαι, Θεοῦ εὐδοκία καὶ συνεργία τοῦ Κυρίου ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ. Ὅμηρν.

XXIII

Παραθετικὴ πρὸς μονάξοντα 2

Ὁ δεῖνα, ὡς λέγει, καταγωνὸς τῆς τοῦ βίου τούτου ματαιότητος καὶ καταμαθῶν ὅτι τῆς ζωῆς ταύτης τὰ τερπνὰ ἐνταῦθα τὴν καταστροφήν ἔχει, ὡς μόνον κατασκευάζοντα τῷ αἰωνίῳ πυρὶ ταχείαν δὲ ἔχοντα τὴν πάροδον, κατέλαβε μὲ, βουλόμενος ἀποστῆναι μὲν τῆς μοχθηρᾶς καὶ πολυστενάκτου ζωῆς, καταλιπεῖν δὲ τὰς τῆς σάρκος ἕδονας, ἐπελθεῖν δὲ λοιπὸν τῇ ὀδῷ τῇ ἀγούσῃ ἐπὶ τὰς μονὰς τοῦ Κυρίου. ἐπειδὴ οὖν ἀναγκαῖον ἐστὶν, εἰ φύσει ἐν ἐπιθυμίᾳ καθέστηκε τῆς μακαρίας ὀντὸς διαγωγῆς, καὶ τὸν καλὸν καὶ ἐπαινούμενον ἔρωτα ἐσχεν ἐν τῇ ἑαυτῷ ψυχῇ, ἀγαπήσας Κύριον τὸν Θεοῦ ἡμῶν ἐξ ὀλής καρδίας,

1 καὶ κατὰ πάντα C.
2 παραθετικὴ ἀποταξαμένη τῷ βίῳ καὶ μονάσαντι F.
LETTER XXIII

appearance of avarice, and avarice has the condemnation of idolatry.¹ He should not be desirous of money,² nor treasure up unnecessary things to no avail. He who approaches God ought to embrace poverty in all things, and be pierced with the fear of God, according to him who said, "Pierce thou my flesh with thy fear, for I am afraid of thy judgments."³

The Lord grant that you may receive all these admonitions with all assurance, and that you may exhibit fruits worthy of the Holy Spirit to the glory of God, with God's approval and the assistance of our Lord Jesus Christ. Amen.

LETTER XXIII

AN ADMONITION TO A MONK ⁴

A certain man, who had come, as he said, to despise the vanity of this life and to realize that its joys have their consummation here, since they merely provide fuel for the eternal fire and pass quickly away, came to me and expressed a desire to depart from his miserable and lamentable life, to abandon the pleasures of the flesh, and to follow henceforth the path which leads to the mansions of the Lord. Now if he has really come to a desire for the truly blessed way of life, and has conceived in his soul that noble and praiseworthy affection, loving the Lord our God with his whole heart, with his

¹ Col. 3. 5. ² Mark 10. 23–24 and Luke 18. 24. ³ Psal. 119. 120. ⁴ Probably written at Caesarea, during his presbyterate.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

καὶ ἐξ ὀλής ἰσχύος, καὶ ἐξ ὀλῆς διανοίας, ὑποδείχθηναι αὐτῷ ύπὸ τῆς ύμετέρας θεοσεβείας τὰ δυσχερὰ καὶ δυσάντητα τῆς στενῆς καὶ τεθλιμμένης ὤδοῦ, ἐν ἐλπίδι δὲ αὐτῶν καταστήσαι τῶν νῦν τέως μὴ βλεπομένων, ἐν ἑπαγγελίαις δὲ ἀποκειμένων ἀγαθῶν τοὺς ἀξίως τοῦ Κυρίου.

Διὸ γράφων παρακαλῶ τὴν ἀσύγκριτον ύμῶν ἐν Χριστῷ τελειότητα τυπῶσαι, εἰ οἷόν τε εἶη, καὶ δίχα μου ποιήσαι τὴν τε ἀποταγῆν αὐτοῦ κατὰ τὸ ἄρεσκον Θεοῦ, καὶ στοιχειώθηναι αὐτὸν κατὰ τὰ δόξαντα τοὺς ἁγίοις πατράσι καὶ ἐγγράφως ύπ' αὐτῶν ἐκτεθέντα: ἡδὴ δὲ αὐτῷ προταθήναι ἄπαντα ὥσα τῇ ἀκριβείᾳ δοκεῖ τῇ ἀσκητικῇ, καὶ οὗτος αὐτὸν προσαχθηναι τῷ βίῳ, αὐθαίρετος ἀναδεξάμενον τοὺς υπὲρ τῆς εὐσεβείας ἁγώνας, καὶ υπαγαγόντα ἑαυτῶν τῷ χρήστῳ τοῦ Κυρίου ζυγῷ, καὶ κατὰ μίμησιν τοῦ δ' ἠμᾶς πτωχεύσαντος καὶ σάρκα φορέσαντος πολιτευσάμενον, καὶ κατὰ σκοτῶν δραμόντα πρὸς τὸ βραβεῖον τῆς ἀνω κλήσεως, τυχεῖν τῆς παρὰ τοῦ Κυρίου ἀποδοχῆς. ἐγὼ γὰρ σπουδᾶσοντα αὐτὸν ἐνταῦθα δέξασθαι τὸν τῆς κατὰ Θεὸν ἀγάπης στέφανον ὑπερεθέμην, Βουλόμενος μετὰ τῆς ύμετέρας θεοσεβείας ἀλείψαι αὐτὸν πρὸς τὸν τοιοῦτος ἁθλους, καὶ ἕνα ὅν ἄν υμῶν αὐτὸς ἐπιξητήσῃ ἐπιστήσαι αὐτῷ ἀλείπτην, καὶ παῖδος παιδοτριβοῦντα καὶ παλαιστὴν δόκιμον ἀπεργαξόμενον διὰ τῆς συντόνου καὶ μακαρίας ἐπιμε-

1 καὶ ... διανοίας om. E. 2 καταστήσαι A, B, D, F.
3 ὑποκειμένων B. 4 διὸ om. E.
5 ἐν Χριστῷ om. C, D. 6 αὐτῷ Ed. Ben.; αὐτοῖς MSS.
7 θεῷ add. C, D. 8 ὑπ' αὐτῶν] αὐτοῖς F.
9 προτεθήκαι E. 10 ὑπεθέμην C, D.

142
whole strength, and with his whole mind, it is incumbent upon your reverence to give him an intimation of the difficulties and hardships of the strait and narrow path, and to establish him in the hope of the blessings which are now for a time unseen, but which by promise are stored up for those worthy of the Lord.

Therefore I write to beg your incomparable perfection in Christ to mould him, if that be possible, and without my help to bring about in him the renunciation of the world according to God’s pleasure, and that he be grounded in the precepts of the holy Fathers as set forth by them in writing. And I beg that there be laid before him straightway all such rules as are approved by the strict ascetic discipline; and that he be so introduced to the life, that by voluntarily taking up the struggles for piety, submitting himself to the excellent yoke of the Lord, conducting himself in imitation of Him who became poor and endured flesh for our sake, and by running with an eye to the prize of his high calling, he may obtain acceptance with the Lord. For although he was eager to receive at this place the crown of God’s love, I put him off; because I wished to anoint him for such contests by the help of your reverence, and to place over him as anointer that one of you for whom he himself may ask, one who would train him well and make of him, by his unremitting and blessed care, an approved wrestler.

1 Among a number of works on the ascetic life which have been ascribed to Basil is a ”Book of Ascetic Discipline” (Ἀσκητικὸς Βίβλος). This discourse is an exhortation to renunciation of the world, and contains also specific directions for the monastic life. Cf. Introd. p. xxxiii.

2 2 Cor. 8. 9.


XXIV

Ἀθανασίῳ τῷ πατρὶ ὧν ἐπισκόπον Ἀγκύρας Ἀθανασίου τοῦ ὑμων ἐπισκόπου Ἀγκύρας

"Ὅτι μὲν κρείττονα εἶναι διαβολῶν ἀνθρώπου βίου τῶν χαλεπωτάτων ἐστίν, ὡς μὴ τῶν ἀδύνατων εἴπω, αὐτὸς τε πέπεισμα καὶ τὴν σήν χρηστότητα νομίζω μὴ ἀμφιβάλλειν. τὸ μέντοι μηδεμίαν παρέχειν ἐξ ἑαυτῶν λαβὴν μήτε τοῖς ἀκριβῶς ἐπιτηροῦσι τὰ πράγματα μήτε τοῖς κατ᾽ ἐπήρειαν ἐφεδρέουσιν ἣμῶν τοῖς ὁλισθήμασι, τοῦτο καὶ δυνατὸν καὶ ἵδιον τῶν συνετῶς καὶ κατὰ τὸν τῆς εὐσεβείας σκοπὸν τῶν ἑαυτῶν βίων διεξαγόντων. ἡμᾶς δὲ μὴ οὕτως εὐκολοὺς ὠν μηδὲ εὐπαραγόγους εἶναι, ὥστε ἀνεξετάστως τὰς παρὰ τῶν τυχόντων προσέσθαι καταρρήσεις. μεμνήμεθα

1 τοῦ αἰώνος om. A, B, C, D.
2 Ἀγκύρας om. A, B, E, F. Ἀθανασίῳ τοῦ ἐπισκόπου ὑπὶ τὰ κατ᾽ αὐτοῦ λεχθέντα ἀνεξετάστως οὐ παραδέχεται καὶ ὑπὶ δὲ τοῖς τέχνοις πρὸς τῇ φυσικῇ καὶ τῇ ἐκ προαιρέσεως ἐπιτείνειν ἀγάπην C.
3 τοῦτο δὴ C, D, F.
LETTER XXIV

to wound and overthrow the universal lord of the darkness of this world and the spirits of iniquity, with whom according to the blessed apostle we have "our wrestling." ¹ What then I wished to do with your help, let your love in Christ do without me.

LETTER XXIV

To Athanasius, father of Athanasius Bishop of Ancyra ²

I am myself convinced, and I presume your excellency does not doubt, that for a man's life to be above slander is one of the most difficult things in the world, not to say an impossibility. Yet to offer of one's self no opportunity either to those who watch keenly over our doings or to those who spitefully lie in wait for one's lapses, is not only possible but is the special characteristic of all who conduct their living prudently and with an eye to piety. As for me, do not consider me so complaisant or so easily led astray as to accept without investigation the disparagements of chance comers. For we

¹ Cf. Eph. 6. 12: "For our wrestling is not against flesh and blood, but against principalities and powers, against the rulers of the world of this darkness, against the spirits of wickedness in the high places."

² Written before Basil's episcopate, probably in 369. Nothing is known of this elder Athanasius, except what may be gathered from this letter. He had evidently been the object of some slanderous report concerning his treatment of his children, this report giving occasion for Basil's letter.

VOL. I.

145
γὰρ τοῦ πνευματικοῦ παραγγέλματος μὴ χρήναι προσδέχεσθαι ἀκοῦν ματαιάν παρεγγυόντως.

Πλὴν ἀλλ' ἐπειδὴ ὑμεῖς αὐτοὶ φατε, οἱ ισημερινοὶ τὸν ἀφανῶν ἐσπευδακότες, τὰ φαινόμενα τῶν ἀφανῶν εἶναι σημεία, τοῦτο ἄξιον (καὶ μὴ βαρέως δέξῃ, εἰ τι ἐν διδασκαλίας εἶδει λεχθῆσεται παρῆμων τὰ γὰρ ἁσθενῆ τοῦ κόσμου καὶ τὰ ἐξουθενημένα ἐξελέξατο ὁ Θεός, καὶ δι' αὐτῶν πολλάκις οἰκονομεῖ τὴν σωτηρίαν τῶν σοφότερων): ὁ γε μὴν λέγω καὶ παραγγέλλω ἐκεῖνο ἐστὶν πάντα μὲν λόγον, πᾶσαν δὲ πράξειν καθήκουσαν περιεσκεμμένως ἐπιτελέσθαι καὶ κατὰ τὸ ἀποστολικὸν παράγγελμα, μηδεμίαν ἐν μηδενὶ διδόναι προσκοπὴν. πρέπου γὰρ εἶναι τίθεμαι, ἀνδρὸς πολλὰ μὲν ἐπὶ μαθήσει 1 λόγων ἱδρωσάντος, ἐθνῶν δὲ καὶ πόλεων ἀρχὰς διευθύναντος, καὶ πρὸς μεγάλης προγόνων ἁρετὴν τῶν ἔχοντος, 2 τὸν βίον προκείσθαι εἰς ὑποδείγμα ἁρετῆς.

Ὡς μέντοι περὶ τὰ τέκνα διάθεσιν ὅπλη λόγῳ νῦν ὀφείλεις δεικνύειν, ὅσ γε 3 πάλαι ἐδειξάς ἀφ' οὗ πατὴρ ἔγενος, οὐ μόνον τῇ φυσικῇ στοργῇ κεχρημένος, ἤν καὶ τὰ ἄλογα παρέχεται τοῖς ἐκγόνοις, ὡς αὐτὸς τε εἴπας 4 καὶ ἡ πείρα δείκνυσιν ἀλλὰ καὶ ἐπιτείνειν τῇ ἁγάπῃ, δηλονότι

1 μαθήματι E.  
2 σχόντος E.  
3 ὡς γε] ἡστε C, D.  
4 εἰπες E.

1 Ex. 23. 1.  
2 Cf. 1 Cor. 1. 27–28: άλλα τὰ μαρὰ τοῦ κόσμου ἐξελέξατο ὁ Θεός, ἵνα τοὺς σοφοὺς κατασχύνῃ. καὶ τὰ ἁσθενῆ τοῦ κόσμου ἐξελέξατο ὁ Θεός, ἵνα κατασχύνῃ τὰ ἱσχυρά· καὶ τὰ ἁγεννὴ τοῦ κόσμου καὶ τὰ ἐξουθενημένα ἐξελέξατο ὁ Θεός, καὶ τὰ μὴ ὄντα,
are mindful of the spiritual injunction that we should not "receive the voice of a lie." ¹

However, since you yourself, who are devoted to letters, declare that things visible are tokens of the invisible, we deem it right to assert (and do not take it ill, if anything I may say shall take the form of instruction; for God has chosen the weak things of the world and the things which are contemptible, and through them often works the salvation of those that are saved ²)—now what I assert and advise is this: that we fulfil with circumspection every word and every deed that devolves upon us, and, according to the apostle's precept, that we give no offence to any man.³ For if a man has sweated much for the learning of letters, if he has directed the government of nations and cities, and if he emulates the great virtue of his forefathers, I consider it right and proper that his life be placed before us as an example of virtue.

However, as regards your disposition towards your children, you need not now give evidence of it merely by word, since you have long given such evidence of it, ever since, in fact, you became a father, for you have, as you yourself have stated and given proof, exhibited something more than that natural affection which even irrational creatures give to their offspring; but you should also intensify

¹να τὰ ὑπάρχοντα καταργῆσῃ. "But the foolish things of the world hath God chosen, that He may confound the wise, and the weak things of the world hath God chosen, that He may confound the strong. And the base things of the world, and the things that are contemptible, hath God chosen, and things that are not, that He may bring to nought things that are."

³ Cf. 2 Cor. 6. 3.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

ἐκ προαιρέσεως, ὁσίῳ ὅρας τοιαύτα ὄντα οἷα ἄξια εἶναι πατρικῶν προσευχῶν. ὡστε οὖν ἡμᾶς δεῖ περὶ τούτων πείθεσθαι, ἀρκοῦσα γὰρ ἡ ἐξ αὐτῶν τῶν γινομένων ἐστὶ μαρτυρία.

'Εκεῖνο γε μὴν οὐκ ἀκαίρων προσθείναι τῆς ἀληθείας ἐνεκεν, ὅτι οὖν ὁ ἀδελφὸς Τιμόθεος ἔστιν ὁ χωρετισκόπος ὁ ἀνένεγκὼς ἡμῖν τὰ θρυλ-γηθέντα. οὔτε γὰρ ἐν συντυχίᾳ οὔτε διὰ γράμματος φαίνεται μικρὸν τι ἡ μεῖζον διαβολῆς ἐχόμενον περὶ σοῦ θεογέμενος. ὡστε ἀκηκοέναι μὲν τι οὐκ ἀρνούμεθα, οὐ μὴν Τιμόθεον εἶναι τὸν τὰς διαβολὰς σοι κατασκευάζοντα. ἄκοινοις δὲ πάντως, εἰ μὴ τι ἄλλο, τὸ γοῦν τοῦ Ἀλεξάνδρου ποιήσωμεν, τὴν ἐτέραν τῶν ἀκοῶν ἀκεραίαν ταμιευσόμεθα 1 τῷ διαβαλλομένῳ.

XXV

'Αθανασίῳ ἐπισκόπῳ Ἀγκύρας 2

'Απήγγειλάν μοί τινες τῶν ἐκ τῆς Ἀγκύρας πρὸς ἡμᾶς ἀφικομένων, πολλοὶ δὲ οὕτως καὶ 3 οὐδὲ ἀριθμῆσαι ράδιον, σύμφωνα δὲ πάντες φθειρό-μενοι, σὲ, τὴν φίλην κεφαλὴν (πῶς ἄν εὐφημώς εὑποιμί;) οὖν ὡς ἡδίστα μεμνημῆσαι ἡμῶν, οὐδὲ κατὰ 4 τὸν σεαυτοῦ τρόπον. ἐμὲ δὲ οὐδὲν

1 ταμιευσόμεθα A, B, F.
2 Ἀθανασίῳ Ἀγκύρας ἦστε φαγερώσαν αὐτῷ πόθεν ἐκινῆθη πρὸς τὴν κατ᾽ αὐτοῦ λύπην C.
3 οὖς add. A, B, C, D, F. 4 κατὰ om. C, D, F.

1 Cf. Plutarch’s Life of Alexander.

148
LETTER XXV

your love, deliberately, of course, in proportion as you see that they are worthy of a father's prayers. Accordingly we do not need to be convinced about these things, for the evidence of the facts themselves is sufficient.

It is not out of place, however, for the sake of truth to add this: it is not our brother Timotheus, the Coadjutor Bishop, who brought us these reports. For neither in conversation nor in correspondence has he been found uttering anything great or small about you which contained any slander. Hence, while we do not deny that we have heard something, yet it was not Timotheus who got up these slanders against you. But though we do certainly hear them, whatever else we do, we shall at any rate follow the example of Alexander, and keep one ear untainted for the accused.¹

LETTER XXV

To Athanasius, Bishop of Ancyra²

Some of those who come to us from Ancyra—and these are many and more than I can count, but all agree in what they say—have told me that you, my dear friend, have made mention of me (how may I say it without offence?) in no very pleasant terms nor in your usual manner. So far as I am concerned,

² Like the previous letter, written before his episcopate, probably in 369. Cf. Diekamp, Byzant. Zeitschr. 18, 1909, 3 ff. This Athanasius was appointed to the see of Ancyra through the influence of Acacius, Bishop of Caesarea, a leader of the Homooeans. However, he himself acquired a reputation for orthodoxy. Cf. Greg. Nyss. Contra Eunom. 1, 11, 292. Basil speaks highly of him in Letter XXIX.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

ἐκπλήσσει τῶν ἀνθρωπίνων, εὐ ἵσθι, οὐδὲ ἀπροσδόκητος ἐστὶν οὐδενὸς τῶν πάντων μεταβολῆ, πάλαι τὸ τῆς φύσεως ἀσθενὲς καὶ τὸ εὑπερήτρεπτον πρὸς τὰ ἐναντία καταμαθόντα. ὅθεν οὔτ’ εἴ τι τῶν ἡμετέρων μεταπέπτωκε, καὶ ἐκ τῆς πρότερου τιμῆς λοιδορία καὶ ὑβρεῖς περὶ ἡμᾶς νῦν γίνονται,1 μέγα τοῦτο ποιοῦμαι. ἀλλ’ ἐκεῖνό μοι2 παράδοξον ὡς ἀληθῶς καὶ ὑπερφυές ἐφάνη, τὸ σὲ εἶναι τὸν οὗτο πρὸς ἡμᾶς ἔχοντα, ὡστε ὁργίζεσθαι ἡμῖν καὶ χαλεπαίνειν, ἢδη δὲ τι καὶ ἀπειλεῖν, ὡς ο τῶν ἀκουσάντων λόγος.

Τῶν μὲν οὖν 3 ἀπειλῶν καὶ πάνυ (εἰρήσεται γὰρ τάληθες) κατεγέλασα. ἡ κομιδὴ γ’ ἀν παῖς εἶνη,4 τὰ τοιαύτα μορμολύκεια δεδοικώς.5 ἐκεῖνο δὲ μοι καὶ φοβερὸν καὶ πολλῆς φροντίδος ἄξιον 6 ἔδοξε, τὸ τὴν σὴν ἀκρίβειαν, ἤν ἐν ὀλίγοις ἐρεισμά τε ὀρθότητος, καὶ τὴς ἀρχαιας καὶ ἀληθινῆς ἀγάπης σπέρμα εἰς παραμυθίαν ταῖς ἐκκλησίαις σῶξεσθαι πεπιστεύκαμεν,7 ἐπὶ τοσοῦτον 8 τῆς παρούσης καταστάσεως μετασχείν, ὡστε τὰς παρὰ τῶν τυχόντων βλασφημίας κυριοτέρας ποιήσασθαι τῆς μακρᾶς ἡμῶν πείρας, καὶ πρὸς τὴν τῶν ἀτόπων ὑπόνοιαν χωρὶς ἀποδείξεων 9 ὑπαχθῆμαι. καίτοι 10 τὶ λέγω ὑπόνοιαι; ὃ γὰρ ἀγανακτήσας καὶ διαπειληθεῖς, ὡς φασίν, οὐχ ὑπονοοῦντος, ἀλλὰ τοῦ ἡδι σαφῶς καὶ ἀναντιρρήτως πεισθέντος δοκεῖ πως ὁργῆν ἐνδεδείχθαι.

'Αλλ’, ὅπερ 11 ἐφην, ὕπτι τῶν καιρὸν τοῦτον 12

1 ἐγγίνονται E. 2 τὴν πρώτην add. C, D, F.
3 τῶν μὲν οὖν] τὸ μὲν οὖν τῶν E. 4 παίσιν ἢν E.
5 δεδοικόσιν E. 6 ἄξιον om. E.
7 πεπιστεύκαμεν F; πεπιστεύκειμεν C, D. 8 τοσοῦτο E.
8 ἀποδείξεως E. 10 καὶ E. 9 τοσοῦτο E. 11 ὅπερ A, B.
10 καὶ E. 11 ὅπερ A, B.
150
however, nothing in human affairs astonishes me, rest assured, and a change of mind on the part of any man in the world would not be unexpected, since I have long since learned the weakness of human nature and its liability to move around to the opposite. Therefore I consider it of no great consequence if any change has taken place in my relations, and if, instead of respect as aforetime, abuse and insult are now our portion. This, however, strikes me as truly incredible and monstrous, that you should be the person so disposed towards us as to be angry and bitter, indeed going so far now as to utter threats, as they say who have heard.

Now so far as the threats are concerned, I utterly—for the truth must be told—laugh them to scorn. Indeed I should be a mere child to be terrified at such bugbears. However, that a man of your acumen, whom we have believed to be preserved as one among few for the consolation of the churches, as a bulwark of the true faith and a seed of the original and true love—that you should so far share the existing state of feeling, as to place more weight upon blasphemies of men of no account than on your long experience of us, and are thus led to suspect the truth of outlandish tales without proof, this to us seems ground for both fear and serious anxiety. Yet why do I say “suspect”? For the man who has become indignant and has uttered violent threats, as they say, seems somehow to have displayed the wrath, not of a person who suspects, but of one who has already been clearly and undeniable convinced.

12 τῶν καὶ ὁτῶν A, B, E, F.
ἀναφέρομεν τὴν αἰτίαν. ἐπεὶ πόσον πόνον ἤν, ὡς θαυμάσιε, ἐν ἐπιστολῇ βραχεῖα περὶ διὸν ἐβουλοῦν ὦν ὥν μόνῳ διαλεχθῆναι; ἦ, εἰ μὴ ἐπίστευες γραφῇ τὰ τοιαῦτα, πρὸς ἐαυτὸν 1 μεταπέμψασθαι; εἰ δὲ πάντως ἐξειπέειν ἐδεί, καὶ ἀναβολὴ 2 καίρον ὦκ ἐδίδου τὸ δυσκάθεκτον τῆς ὁργῆς, ἀλλ' ἐνι γε τινὶ τῶν ἐπιτηδείων καὶ στέγειν ἀπὸρρήτα πεφυκότων, ἐξῆν δὴ ποὺ τῶν πρὸς ἡμᾶς λόγων χρήσασθαι διακόνω. νυνὶ δὲ τίνος οὐχὶ περιτε- 
θρύλληται τὰ ὧτα τῶν καθ' ὁποιανδήποτε χρείαν ύμῶν 3 ἐπιφοιτῶντων, ὡς ἡμῶν ἀταῖς τινὰς γραφόντων καὶ 4 συγγραφόντων; 5 τούτῳ γὰρ σε κεχρησθαί φασὶ τῷ ρήματι, οἱ ἐπὶ λέξεως τὰ σὰ δηγούμενοι. ἐμὲ δὲ ἐπὶ πολλὰ τὴν διάνοιαν ἀγαγόντα 6 τὴν ἐμαυτοῦ, οὐκέν τι μᾶλλον τῆς ἀμηχανίας ἀφῆσιν.

"Ὡστε με καὶ τοιούτων τι εἰσῆλθε. 7 μὴ τις τῶν αἵρετικῶν κακουργῶς τοῖς ἑαυτοῦ συγγράμμασί τὸ ἑμὸν ὄνομα παραγράψας, 8 εὐλύπησε σοῦ τὴν ὀρθότητα καὶ ἑκείνην ἀφεὶναι τὴν φωνὴν προ- 
ηγάγετο. οὐ γὰρ δὴ τοῖς γεγραμμένοις ὑφ' ἡμῶν πρὸς τοὺς ἀιώμοιον καὶ οὐσίαν τολμήσαντας εἰπεὶν τὸν Τίον καὶ Θεὸν τῷ Θεῷ καὶ Πατρί, ἡ 
πρὸς τοὺς κτίσμα καὶ ποιήμα ἐναῖ τῷ Πνεῦμα τὸ ἄγιον βλασφημῆσαντας, ταῦτην ἄν ἐπενεγκείν 
τὴν λοιοσμίαι ἡμέρσχον ὁ τοὺς μεγάλους ἄθλους ἑκείνους καὶ περιβολῶν ὑπὲρ τῆς ὀρθοδοξίας 
διενεγκών. λύσας δὲ ἄν ἡμῖν τὴν ἀμηχανίαν

1 σεαυτῶν A, B, C, D.  2 ἡ ἀναβολὴ A, B; ἀναβολὴς F.  
3 ἡμῖν F.  4 ἦ A.  
5 καὶ συγγραφόντων om. E.  6 ἀναγαγόντα C, D.  
7 εἰσῆλθε om. E.  8 παρέγγραφας B, D.
LETTER XXV

But, as I said, I attribute the cause of your outbreak to these present times. Otherwise, how much trouble would it have been, my dear sir, for you to have discussed with me any question you pleased in a brief letter, as though alone with me; or, if you would not entrust such matters to writing, to have summoned me to your presence? But if you were constrained by all means to speak out, and your uncontrollable temper would allow you no time for delay, still it would have been possible, I presume, to employ one of those who are close to you and capable of keeping secrets as an agent of communication with us. But as it is, who is there, of those who visit you on any errand whatsoever, in whose ears it has not been dinned that we write and compose "pestiferous things?" For this is the expression which those who quote you word for word declared that you used. But though I have considered the matter earnestly, my mind nevertheless offers me no relief from my perplexity.

Consequently, some such thought as this has come to me, that perhaps some heretic maliciously subscribed my name to his own writings, and thus grieved your orthodoxy and enticed you to say those words? For surely you, who have borne those great and far-famed struggles on behalf of orthodoxy, could never have endured to bring this slander upon the works¹ which we have composed, against those who dare say that the Son and God are unlike in substance to the God and Father, or against those who blasphemously assert that the Holy Spirit is a thing created and made. You would yourself relieve

¹ For Basil's dogmatic works, cf. Introd. p. xxxiii.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

αὐτός, εἰ ἐθελήσειας τὰ κινήσαντά σε πρὸς τὴν καθ' ἥμων λύπην φανερῶς ἐξαγγείλαι.

XXVI

Καισαρίῳ τῷ ἄδελφῳ Γρηγορίου.¹

Χάρις τῷ Θεῷ, τῷ τὰ ἑαυτοῦ θαυμάσια καὶ ἐν ἑν ἑν ² σοὶ ἐπιδείξαμένῳ,³ καὶ ἐκ τοσοῦτον θανάτου διασώσαντί σε, τῇ τε πατρίδι καὶ ἡμῖν τοῖς προσήκουσί. λείπεται δὴ οὖν μὴ ἀχαρίστους ἡμᾶς ὑφήναι μηδ' ἀναξίους τῆς τοσαῦτης εὐεργεσίας. ἀλλὰ κατὰ δύναμιν τὴν ἠμετέραν διαγγέλλειν τοῦ Θεοῦ τὰ παράδοξα, καὶ ἢς ἔργω πεπειράμεθα φιλανθρωπίας, ταύτῃ ἀνυμνεῖν, καὶ μὴ λόγῳ μόνῳ ἀποδίδοναι τὴν χάριν, ἀλλὰ καὶ ἔργῳ τοιοῦτον γενέσθαι, οἴον καὶ νῦν εἰναι πειθόμεθα, τεκμαιρόμενοι τοῖς περί σε θαύμασί.

Καὶ ἐτὶ μειξόνως τῷ Θεῷ δουλεύειν παρακαλοῦμεν, προσθήκαις ἀεὶ τὸν φόβον συναύξοντα καὶ εἰς τὸ τέλειον ἑν ⁴ προκόπτοντα, ἵνα φρόνιμους οἰκονόμους τῆς ζωῆς ἡμῶν ἀποδειχθῶμεν, εἰς ἢν ἡμᾶς ἡ ἀγαθότης τοῦ Θεοῦ ἐταμιεύσατο. εἰ γὰρ καὶ πᾶσιν ἡμῖν πρόσταγμα ἐστὶ παραστήσας ἑαυτούς τῷ Θεῷ, ὥσεὶ ἐκ νεκρῶν ζώντας, πῶς οὐκ ἐπιλάκτω τοῖς ψυχῳθεῖσιν ἐκ τῶν πυλῶν τοῦ θανάτου; τούτῳ δ' ἂν μάλιστα, ὡς ἐμαυτῶν

¹ τῷ ἄδελφῳ Γρηγορίου om. A, B, C, D; Καισαρίῳ ἄδελφῳ Γρηγορίου τοῦ θεολόγου βασίλειος F.
² ἐν om. A, B, C, D. ³ ἐπιδεικνυμένῳ A, B, C, D.
⁴ ἄεὶ add. E, F.

154
LETTER XXVI

us of this perplexity, if you should be willing to proclaim openly what things have stirred you to be so offended with us.

LETTER XXVI

To Caesarius, the brother of Gregory

Thanks be to God, who has shown His wonders even in your person, and has preserved you from such a death, for your fatherland and for us your relations. So therefore it remains for us not to be seen ungrateful or unworthy of such a benefaction. Rather we ought with all our strength to herald the wonders of God and to celebrate that kindness which in very deed we have experienced, and not in word alone to render thanks, but also in deed to prove ourselves such as we believe we already are, judging by the miracles wrought in your case.

We urge you to be an even better servant of God, ever more and more increasing your fear of Him, and advancing to perfection, to the end that we may prove ourselves wise stewards of the life for which the goodness of God has spared us. For if we all are commanded to present ourselves to God, as those that are alive from the dead, how much the more are they so commanded who have been lifted from the very gates of death? This command can

1 This letter, written in 368, is addressed to the youngest brother of Gregory Nazianzenus. The work Πνευματικα or Quaestiones de Rebus Divinis is attributed to him with grave doubt. The occasion for this letter is the narrow escape from death which Caesarius experienced during an earthquake on the tenth of October, 368. Shortly after receiving this letter, he retired from the world.

2 Rom. 6. 13.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

πείθω, κατορθωθείη, εἰ βουληθείημεν ἀεὶ τὴν αὐτὴν ἔχειν διάνοιαν, ἣν εἴχομεν 1 ἐπὶ τοῦ καιροῦ τῶν κινήσεων. πάντως γὰρ ποιεῖ λέγει ἡμᾶς τοῦ βίου τὸ μάταιον, καὶ ως οὐδὲν πιστῶν τῶν ἀνθρωπίνων, οὔτε 2 πάγιον, οὔτω ῥαδίως ἔχοντων τὰς μεταπτώσεις. καὶ πού τοῖς μεταμελεῖται μὲν ἐκ τῶν εἰκότων ἐνεγίνετο ἡμῖν, ἐπὶ τοῖς φθάσασιν ὑπόσχεσις 3 δὲ περὶ τῶν ἐφεξῆς, εἰ περισσοθείημεν, Θεῷ δουλεύειν 4 καὶ ἑαυτῶν ἐπιμελέσθαι 5 κατὰ πᾶσαν ἀκρίβειαν. εἰ γὰρ τινὰ ἡμῖν ἐννοιαν ὁ τοῦ θανάτου κίνδυνος ἐπικείμενος ἐνεδίδον, οὐμαί σε ἡ ταῦτα ἡ ἐγγύτατα 6 τούτων ἀναλογίζεσθαι τηνικάτα.

"Ὡσε ἀναγκαῖον ὀφλήματος ἐκτίσει υπεύθυνοι καθεστήκαμεν. ταῦτα ὅμοι μὲν περιχαρῆς ὅπῃ τῇ τοῦ Θεοῦ δωρεᾶ, ὅμοι δὲ καὶ φροντίδα ἔχων περὶ 7 τῶν μελλόντων, ἀπεθάρπησα ὑπομνήσαι τῇ τελειότητά σου. σοὶ δὲ ἐστὶν εὑμενώς καὶ ἡμέρως προσέθη οἱμῶν τοὺς λόγους, ὡς καὶ ἐν ταῖς κατ’ ὀφθαλμοὺς ὀμιλίαις σοι ἡν 8 σύννηθες.

XXVII

Εὐσεβίῳ ἐπισκόπῳ Σαμοσάτων

"Οτε τῇ τοῦ Θεοῦ χάριτι καὶ τῇ βοηθείᾳ τῶν σῶν προσευχῶν μικρὸν ἀναφέρεσθαι ἐκ τῆς ἀρρωστίας

1 εἴχομεν C, D, E. 2 οὐδὲ E, F. 3 ὑπόσχεσις B, D. 4 δουλεύσεις F. 5 ἐπιμελέσθαι E, F. 6 ἐγγύτατα B. 8 σοὶ ἥν om. C, D.

1 Written in the spring of 368; cf. Schafer, p. 34. This

156
LETTER XXVII

best be fulfilled, I am convinced, if we resolve always to preserve the same attitude of mind that we had at the moment of our perils. For assuredly we were reminded of the vanity of life, and also that there is nothing trustworthy or fixed and solid in human affairs, seeing that they so readily admit of change. And no doubt there arose in us, probably, in the first place, a feeling of repentance for the past, and then a promise regarding the future, that, if we should survive, we should serve God and be mindful of ourselves with all strictness. For if the imminent danger of death suggested any subject for our reflection, I believe you bethtought yourself of this or something very much like it, at that time.

Accordingly we stand responsible for the payment of a binding debt. I have made bold to remind your perfection of this obligation because I am at once overjoyed at God’s gift and solicitous concerning the future. It is yours to receive our words graciously and calmly, as was your wont when we conversed together eye to eye.

LETTER XXVII

To Eusebius, Bishop of Samosata

When by God’s grace and the aid of your prayers I seemed to be recovering a little from my illness letter is of no particular interest except as containing one of the many complaints expressed by Basil against the ill-health which followed him through life. It is the first of the twenty-two letters addressed by Basil to Eusebius, Bishop of Samosata (about 260 miles from Caesarea), from 360 to 373. Cf. Theodoret, Ecc. Hist. iv. 15, and v. 4.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

εδοξα καὶ ἀνελεξάμην ἐμαυτοῦ τὰς δυνάμεις, τότε ὁ χειμῶν ἐπεγένετο, οἷκοι καθείργων ἡμᾶς καὶ κατὰ χώραν μένειν συναναγκάζων. εἰ γὰρ καὶ πολλῷ κοινότερος τῆς συνηθείας ἀπήμυτησεν, ἀλλ' ὥσπερ ἔμοι γε ἱκανὸς εἰς ἐμπόδιον, ὅπως ὀδοιπορεῖν δι' αὐτὸν, ἀλλ' οὐδὲ μικρὸν προκύπτειν τοῦ δωματίου δύνασθαι.

'Εστὶ δὲ μοι οὕτω πολλῷ, τὸ καταξιούσθαι διὰ γραμμάτων ὅμιλεῖν τῇ θεοσθείᾳ σου, καὶ τῇ ἐπιτίδι τῶν ἀντιδόσεων ἥδη προαναπάσθαι. εἰ δὲ καὶ ὁ καιρὸς ἐνδοιχ, καὶ τῆς ἐξοίης ἡμῖν ἐπὶ λείποντο χρόνος, καὶ μὴ ἀποροῦν ἡμῖν τῇ ὁδῷ ὁ λιμὸς ἀπεργάσατο, ταχὺ ἄν τύχοιμεν τῆς ἐπιθυμίας περὶ τῶν σῶν προσευχῶν καὶ ἐπὶ τῆς ἐστίας σε καταλαβόντες κατὰ πᾶσαν σχολὴν τῶν μεγάλων θησαυρῶν τῆς ἐν σοὶ σοφίας ἐμφορηθεῖμεν.

XXVIII

Τῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ Νεοκαισαρείας παραμυθητικῇ

Ἀπῇτε μὲν τὰ συμβάντα τὴν ἡμῶν αὐτῶν παρουσίαν, τοῦ τε τὴν τιμὴν τῷ μακαρίῳ τοῖς οἰκειοτάτοις ὑμῖν συνεκπληρῶσαι, καὶ τοῦ τῆς ἐπὶ τῷ πάθει κατηφείας ἀπ' ἄτης τῆς θέας τῶν σκυθρωποτέρων συμμετασχεῖν, καὶ ὡστε τῶν ἀναγκαίων βουλευμάτων ὑμῖν κοινωνήσαι. ἐπεὶ δὲ τὴν σωματικὴν συνάψειαν πολλὰ τὰ

1 ἐμαυτοῦ A, B, C, D, E. 2 ἐπ' E, F.

1 Written in the spring of 368; cf. Schaefer loc. cit. This letter is conjectured to be on the death of Musonius, Bishop.
and had regained my strength, then winter came on, shutting us up at home and forcing us to remain where we were. For even if this winter were much milder than usual, nevertheless it would be severe enough to keep me, not only from travelling, but from being able to put my head even for a moment outside my chamber.

However, it is no slight privilege to be permitted to converse with your reverence by letter, and to rest at ease meanwhile in the hope of your reply. Yet should the opportunity arise, and should a period of life still be in store for us, and should the famine not render our journey impossible, with the help of your prayers we may soon obtain our desire; and finding you at your fireside we may in all leisure be filled with the great treasures of your wisdom.

LETTER XXVIII

To the Church of Neocaesarea, consolatory

That which has befallen you called for our presence, that we might both join with you, our dearly beloved friends, in doing honour to the blessed dead, and share, through the very act of gazing upon your sorrowing countenances, the dejection caused by your calamity, and also that we might participate in making the necessary plans for you. But since many causes prevented my being with you in person, of Neocaesarea. In Letter CCX, addressed to the notables of Neocaesarea, Basil speaks of “the blessed Musonius, whose teaching still rings in your ears.”
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

diakowlynvta, leipomevov &in dià tòv grámmatos kouwoneiv ýmín tòv paróntvwn.

Tà mév óùn tòv ándrôs thaúmata, èf' oìs kai máliosta tìn òxìmian ýmíno afórtton úpárcheiv
logiçómeba, 1 ou't án epístolhîs métрон úpodeixaito, kai àlllos àðròn àndràgathìmáton plèthei
tòn lýgon prosoágeiv, 2 óútò swmpetptowkías tìs
ψυχhís ýmòn èpì tì lýtph. tì gàr tòw èkeinw
itoûtvon, oìno àtì tìs mónímhs ýmòn èkpesteîn h
swopássthai åçioun nòmiothína; pánta mév gàr
àðrówes èisápaç eìspèin ììîìhànou, tò dé èk mérous
légewn, dédoika mh prôdoasia õxìh tìs álètheias.
oìxetai ànìrì diafâneîstata ðì tòw kàth èautòn
pásiw ómou tòis ànthrôpòwnis 3 úperevenegkouw 4
áagadois, èreisima pàtrídos, èkklhshìnwn kòsmos,
stúlos kai èdhrâìoma tìs álètheias, stêrêwma
tìs eîs Xristòn pîstewos, oikeîois ásfálleia,
duðmakôstatos tòis úpêvntiois, fûlax pàtrwów
theimòn, nevteropoiias èchthòn en èautò dèiknu
rò palaìon tìs 'Ekklhshias xîma, oûn àpò twos
iêropreptwos eìkonos, tìs àrkhiaîa katastássewos,
tò eîdos tìs úp' autòn èkklhshìas diamorphôw,
os òtòs autò súnggenomêwos tòis prò dia-
kodínw étwon kai èpektêina fôosthùrôwn tròppon
èklaímpasì sughgenovména dòkeîn.

Oútwos ouðèn oîkodhèn ouðè nevèrâs frehôs
eûrhìa prôoèferen ò ànìrì, àllhà, kata tìn
Mooûsêwos 5 eûllogìan, ñìdei prôkômìzewn èk tòw
àðútow tìs karðiâs autòw àgadwòw 6 òthsamwòw

1 logiçêsthai editi; logiçómeba Α, B, C, D, F.
2 prôçgev Α, B.
3 ànthrôpòis B.
4 úpereveγkow B, E.

160
the only recourse left me was to share your present troubles by letter.

Now this man’s wonderful qualities, which more than all else cause us to judge his loss unendurable, cannot be contained within the compass of a letter, and besides it would be untimely now, when our souls are so prostrate with grief, to undertake to enumerate his many noble achievements. For which of his deeds is such as either to slip from our memory or to be deemed worthy of silence? To recount them all together were impossible, yet to mention a portion would, I fear, be disloyal to the truth. A man has passed away who was quite manifestly far superior to his contemporaries in the sum total of human virtues; a bulwark of his native land, an ornament of the churches, a pillar and foundation of the truth, a firm support of the faith of Christ, a steadfast helper for his friends, a most formidable foe for his enemies, a guardian of the ordinances of the Fathers, an enemy of innovation; in his own person he showed forth the ancient character of the Church, so moulding on the model of the early organization, as after a sacred image, the form of the church under his charge, that those who were of his society seemed to live in the society of those who shone like stars two hundred years and more ago.

Thus it was that our friend produced nothing of his own, no discovery of modern thought, but, in accordance with the Lord’s blessing of Moses, he knew how to bring forth out of the hidden and goodly treasures of his heart “the oldest of the old store,

---

5 Musiaeus A, B, C, D, F. 6 āγαθῶν om. E.
παλαιὰ παλαιῶν καὶ παλαιὰ ἀπὸ προσώπου νέων. ταύτη τοι καὶ τῆς προτειμῆσεως οὐ κατὰ τῆν ἡλικίαν ἐν τοῖς συλλόγοις τῶν ὀμοτίμων ἡξιοῦτο, ἀλλ’ ὑπὲρ πάντας ἢν τῷ τῆς σοφίας ἀρχαῖω, ἐκ κοινῆς συνχωρήσεως τὸ πρωτεῖον καρπούμενον. ὅσον δὲ τῆς τοιαύτης ἀγωγῆς τὸ κέρδος οὐδεὶς ἄν ἐπιζητήσει, πρὸς ὑμᾶς ἀποβλέπων. μόνοι γὰρ ὃν ἵσμεν, ἢ κομιδῇ γε ἐν ὁλίγοις, ἐν χειμώνι τοσοῦτο καὶ λαῖλαπι πραγμάτων ἀκύμαντον τῇ ἔκεινον κυβερνῆσει τὴν ἕως διηγάγυτε. οὐ γὰρ ἤπατο ὑμῶν αἰρετικῶν πνευμάτων ζάλη, καταποντισμοὺς ἐπάγουσα καὶ νανάγια ταῖς εὐπεριτρέπτοις ψυχαῖς. μήτε δὲ ἄψαιτό ποτε, ὦ Δέσποτα τῶν ἄπαντων, ὃς τῷ σῷ θεράποντι Γρηγορίῳ, τῷ ἐξ ἀρχῆς πηξαμένῳ τῇν κρητιδα τῇς Ἐκκλησίας, τῆς ἐπὶ μὴ κιστον ἀταραξίας τῇν χάριν ἐδωκας.

'Ἡν μὴ προδώτε ὑμεῖς ἐν τῷ παρόντι καιρῷ μηδὲ θρήνων ἀμετρίᾳ, καὶ τῷ ἐκδότους ἐαυτοὺς τοῖς λυπηροῖς ποιήσαι, τοὺς τῶν ἀναγκαίων καιροὺς τοῖς ἐφεδρεύουσι πρόησθε. ἀλλ’ εἰ δεὶ πάντως θρηνεῖν (ὡσπερ οὖν οὐ 3 φημι, ἣν μὴ ὀμοιωθῶμεν ἐν τούτῳ τοῖς μὴ ἔχουσιν ἐλπίδα), ὑμεῖς δὲ, εἰ δοκεῖ, οἶον τις χρόνος πενθήρης τῶν κορυφαίων ἐαυτῶν προστησάμενοι, ἐμμελέστερον μετ’ ἔκεινον τὸ συμβὰν ἀποκλαῦσατε.

Καίτοιγε εἰ καὶ μὴ ἐπ’ ἐσχάτων γῆρως

1 σὺν C, D, F.
2 ἀταξίας B.
3 οὐ om. A, B, C, D.
4 γῆρως B, C, D.
162
LETTER XXVIII

and the old in place of the new coming on."  
Therefore he was thought worthy of precedence at
the synods of his peers, not in accordance with his age
in years; but he was placed above them all by reason
of the age of his wisdom, and by common consent
enjoyed the primacy among them. How great was
the gain of such guidance no one would question, if
he but looked upon you. For you alone of all I know,
or at least you among a very few, have been able, amid
this great storm and tempest of affairs, to pass your
lives, thanks to his guidance, unshaken by the waves.
For you have not been reached by buffets of the
blasts of heresy, which lead to drowning and ship-
wreck for souls which are easily upset. And
may this never happen, O Master of all, who
didst grant the favour of long tranquillity to Thy
servant Gregory, who at the beginning laid firm the
foundations of your church.

To this church, my friends, do you not at this
present crisis prove false, nor, by immoderate lamenta-
tion and by abandoning yourselves to manifestations
of grief, offer opportunity for constraint to those who
lie in wait for your destruction. But if you must by
all means lament (which indeed I do not admit, lest
we be likened in this to those who have no hope),
do you, if so it seems best, like a funeral chorus
select your leader, and in more harmonious strains
bewail with him your loss.

And yet, even though he did not reach extreme

1 Cf. Lev. 26, 10. καὶ φάγεσθε παλαιὰ καὶ παλαιὰ παλαιῶν,
καὶ παλαιὰ ἐκ προσώπου νέων ἐξόιστε. "You shall eat the
oldest of the old store, and, new coming on, you shall cast
away the old."
2 Gregory Thaumaturgus.
3 Cf. 1 Thess. 4, 12.
Ηλαυνεν ο άνήρ, ἀλλ' οὐν τοῦ γε χρόνου ένεκεν τῆς ὑμετέρας ἐπιστασίας οὐκ ένδεώ εἰς τοῦ βίου. τοῦ τε σώματος τοσοῦτον μετείχεν, ὅσον τῆς ψυχῆς τὸ καρτερὸν 1 ἐπὶ 2 ταῖς ἀλγηδόσιν αὐτοῦ δεικνύει. τυχὼν δὲ ἀν τίς ύμων ὑπολάβοι ὅτι καὶ ο άρχόνς άφησις συμπαθείας καὶ προσθήκη φίλτρου, οὐχὶ ἀφορμὴ κόρου τοῦ πειράτεισιν ἐγγίνεται, 3 ὅστε, ὅσῳ ὑπὲρ κρόνων τῆς εὐεργεσίας πεπείρασθε, τοσοῦτο τὰ μᾶλλον τῆς ἀπολείψεως ἐπαισθάνεσθε. 4 σῶματος δὲ δικαίου καὶ σκὶ τοῦ παντὸς ἄξον χεὶς εὐλαβείσι. καὶ εἰπὲ γε πολλοὺς ύμῶν ἐπὶ ταύτης εἰναι τῆς διανοίας: οὐδὲ γὰρ αὐτὸς ἀμελῶς ἔχειν τοῦ ἀνδρός φημι χρήμαι, ἀλλ' ἀνθρωπίνως συμβουλέω τὸ λυπηρὸν διαφέρειν· ἐπεὶ ὅσα γε ἐστὶν ἐπειδ' ἀποκλαιομένους τὴν ζημίαν οὐδὲ ἐμὲ αὐτὸν διαφεύγει.

Σιωπᾶ μὲν γλώττα ποταμοῖς ἔσα τὰς ἁκοὰς ἐπικλύζουσα: καρδίας δὲ βαθος οὐδεὶ τέως καταληπτόν, δεύερων ἀσθενέστερον ὅσα γε πρὸς ἀνθρώπους, διυπτάμενον οὐχεῖται. τίς οξυτερός 5 ἐκεῖνον προιδέσθαι τὸ μέλλον; τίς ἐν οὖτω σταθερώ καὶ παγίῳ τῆς ψυχῆς ἥθει, ἀστραπῆς ταχίον τοῖς πράγμασιν ἐπελθεῖν ἱκανός; ὃ πόλις πολλοὶ μὲν ἴδῃ προειλημμένη πάθειν, ὑπ' οὕνεν ἡγεῖται τίς ἀυτὰ τὰ καίρια τοῦ βίου ζημιωθεῖσα. γινὲν ἀπίστηθη ποι ὁ κάλλιστος· ἐκκλησία δὲ μέμυκε, καὶ σκυθρωπαξοῦσι πανηγύρεις, καὶ τὸ ἱερὸν συνεδριον τον

1 καρτερίκον F. 2 εν A, B, C, D, F. 3 γίνεται A, B, C, D, F. 4 Sic omnia MSS.; Ed. Ben. ἐπαισθάνεσθαι.
old age, still as regards the period of his authority over you there was no deficiency in his life. Of the body he partook long enough to reveal his soul’s endurance in his moments of affliction. But perhaps someone among you may object and say that length of days means increase of fellow-feeling and augmentation of affection, and that no occasion of satiety arises in those who have had long experience of another, so that the longer you have experienced his kindness, the more sensible you are of its loss; but of the body of a righteous man even a shadow is most precious in the eyes of the devout. And would that many of you were of this way of thinking; for though I do not myself assert that you should be unmindful of our friend, yet I counsel you to bear your grief as men should; since I myself also am not unaware of all that can be said by those who bewail their loss.

Silent is his tongue, which like a mighty torrent flooded our ears; his heart, whose depth has not hitherto been fathomed, now more unsubstantial than a dream, judged by human standards, has taken wings and fled. Who possessed a keener vision than he to foresee the future? Who, in spite of a habit of soul so calm and steadfast, could more swiftly than lightning dash into action? O city, that hath many times ere now been in the grasp of woes, yet never by any affliction hath been so stricken to the very vitals of its life! Now your fairest garland has faded; your church is hushed, your assemblies are sad of countenance, the sacred synod yearns for its

---

1 i.e. even a short and fleeting life in the body.

5 ὃξυτερον editi; ὃξυτερος C, D, F. 6 σου E.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

κορυφαίου ἐπιποθεὶ: λόγοι δὲ μυστικοί τῶν ἐξηγητήν ἀναμένουσιν, οἱ παῖδες τῶν πατέρα, οἱ πρεσβύται τῶν ἡλικιώτην, οἱ ἐν τέλει τῶν ἐξαρχῶν, ὁ δῆμος τῶν προστάτην, οἱ βίον δεδομένοι τον τροφεα'. πάντες αὐτὸν ἐκ τῶν οἰκειοτάτων ὀνομάτων ἄνακαλούμενοι, ἐπὶ οἰκείω πάθει, οἰ-κείου ἐαυτῷ ἑαυτῷ καὶ προσήκοντα ἔκαστος τὸν θρήνον αἴρουσιν.2

'Αλλὰ ποῦ μοι ὁ λόγος ύφ' ἡδονῆς τῶν δακρύων ἐκφέρεται; οὐκ ἀνανήψομεν; οὐχ ἡμῶν αὐτῶν γενησόμεθα; οὐκ ἀποβλέψωμεν3 πρὸς τὸν κοινὸν Δεσπότην, ὅς ἐκαστόν τῶν ἁγίων τῇ ἰδίᾳ γενεᾷ ἐπιτρέψας ὑπηρετήσασθαι, τοῖς καθήκοισι χρόνοις πρὸς ἑαυτὸν πάλιν ἀνεκαλέσατο; ὥν ἐν καιρῷ τῶν ἐκείνου φωνῶν ὑπομνήσθητε, ὅς ἐκκλησιάζων ύμῶν4 ἀεὶ διεστέλλετο, Βλέπετε, λέγων, τοὺς κύνας, βλέπετε τοὺς κακοὺς ἐργάτας, πολλοὶ οἱ κύνες; τί λέγω κύνες; λύκοι μὲν οὖν βαρεῖς, ἐν ἐπιφανείᾳ προβάτων τὸ δολερὸν ὑποκρύπτοντες, παιπαχοῦ τῆς οἰκουμένης τὸ Χριστοῦ ποίμνιον εἰσαπώσιν. οὖς φυλακτέον ύμῶν, ἐγχειρορικοῦ τινὸς ποιμένος ἐπιστάσια. ὃν υμέτερον μὲν αἰτήσαι, φιλονεικίας πάσης καὶ φιλοπρωτίας τὰς ψυχὰς καθαρεύοντας, τοῦ Κυρίου δὲ ἀναδείξατι, ὦς ἀπὸ τοῦ μεγάλου προστάτου τῆς ἐκκλησίας ύμῶν Γρηγορίου μέχρι τοῦ μακαρίου τοῦτον, ἀλλοι ἐπ' ἀλλω προστίθεις καὶ συναρμόζων ἀεὶ, οἵον ἐκ τινός ἁρμοῦ λίθων πολυτελῶν, θαυμαστὸν οἰον κάλλος τῆς ἐκκλησίας ύμῶν ἐγαρίσατο. ὥστε οὐδὲ τῶν ἐφέξης ἀπελπιστέου. οἶδε γὰρ Κύριος τοὺς ὄντας αὐτὸν, καὶ ἀγάγοι οὖν 5

1 αὐτφ editi; ἑαυτφ Ε.  2 ἐρούσιν A, B, C, D, F.

166
leader; the mystic words await their expounder, the children their father, the elders their comrade, those in authority their chief, the people their protector, those who lack sustenance their nourisher; as they all call him back by the names most appropriate to each, to help them each in their own distress, they raise each his own lament in terms fitting to himself.

But whither is my speech swept from its course through indulgence in these tears? Shall we not return to sobriety of mind? Shall we not recover our self-control? Shall we not fix our gaze upon our common Lord, who suffers each of His saints to serve his generation, and then at the fitting moment calls him back again to Himself? Remember now in season the words of him who as he preached used always expressly to command you, saying: "Beware of dogs, beware of evil workers."¹ The dogs are many. Why do I say dogs? Nay, rather ravenous wolves who hide their deceit under the guise of sheep, and everywhere in the world scatter Christ's flock. Against these you must guard, under the care of a watchful shepherd. For him it is yours to petition, purging your souls of all rivalry and ambition for preferment, but to point him out is the Lord's part, who, beginning with Gregory, the great leader of your church, down to the present blessed departed one, has added one to the other, ever fitting them together like costly gems to a setting, and thus has graciously blessed you with the marvellous beauty of your church. Therefore we must not despair of their successors, either. For the Lord knoweth who

¹ Phil. 3. 2.

³ ἀναβλέψωμεν B, C. ⁴ ὅμιον om. F. ⁵ ἂν om. E.

167
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

eis to mesaon tou s par' hymon tychon ou prosodokomeneous.

Paleai me thelonata tov logon pausasathai, he odynhe zhis kardias our epitrpepi, all' epigliptow umin pro tov pateron, proz zhis orithis pisteos, proz tou makarion toouton, diaasthiai tihn vuxhn, oikeion ekaston eautou to spoudaizomeanon kriantata, kai zhis efi ekatera ton pragmation ekbaros prwtou autoun apolaiosein hymomenon umede, to tois pollois symbaivon, proz ton plhson tin tihn koinon epimeleiasin apowtheiai, eite, ekastou zhi autou1 diaonia twn pragmaton olymproonato, labein upantas idion eautois kakon diat zhis ameleiasin epistassaseineus.

Taunta eite ws geitonon sympathedia, eite ws omoloxoivoton koinoniva, eite kai, oipere altheoseteron esti, tih zhis agapheis peithomenon2 nomyo kai ton ek tou sIWphei kaidunon ekklinopton, metapasheis eunioas deyaste, pepeiromeno oti kauchhma hymon esti, kathaper kai hmeis umon, eis tihn hmeran tou Kurion, kai esti, ek tou dothsiromenon poimenos umin, 3 esti plion ton syndevsmo tihn agapheis einodeismetha, 4 proz pantele diastasin, o mi geinoito, mnde 4 estai zhi tou Theou xariti, oud an autous eiptoiimi vin blasphimov ovdin,5 toouto de dievnei umas bouloametha, oti e kai proz tihn eirhnin ton ekklisiwn syntraxonta hymon ouk eschomein ton makarion, diat tinas, ws autous hymin 6 diebebasoito,

1 aitor A, B, C, D, E, F. 2 peithomeno B, E.

168
are His, and will bring forward those whom we perhaps do not expect.

Although I have long been wishing to bring these words to an end, the grief of my heart does not permit me. But I charge you by the Fathers, by the true faith, by this one who has now gone to his rest, to arouse your souls, each one of you judging the business at hand to be his very own, and considering that, whatever the outcome of the matter shall be, each will himself primarily enjoy the benefits. Do not, as is usually the case, thrust the care of the common weal upon your neighbour, and then, as each one in his own thoughts makes light of the matter, all find to their surprise that they have drawn upon themselves through their neglect a personal misfortune.

Accept these words with all good-will, as a token either of neighbourly sympathy, or of the fellowship of men of like faith, or, more truly, of the fellowship of men who obey the law of love and shun the peril of silence; accept them in the conviction that you are our pride, as we likewise are yours, till the day of the Lord, and that on the shepherd to be given you depends whether we shall be united still more by the bond of love, or be brought to complete estrangement. May God forbid this last; and by the favour of God it will not be; nor would I myself now say anything obnoxious. Of this, however, we wish you to be assured, that even if we did not have our departed brother working with us for peace among the churches, because of what were, as he himself assured us, certain preconceptions, never-

\[\text{LETTER XXVIII}\]

3 \(\text{\eta om. C, D.}\)
4 \(\text{oúδέ A, B, C, D.}\)
5 \(\text{oúδέ ἐν A, B, C, D.}\)
6 \(\text{ημάς A, B, F.}\)
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

προλήψεις, ἀλλ' ὁδ' ἑκ τῆς πρὸς αὐτὸν ὀμοδοξίας καὶ τοῦ ἀεὶ κοινωνὸν ἐπικαλεῖσθαι τῶν πρὸς τοὺς αἱρετικοὺς ἄγωνων, ὑπὸ μάρτυρι τῷ Θεῷ καὶ ἀνθρώποις τοῖς πεπειραμένοις ἡμῶν, οὐδένα καὶρὸν ἀπελεύθημεν.

XXIX

Τῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ Ἀγκύρας παραμυθητικῇ

Πολὺν ἡμῖν χρόνον σιωπῆν ἐνεποίησεν ἡ ἐκπληξίς τῆς βαρυτάτης ἀγγελίας τοῦ συμβαίνοντος κακοῦ. ἔπει δὲ μικρὸν πως τῆς ἀφασίας ἀνηνέγκαμεν, ἢν, ὡς οἱ βροντῆς μεγάλης τὰς ἀκοὰς καταπλαγέντες,1 πεπόθαμεν, ἀναγκαῖος νῦν ἐπεστενάξαμεν τῷ συμβαίντι, καὶ μεταξύ ὀδυρομένοι τῇ ἐπιστολῇ ὑμῖν ἐξεπέμψαμεν· οὐ παρακλήσεως ἔνεκεν (τίς γὰρ ἂν καὶ λόγος εὐρεθείη τοσαύτης συμφορᾶς ἱατρός;), ἀλλὰ τὴν ὀδύνην τῆς καρδίας ἡμῶν, καθ' ὅσον δυνατόν, ἐκ τῆς φωνῆς ταύτης ὑμῖν διασημαίνοντες. νῦν ἐδέσμην τῶν Ἱερεμίου θρήνων, καὶ εἰ δὴ τίς ἄλλος τῶν μακαρίων ἀνδρῶν συμφορᾶς μέγεθος 2 ἐμπαθῶς ἀποδύρατο.

Πέπτωκεν ἀνήρ, στῦλος τῷ ὄντι καὶ ἑδραίωμα τῆς Ἐκκλησίας;3 μᾶλλον δὲ αὐτὸς μὲν πρὸς τὴν μακαρίαν ἑωθῇ ἀρθείς ἀφ' ἡμῶν οἴχεται· κίνδυνος δὲ οὐ μικρός, μὴ 4 πολλοὶ τῷ ἐρείσματι τούτῳ ὑπ-


170
LETTER XXIX

thereless on no occasion did we fail of unity of belief with him or neglect to summon his help in our struggles against the heretics; God be our witness, and the men who know us.

LETTER XXIX

To the Church of Ancyra, consolatory

The shock of the most grievous tidings of the misfortune which has befallen you has kept us silent for some time. But now that we have recovered in some slight measure from the speechlessness with which we have been affected, like those who are smitten with deafness by a loud clap of thunder, we cannot help uttering a cry of sorrow over the event, and in the midst of our lamentations sending you this letter. We write not so much to console (for what words could be found to heal so great a misfortune?), but to show you by this message, so far as it is possible to do so, the distress of our own heart. I am in need now of the lamentations of Jeremias, or of some other blessed man who has passionately bemoaned a mighty misfortune.

A man has fallen, who was in truth a pillar and foundation of the Church; or rather, as far as he himself is concerned, he has been lifted up to a life of bliss and has gone from us; but there is no little danger that many will fall together with this support

1 Written in the spring of 368; cf. Schäfer, loc. cit. On the consolation, cf. Letters XXIV and XXV. The occasion of this letter is the death of Athanasius, Bishop of Ancyra.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

eξαιρεθέντι συγκαταπέσωσι, καὶ τὰ σαθρὰ τινῶν φανερὰ γένηται. κέκλεισται στόμα παρῆσίας τε δικαίας καὶ λόγους ¹ χάριτος ἐπ’ οἰκοδομὴ τῆς ἀδελφότητος βρύνων. οἴχεται δὲ φρενὸς βουλευματα, τῆς ὄντως εν Θεοί κινουμένης. ὃ ποσάκις μοι (κατηγορήσω γὰρ ἐμαυτοῦ) ἐπήλθεν ἁγανακτῆσαι κατὰ τοῦ ἀνδρός, ὥτι ὀλος ² γενόμενος τῆς ἐπιθυμίας τοῦ ἀναλύσαι ³ καὶ σὺν Χριστῷ εἶναι, τὸ ἐπιμείναι ἐν ⁴ τῇ σαρκί οὐ προετίμησε δι’ ἡμᾶς. πρὸς τίνα λοιπῶν τὰς φροντίδας τῶν ἐκκλησίων ὑπερθώμεθα; τίνα κοινωνῶν τῶν λυπηρῶν λάβωμεν; τίνα μεριστὴν τῆς εὐφροσύνης; ὁ τῆς δεινῆς ὄντως καὶ σκυθρωπῆς ἐρημίας. πῶς ἀκριβῶς ὤμοιώθημεν πελεκανὶ ἐρημικῷ;

'Ἀλλὰ μὴν τὰ γε συναφθέντα μέλη τῆς Ἐκκλησίας, οἶον ὑπὸ ψυχῆς τινὸς, τῆς ἐκείνου προστασίας, εἰς μίαν συμπάθειαν καὶ ἀκριβῆ κοινωνίαν συναρμοσθέντα, καὶ φυλάσσεται διὰ τοῦ συνδέσμου τῆς εἰρήνης πρὸς τὴν πνευματικὴν ἀρμολογίαν παγίως, καὶ φυλαχθῆσεται εἰς ἅνει, ⁶ τοῦτο τοῦ Θεοῦ χαριζομένου, ἔδραίᾳ μένειν καὶ ἀμετακίνητα τῆς μακαρίας ἐκείνης ψυχῆς τὰ ἔργα, ὅσα ἐνήθησε ταῖς Ἐκκλησίαις τοῦ Θεοῦ. πλὴν ἀλλ’ ἢ ὁ ἁγῶν ὡς μικρὸς, μῆ τινες πάλιν

¹ λόγοις A, B, E, F. ² Sic omnia MSS.; ὀλος editi. ³ ἀναχώρησαι F. ⁴ ἐν om. E, F. ⁵ ἐκκλησιαστικῶν A, B. ⁶ εἰσαεὶ D.
which has been taken from under them, and that
the rottenness of certain persons will be laid bare.
A mouth has been sealed which abounded in
righteous frankness and gushed forth words of grace
for the edification of the brotherhood. Gone are
the counsels of a mind which truly moved in God.
Alas! how often (for I shall accuse myself) have I
been moved to indignation against our friend,
because, in the desire which came to possess him
“to be dissolved and to be with Christ,” he did not
prefer, for our sakes, “to abide still in the flesh!”
To whom shall we now transfer the cares of the
churches? Whom now shall I take as a partner in
my sorrows? Whom as a sharer in my joy? Alas
for my loneliness, truly wretched and sad! How
precisely is our state like that of the pelican of the
wilderness?

Yet assuredly the limbs of the Church knitted
together by his superintendence as by a soul, and
joined into a union of sympathy and true fellowship,
are not only steadfastly preserved by the bond of peace
for the spiritual communion, but will also be
preserved for ever, if God will grant us this boon—
that all the works of this blessed soul, wherein he
laboured for God’s churches, may rest firm and
unshaken. And yet the struggle is not slight, that

1 Cf. Phil. 1. 23 and 24: καὶ τὸ αἰρῆσομαι, οיך γνωρίζω· συν-
έχομαι γὰρ έκ τῶν δύο, τὴν ἐπιθυμίαν ἔχων εἰς τὸ ἀναλῦσαι, καὶ
σὸν Χριστὸν εἶναι, πολλοὶ μᾶλλον κρείσσον· τὸ δὲ ἐπιμένειν ἐν τῇ
σαρκὶ, ἀναγκαίοτερον δὲ ὑμῖς. *And what I shall choose I
know not. But I am straitened between two: having a
desire to be dissolved and to be with Christ, a thing by far
the better. But to abide still in the flesh is needful for
you.*

2 Cf. Psal. 102. 6.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

ἐρίδες ¹ καὶ διχοστασίαι, ἐπὶ τὴν ἐκλογὴν τοῦ προστατοῦντος ² ἀναφυεῖσαι, πάντα ὁμοῦ τὸν κόπον ἐκ τῆς τυχούσης ἐρίδος ἀνατρέψωσιν.

XXX

Εὐσεβίῳ ἐπισκόπῳ Σαμοσάτων

Εἰ πάσας ἐφεξῆς γράφομι τὰς αἰτίας ὦφ' ὁν μέχρι τοῦ παρόντος κατεσχέθην, καὶ πάνω ὤρμημένος πρὸς τὴν σὴν θεοσέβειαν, ἱστορίας ἄν μήκος ἀπέραντον ἑκπληρώσαμι. νόσους μὲν ἔπαλλήλους, καὶ χειμῶνος ἐπάχθειαν, καὶ πραγμάτων συνοχὴν παρήμι λέγεω, γνώριμα ὧντα καὶ ἦδη προδεδηλωμένα τῇ τελειώτητι σου. νῦν δὲ καὶ ἤν μόνην εἴχον τοῦ βίου παραμυθίαν τὴν μητέρα, καὶ ταύτην ἄφηρέθην ὑπὸ τῶν ἀμαρτίων μου. ³ καὶ μὴ καταγελάσης μου ὡς ἐν τούτῳ τῆς ἡλικίας ὀρφανίαν ἀποδυρωμένου ⁴ ἀλλὰ σύγγνωσί μοι ψυχῆς χωρίσμον ἀνεκτῶς μὴ φέροντι, ἦς οὐδὲν ἀντάξιον ἐν τοῖς λειτουργεῖοι ⁵ ὀρῷ. πάλιν οὖν μοι ὑπέστρεψε τὰ ἀρρωστήματα, καὶ πάλιν ἐπὶ κλίνης κατάκειμαι, ἐπὶ μικρὰς ⁶ παντελῶς τῆς δυνάμεως σαλεύων, καὶ μόνον οὐκ ⁷ ἐφ' ἐκάστης ὦρας τὸ ἀναγκαῖον πέρας τῆς ζωῆς ἐκδεχόμενος.

Αἱ δὲ ἐκκλησίαι σχεδὸν τῷ παραπλησίως τῷ σώματί μου διάκειναι ἀγαθής μὲν ἐλπίδος οὐδὲ—

¹ ἐρίς E. ² μεταστάντος C, D. ³ μοῦ om. C, D, F. ⁴ ἀποδυρωμένον C, D.
LETTER XXX

we may prevent the springing up again, over the election of a superintendent, of strifes and dissensions, and the utter overturning, as the result of a petty quarrel, of all our labours.

LETTER XXX

To Eusebius, Bishop of Samosata

If I should relate at length all the reasons for my having been hitherto detained at home, altogether eager as I am to set out to see your reverence, I should traverse an interminable length of narrative. I pass over a succession of bodily ills, a tedious winter, vexatious affairs of business, all of which are known and have previously been explained to your excellency. And now, as the result of my sins, I have been bereft of the only solace that I possessed, my mother. Pray do not deride me for bewailing my orphanhood at this time of life, but forgive me for not having the patience to endure separation from a soul whose like I do not behold among those who are left behind. My ill-health has now returned again, and again I lie on my bed, tossing about on the anchorage of my little remaining strength and ready at almost every hour to accept the inevitable end of life.

The churches exhibit a condition almost like that of my body: for no ground of good hope comes into

---

1 Written in the summer of 368; cf. Schäfer, *loc. cit.*
2 St Emmelia. For Basil's family, see Introd., p. xiii.

---

5 λιπομένοις C, D. 6 μακρᾶς E. 7 μονονουχὶ C, D.
Collecting Letters of Saint Basil

μιᾶς ύποφαινομένης, ἀεὶ δὲ πρὸ τὸ χείρον τῶν πραγμάτων ύπορρέοντων. τέως δὲ ἡ Νεοκαισαρεία καὶ ἡ Ἀγκύρα ἐδοξάν ἔχειν διαδόχους τῶν ἀπελθόντων, καὶ μέχρι τοῦ νῦν ἡσυχάζουσιν. ἀλλ’ οὖν ἡμῖν οἱ ἐπιβουλεύοντες ποίησαι τι τού θυμοῦ καὶ τῆς πικρίας ἄξιον μέχρι τοῦ παρόντος συνεχωρίθησαν. καὶ τούτῳ τὴν αἰτίαν ταῖς σαίς ύπερ τῶν ἐκκλησίων πρεσβείαις προδότικὸς ἡμεῖς ἀνατίθημεν. ὥστε μὴ ἀποκάμψῃς προσευχόμενος ύπερ τῶν ἐκκλησίων καὶ δυσωπῶν τὸν Θεόν, τοὺς καταξιωθέντας ἐξυπηρετεῖσθαι τῇ ὁσιότητι σου πάμπολλα πρόσειπε.

XXXI

Εὐσεβίῳ ἐπισκόπῳ Σαμοσάτων ²

Οὕτως ἡμᾶς ὁ λιμὸς ἀνίκητο, διότι πάνω ἀναγκαῖο ἡμῖν ἔστιν ἡ ἐπι τῆς πόλεως διαγωγή, ἡ οἰκονομία προκεν, ἡ συμπαθεία τῶν θλιβομένων. οὖν οὖν οὐκ ἔνων ἡδυναμὴ κοινωνία τῆς ὀδοῦ τῶν αἰδεσιμωτάτων ἀδελφοὶ Τιμίω, ὁποίοι ὔν ὕποκ αὐτῷ δὴ τοῦτο εὐθυμίας ἐνεκεν ἀδελφοῦ ἔχω προσαγορευμένοι, ἀλλὰ διὰ τὴν προσοῦσαν ἡμῖν ἐκ φύσεως οἰκεῖοτητας αἰματος γὰρ ἐσμὲν τοῦ αὐτοῦ.

"Ὅς ἐποίει μὲν κάμνει, οὖν τὴν σὴν ἔλαθε

1  οὖδέν E, F.
2  Εὐσεβίων ἐπισκόπῳ Α, B, C, D, E, F.
3  περι E.
4  ὑποῦσαν A, B, C, D.

1  ὦς. Basil and his church.
2  Written in the autumn of 368; cf. Schäfer, loc. cit.
3  Cf. Letter XCI, where the Eastern bishops number 176.

176
LETTER XXXI

view, and their affairs are constantly drifting toward the worse. Meanwhile Neocaesarea and Ancyra seem to have received successors to those who have passed away, and thus far they have remained quiet. Nay, neither have those who plot against us so far succeeded in accomplishing anything worthy of their wrath and bitterness. And the reason for this we frankly attribute to your intercession in behalf of the churches. Therefore do not grow weary of praying for the churches and of importuning God. To those who have been deemed worthy to serve your holiness give many greetings.

LETTER XXXI

To Eusebius, Bishop of Samosata

The famine has not yet released us, so that it is incumbent upon me to linger on in the city, partly to attend to distribution of aid, and partly out of sympathy for the afflicted. Consequently not even now am I able to accompany on his journey our most revered brother Hypatius, whom I am entitled to address as brother not merely by way of conventional salutation, but on account of the natural relationship which exists between us; for we are of the same blood.

Your honour also is aware of the nature of the among the evils of their churches that unscrupulous officials appropriate for their own use funds intended for the poor.

Nothing is known of this Hypatius. Cf. Gregory of Nazianzus, Letter CXCII, addressed to a correspondent of the same name.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

τιμιότητα. λυπεῖ δὲ ἡμᾶς ὅτι πᾶσα παραμυθίας ἐλπὶς ἐπ᾽ αὐτῷ περικέκοπται, τῶν ἐχόντων τὰ τῆς ἱάσεως χαρίσματα οὐδὲν ἐπ᾽ αὐτοῦ τῶν συνήθων ἐνεργῆσαι συνχωρηθέντων, διὸ πάλιν τῶν σῶν προσευχῶν τὴν Βοήθειαν ἐπικαλεῖται. σὺ δὲ τὰ συνήθη προστίθησαι, καὶ διὰ τὴν σεαυτοῦ περὶ τοὺς κάμνοντας εὐσπλαγχνίαν, καὶ δι᾽ ἡμᾶς τοὺς ὑπὲρ αὐτοῦ πρεσβεύοντας, παρακλήθητι, καὶ, εἰ μὲν οἶνον, πρὸς έαυτὸν 1 μεταστέλλαι τοὺς ἐνλαβεστάτους 2 τῶν ἀδελφῶν, ὅστε ὑπὸ ταῖς σαίς οὔσει προσαχθῆναι αὐτῷ τὴν ἐπιμέλειαν· εἰ δὲ τούτῳ ἁδύνατον, μετὰ γραμμάτων αὐτὸν προπέμψαι καὶ συστήσαι τοῖς ἐμπροσθεν καταξίωσον.

XXXII

Σωφρονίῳ μαγίστρῳ 3

Απολαύει τοῦ καιροῦ καὶ ὁ θεοφιλέστατος ἀδελφός ἡμῶν Γρηγόριος ὁ ἐπίσκοπος· ὅδιναται γὰρ μετὰ πάντων καὶ αὐτὸς ἐπηρεαίς ἀλλεπαλλήλους, 4 ὡσπερ τισὶ πληγαῖς ἀπροσδοκήτοις, τυπτόμενος. ἀνθρωποι γὰρ μὴ φοβούμενοι τῶν Θεοῦ,

1 σεαυτὸν F.  2 corrected to εὐσεβεστάτους alia manu F.  3 διὰ Γρηγόριον ἐπίσκοπον add. C.  4 ἐπαλλήλους C, D.

1 Written in 369. This Sophronius, a native of Cappadocian Caesarea, was an early friend and fellow-student of both Basil and Gregory Nazianzenus while at Athens. He entered the Civil Service, and soon rose to high office. In A.D. 365 he was appointed Prefect of Constantinople, as a reward for warning the Emperor Valens of the attempted usurpation by Procopius; cf. Amm. Marc. xxv. 9. He is

178
LETTER XXXII

malady of this Hypatius. It grieves us that all hope of comfort for him is cut off, for those who possess the divine gifts of healing have not been permitted to apply any of the customary cures in his case. Therefore he again calls upon you for the aid of your prayers. May I entreat you to intercede for him in your usual manner, both on account of your own kindness of heart towards all who are in trouble, and on account of us who intercede in his behalf; and, if it is possible, be pleased to summon the most pious of the brethren to your presence, that their treatment may be applied to him under your eyes; but if this is impossible, consent to send him on his way with a letter and to recommend him to those ahead.

LETTER XXXII

To Sophronius, the Master

Our brother Gregory, the bishop, most beloved of God, is getting the benefit of these times; for he like everybody else is distressed by the acts of insolence upon insolence with which he is constantly smitten, as it were by unexpected blows. For men who are without fear of God, and are probably also known chiefly from the letters of Gregory and Basil, invoking his good offices for various persons; cf. Letters LXXVI, XCVI, CLXXVII, CLXXX, CXCH, and CCLXXII; also Greg. Naz. Letters XXI, XXII, XXIX, XXXVII, XXXIX, XCI, CXXXV.

1 Gregory of Nazianzus is meant here. He was not a bishop at this time; and Maran suggests that οὐ κεκοιμημένος is a marginal gloss crept into the text. Gregory the Elder cannot be meant here, because he did not adopt the monastic life.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

tάχα ποι παίρνοντας ταύτα, υπό τούτους μεγέθους τών κακον βιαζόμενοι, ἐπηρεάζοντιν αὐτῶν ὡς χρήματα Καισαρίου παρ' αὐτῶν εἰληφότος.

Καὶ οὖ τῷ τῆς ζημίας βαρύ, πάλαι γὰρ ἔμιθε χρημάτων ὑπερορᾶν ἀλλ' ὡς μικρὰ παντελῶς δεξάμενοι τῶν ἐκεῖνων, διὰ τὸ ἐπὶ οἰκέταις αὐτοῦ γενέσθαι τῶν βίων καὶ ἀνθρώποις οὐδὲν οἰκετῶν αἱρετωτέροις τῶν τρόπων, οἱ κατὰ πολλὴν ἄδειαν τὰ πλείστου ἄξια διανειμένου ἐλάχιστα παντελῶς ἀπέσωσαν τούτοις: ἀ νομίζοντες μηδενὶ ὑποκείθαι, εὐθὺς ἀνάλωσαν εἰς τοὺς δεσμούς, καὶ διὰ τὴν ἑαυτῶν προαίρεσιν καὶ διὰ τὴν φωνήν τοῦ κατοιχομένου. λέγεται γὰρ τοῦτο εἰπεῖν ἀποθνήσκων, ὅτι τὰ ἐμὰ πάντα βούλομαι γενέσθαι τῶν πτωχῶν. ὡς οὖν διάκονοι τῆς ἐντολῆς τοῦ Καισαρίου, εὐθὺς αὐτὰ ὡκονόμησαν συμφερόντως. καὶ νῦν περιέστηκε πενίᾳ μὲν Χριστιανοῦ, πολυπραγμοσύνη δὲ τῶν ἀγοραίων ἐνώς. διὸ ἐπῆλθε τῇ πάντα ἐπαινετῆς του καλοκαγαθία δηλώσαι, ἴνα καὶ τῶν ἄνδρα τιμῶν, ὅν ἐκ πάλαι του γνωρίζεις, καὶ τῶν κύριον δοξάζου τῶν εἰς ἑαυτὸν ἀναδεχόμενον τὰ τοῖς δούλοις αὐτοῦ γινόμενα, καὶ ἡμᾶς τιμῶν τοὺς ἐξαιρέτους σεαυτοῦ, καὶ διαλεχθῆς τῷ Κόμητι τῶν θησαυρῶν περὶ αὐτῶν τὰ εἰκότα, καὶ

1 Kυρίου A, B, C, D, E; χριστοῦ F.
2 ἑαυτοῦ E.

1 Gregory’s brother; cf. Letter XXVI. Caesarius had died shortly before, bequeathing all his property to the poor, and leaving Gregory as executor. His house, however, was looted by his servants, and his brother could find but a comparatively small amount of money. Furthermore, a number of persons, shortly afterwards, presented themselves as creditors of his estate; and their claims, though incapable
under the compulsion of a multitude of evils, insolently abuse him on the ground that Caesarius borrowed money from them.

Now the loss of the money is no serious matter, for he learnt long ago to disregard wealth; but the fact is that the executors received very little of Caesarius's wealth, because his estate got into the control of slaves and men no better than slaves in character; and the executors then distributed the most valuable effects under full authority to do so, and reserved very little indeed for these men; and since they considered that this little was not pledged to anyone, they immediately distributed it among the needy, both according to their own preference and in accordance with the words of the departed. For he is reported to have said on his death-bed, "I wish all my possessions to belong to the poor." Therefore, as ministers of Caesarius's behest, they immediately bestowed these possessions in alms, as was expedient. And now we have this outcome—a Christian's poverty, on the one hand, and, on the other, the busy haggling of a market-lounger. I bethought me, accordingly, of disclosing the matter to that noble heart of yours so worthy of all praise, that honouring this man, whom you have known from of old, glorifying the Lord, who accepts as done to Himself what is done to His servants, and honouring us your chosen friend, you might tell the Prefect of the Treasury what may reasonably be said concerning Gregory, and of proof, were paid. Others, however, kept coming forward, until at last no more were admitted. Then a lawsuit was threatened. Disliking all this, Basil writes this letter to Sophronius seeking his aid. Cf. Greg. Naz. Letter XXIX.

1 i.e. Gregory the priest must deal with creditors and claimants.

2
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

τρόπων ἐπινοήσης, τῇ μεγάλῃ σαυτοῦ συνέσει, ἀπαλλαγῆς τῶν ἐφυβρίστων τούτων καὶ ἀφορήτων ὀχλήσεων.

Πάντως δὲ οὑδεὶς οὕτως ἀγνοεῖ τὸν ἄνδρα, ὡστε περὶ αὐτοῦ τι τῶν ἀπρεπῶν ὑπολαβεῖν, ὡς ἄρα τῶν χρημάτων περιεχόμενος σχηματίζεται τὰ τοιαῦτα. ἐγγύθεν γὰρ τῆς ἐλευθεριότητος αὐτοῦ ἡ ἀποδείξις· ἢδέως ἔξεσται τῶν λειψάνων τῆς οὐσίας αὐτοῦ τῷ ταμιεώ· ὡστε ὑποδεχθῆναι μὲν αὐτοῦ τὴν οὐσίαν, τὸν δὲ συνήγορον τοῦ ταμιείου λέγοντα πρὸς τοὺς ἐπιφυμομένους καὶ ἀπαίτεῖν τὰς ἀποδείξεις, διὰ τὸ ἡμέτερον πρὸς τὰ τοιαῦτα ἀνεπιτήδειον. ἔξεστι γὰρ μαθεῖν τῇ τελειώτητί σου, ὅτι ἐως ἔξῆν, οὐδεὶς ἀπῆλθεν ἀποτυχῶν ὃν ἐβούλετο, ἀλλὰ τὸ ἐπιζητούμενον ἀπονήτη ἐκαστος ἐκομίσατο, ὡστε καὶ μεταμέλειν τοῖς πολλοῖς διότι μὴ πλέον ἤτησαν ἀπ' ἀρχῆς. δ' καὶ μάλιστα πολλοὺς ἐποίησε τοὺς ἐπηρεαστάς· πρὸς γὰρ τὸ τῶν προλαβῶντων ὑπόδειγμα ἀφορώντες, ἄλλος ἄλλον διαδέχεται συκοφαντῶν.

Πρὸς οὖν ταῦτα πάντα τὴν σὴν σεμνότητα παρακαλούμεν στῆναι, καὶ ὡσπερ τι βεῦμα ἐπισχεῖν καὶ διακόψαι τῶν κακῶν τὴν συνέχειαν. οἴδας δὲ ὅτι θεοθήκεις τῷ πράγματι, ὡστε μὴ ἀναμένειν παρ' ἦμῶν διδαχθῆναι τὸν τρόπον, οὐ δὲ ἀπειρίαν τῶν τοῦ βίου πραγμάτων, καὶ αὐτὸ τούτο ἀγνοοῦμεν, πῶς ἂν γένοιτο ἦμιν τῆς ἀπαλλαγῆς τυχεῖν. καὶ σύμβουλος οὖν καὶ προστάτης

182
may, by your great sagacity, devise a means of relief from these insolent and intolerable annoyances. Surely no one is so ignorant of Gregory as to suspect him of unseemly conduct, saying that he so clings to his money that he invents all these stories. Indeed, the proof of his liberality is at our own door: he has gladly relinquished the remnant of Caesarius's estate to the Treasury; so that this estate has now been received, and it is now the counsel of the Treasurer that, dealing with the parasites that cling to Gregory, is demanding their proofs, in view of the unfitness of men of our class for such business. For your excellency should be informed that, while it was possible, none of these people departed disappointed in his wishes; on the contrary, everyone obtained what he demanded without any trouble, so that the majority are actually sorry that they did not ask for more in the first place. In fact, it was chiefly this practice that multiplied the number of these insolent men; for with their eyes on the example of the already successful applicants, one false claimant succeeded another.

It is against all these things, therefore, that we beg your august reverence to take a stand, and first to check and then to stop altogether this succession of troubles, which flows on like a river. You know how you can help the situation, so that you need not wait to be informed of the method by us; for we, through our inexperience of worldly affairs, are ignorant in just this matter also—of how we are to find relief. So become yourself both our adviser and

1. ἐπινοήσας F. 3. εξ E, F.
2. ἐνυβρίστων E. 4. σεμνοπρέπειαν E.
5. ἀναμείναι E.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

αὐτὸς γενοῦ, τὸ εἴδος τῆς βοηθείας διὰ τῆς μεγάλης σεαυτοῦ φρονήσεως ἐξευρόν.¹

XXXIII

'Αβουργίῳ ²

Καὶ τῆς οὖν παλαιὰν ἑταρείαν οἶδε τιμᾷν, καὶ ἀρετὴν αἰδείσθαι, καὶ κάμνουσι συναλγεῖν, ὥς αὐτὸς σὺ; ἐπεὶ οὖν τὸν θεοφιλέστατον ἅδελφον ἣμῶν Γρηγόριον τὸν ἐπίσκοπον κατέλαβε πράγματα, οὕτε ἄλλως φορητὰ καὶ μάλιστα τῷ ἦθει αὐτοῦ ὑπεναντία, ἐδοξεῖν ἥμιν κράτιστον εἶναι ἐπὶ τὴν σὴν καταφυγεῖν προστασίαν καὶ παρὰ σοῦ τινὰ πειραθῆναι ³ εὐρέσθαι λύσιν τῶν συμφορῶν.⁴ συμφορὰ γὰρ ἐστὶν ἰφόρητος πράγματα ἀναγκάζεσθαι λέγειν τὸν μὴ πεφυκότα μηδὲ βουλόμενον, καὶ χρῆματα ἀπαίτεισθαι τὸν πένητα, καὶ ἐλκεσθαι εἰς τὸ μέσον καὶ δημοκοπεῖσθαι τὸν πᾶλαι δι’ ἱσυχίας τὸν βίον παρελθεῖν κρίναντα. εἰτε οὖν τῷ Κόμητι τῶν θησαυρῶν διαλεχθῆναι χρήσιμον εἶναι κρίνεις εἰτε τισὶν ἐτέροις, τῆς σῆς ἀν εἰῃ συνέσεως.

¹ ἐξευρίσκων Α, B, C, D.
² 'Αβουρτῖῳ solus Vaticanus.
³ πειραθῆναι om. Α, B, C, D, E.
⁴ συμφορῶν Α, B, C, D, F; λυπηρῶν edd.

¹ Written in 369. Aburgius was an influential lay com-patriot of Basil's; cf. Letters XXXIII, LXXV, CXLVII, 184.
LETTER XXXIII

our protector, and by means of your great wisdom discover the right form of help.

LETTER XXXIII

To Aburgius

And who knows how to honour an old friendship, to revere virtue, and to sympathize with those who labour, so well as yourself? Accordingly, since our brother Gregory the bishop, most beloved of God, is involved in difficulties, which in any case would be intolerable and are particularly uncongenial to a man of his character, we have decided that it is best to take refuge in your protection and to try and find in you some relief from his misfortunes. For it is an intolerable calamity that one so disinclined by nature or desire should be compelled to plead in cases at law, and that one vowed to poverty should be dunned for money, and that one who long ago determined to pass his life in seclusion should be dragged into the open and be practised upon by demagogues. Now whether it is the Prefect of the Treasury to whom in your judgment it would be useful to speak, or other officials, is a question that must depend upon your own wisdom to determine.

CLXXVIII, CCCIV, and CXCVI, the latter attributed also to Gregory Nazianzene.

2 This Gregory is clearly Gregory of Nazianzus, mentioned in the previous letter, and not Basil's real brother. The difficulties referred to are also those described in the previous letter. The words τὸν ἐπίσκοπον have crept into the text from the margin.
XXXIV

Ἐνσεβίῳ ἐπισκόπῳ Σαμοσάτων ¹

Πῶς ἂν σωπήσαμεν ἐπὶ τοῖς παροῦσιν; ἢ, τοῦτο καρτερεῖν μὴ δυνάμενοι, ἀξίον τινα λόγον τῶν γινομένων εὐροῖμεν, ώστε μὴ στεναγμῷ προσεύκηναι τὴν φωνὴν ἡμῶν, ἀλλὰ θρήνῳ τοῦ κακοῦ τὸ βάρος ἀρκοῦντως διασημαίνοντι; οἴχεται ἡμᾶς καὶ ἡ Ταρσός. καὶ οὐ τοῦτο μόνον δεινὸν, καίπερ ἀφόρητον ὑν: ἐστὶ γὰρ τούτου χαλεπώτερον πόλιν τοσαύτην, οὔτως ἔχουσαν εὐκαιρίας, ² ὡστε Ἰσαύρους καὶ Κίλικας, Κατπαδόκας τε καὶ Σύρους δι’ ἐαυτῆς συνάπτειν, ἐνὸς ἢ δυοῖν ³ ἀπονοιὰς ἀνθρώπων ὀλέθρου γενέσθαι πάρεργον, μελλόντων ἡμῶν ⁴ καὶ βουλευομένων καὶ πρὸς ἀλλήλους ἀποσκοποῦντων. κράτιστον οὖν, κατὰ τὴν τῶν ἵατρῶν ἐπίνοιαν (πάντως δὲ μοι πολλῇ ἀφθονίᾳ, διὰ τὴν σύνοικον ἀρρωστίαν, τῶν τοιούτων παραδειγμάτων), οἶ ἐπειδὰν τὸ τῆς ὅδυνης μέγεθος ύπερβάλη, ἀναισθησίαν τῶν πόνων ἐπιτεχνώνται τῷ κάμνοιτι, καὶ ταῖς ἡμετέραις ⁶ αὐτῶν ψυχαῖς,
LETTER XXXIV

LETTER XXXIV

To Eusebius, Bishop of Samosata

How can we keep silent in the present state of affairs? Or, if we cannot endure it patiently, how can we find words adequate to what is happening, so that our utterances may not be like a groan, but like a lamentation, which gives sufficient evidence of the weight of one's misfortune? For us, Tarsus, even Tarsus, is no more. And this is not the only terrible thing, intolerable though it is; for more grievous than this is the fact that so great a city, so opportunely situated as to include within its borders Isaurians and Cilicians, Cappadocians and Syrians, should be given over to destruction as an incident of the madness of one or two men, while you delayed and deliberated and gazed at one another! Now it would be an excellent thing if we should adopt the device of the physicians (and I certainly have a great abundance of illustrations of this kind, because of the illness from which I am never free); they, when their patients suffer excessive pain, contrive for them an anaesthetic to make them insensible of their sufferings; so we should all pray for some analgetic to render our

1 Written in the autumn of 369; cf. Schäfer, loc. cit., and Loofs, p. 50.
2 Silvanus, Metropolitan of Tarsus, had died, and through the neglect of the bishops was succeeded by an Arian. However, the future did not prove to be as gloomy as was anticipated; most of the priests were firm in orthodoxy, and remained in friendly communication with Basil. Cf. Letters LXVII, CXIII, CXIV.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

ός μὴ ταῖς φορήτοις ὀδύναις συνέχεσθαι, ἀναλυγείσαν τῶν κακῶν συνεύξασθαι. οὐ μὴν ἀλλὰ καίπερ οὕτως ἄθλιως ἔχοντες, μιὰ παραμυθία κεχρήμεθα, πρὸς τὴν σὴν ἀπίδειν ἁμερότητα, καὶ ἐκ τῆς σῆς ἐννοίας καὶ μιμήμης πραύναι τῆς ψυχῆς τὸ λυπούμενον. Ὅσπερ γὰρ τοῖς ὀφθαλμοῖς, ἔπειδὰν ποτε συντόνως τὰ λαμπρὰ καταβλέψωσι, φέρει τινὰ ῥαστώνην πρὸς τὰ κυνὰ καὶ χλοάζοντα τῶν χρωμάτων ἐπανελθεῖν, οὕτω καὶ ταῖς ἠμετέραις ψυχαῖς, οἴον ¹ πραεῖά τις ἐπαφῆ τὸ ὁδυνηρὸν ἐξαιροῦσα, ἡ μιμήμη τῆς σῆς πραότητος καὶ ἐμμελείας ἐστί καὶ μάλιστα όταν ἐνθυμηθῶμεν ὅτι τὸ κατὰ σεαυτὸν ἀπαν ἐπλήρωσας. ἔξ ὁν ἰκανῶς καὶ ἡμῖν τοῖς ἀνθρώποις, ἐὰν εὐγνωμόνως τὰ πράγματα κρίνωμεν, ὡς οὐδὲν ἐκ τῆς σῆς αἰτίας ἀπόλωλεν ἐνεδείξω, καὶ παρὰ Θεῶ τῆς τῶν καλῶν προθυμίας μέγαν σεαυτῷ τῶν μισθῶν κατεκτήσω. χαρίσαιτο δὲ σὲ ἡμῖν καὶ ταῖς ἑαυτοῦ ἐκκλησίαις ὁ Κύριος, ἐπ ὁφελεία τοῦ βίου καὶ διορθώσει τῶν ψυχῶν ἡμῶν, καὶ καταξιώσει πάλιν τῆς ἐπωφελοῦς συντυχίας σου.

XXXV

'Ανεπίγραφος, ὑπὲρ Λεωνίου

Περὶ πολλῶν μὲν ὡς διαφερόντων μοι ἐπέστειλά σοι, περὶ πλειόνων δὲ καὶ ἐπιστελῶ. οὔτε γὰρ τοὺς δεομένους ἐπιλιπεῖν δυνατόν, οὔτε ἡμᾶς ἀρνεῖσθαι τὴν χάριν οἴον τε. οὐ μὴν ἐστὶ τις

¹ οἷον Φ.
LETTER XXXV

souls insensible of their ills, so that we may not be afflicted with intolerable pains. However, though we are indeed wretched, we enjoy one single consolation—that we can contemplate your kindness, and alleviate the torment of our soul by thinking of you and remembering you. For just as the eyes, after gazing intently upon glaring objects, obtain relief by returning to blues and greens, so also to our souls is the memory of your gentleness and sense of fitness like a gentle touch that dispels all sense of pain; and this is especially true when we call to mind that you fulfilled your whole duty within your power. Thereby you have not only given us men, if we judge the matter fairly, adequate proof that no loss has been sustained through your fault, but also with God you have gained a great reward for your zeal for honourable things. May the Lord graciously grant you unto us and unto His churches, for the improvement of our lives and the amendment of our souls, and may He count me worthy of the benefit of meeting you again.

LETTER XXXV

Without address, in behalf of Leontius

I have written to you about many who engage my interest, and in the future I shall write about still more. For neither can the supply of the needy fail, nor is it possible for us to refuse them the favour. There is assuredly no one more dear to me,

1 Written before Basil was made bishop, in behalf of Leontius, the sophist, addressed in Letter XXI.
OLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

οἰκεῖοτερὸς μοι, οὖτε μᾶλλον ἀιαπαύσαί με ἐφ′ ὅς ἂν εὗ τι πάθοι 1 δυνάμενος, τὸν αἰδεσιμωτάτου ἀδελφοῦ Λεοντίου. οὐ τὴν οἰκίαν οὔτω διάθεσ, ὡς ἂν εἰ αὐτὸν ἐμὲ καταλάβοις, 2 μη 3 ἐν τῇ πενίᾳ ταύτῃ, ἐν ἣ νῦν εἰμί σὺν Θεῷ, ἀλλὰ εὐπορίας τινὸς ἐπειλήμμενον καὶ ἁγροῦς κεκτημένον. δῆλον γὰρ ὅτι οὐκ ἂν ἐποίησάς με πένητα, ἀλλ' ἐφύλαξάς ἂν τὰ παρόντα, ἣ ἐπέτεινας τὴν εὐπορίαν. τὸντο οὖν ποιῆσαι σε 4 καὶ ἐν τῇ προειρημένῃ μοι οἰκίᾳ τοῦ ἁνδρὸς παρακαλοῦμεν. μισθὸς δὲ σοι ὑπὲρ πάντων ὁ συνῆθης παρ' ἐμοῦ, εὐχὴ πρὸς τὸν ἄγιον Θεὸν ὑπὲρ ὧν κάμνεις, καλὸς τε καὶ ἁγαθὸς ὧν καὶ προλαμβάνων τὰς αἰτήσεις τῶν δεσμέων.

XXXVI

Ἀνεπίγραφος, ἐπὶ ἐπικουρία

Ὁ πρεσβύτερος τοῦ χωρίου τούδε, οἶμαι, ὃτι πάλαι ἐγκαθιστᾷ τῇ εὐγενείᾳ σου, ὃτι ἐστὶν ἐμοὶ σύντροφος. τί οὖν ἄλλο δεῖ με εἰπεῖν πρὸς τὸ δυσοπήσαι σου τὴν χρηστότητα, οἰκεῖως αὐτοῦ ὑδεῖν καὶ βοηθήσαι αὐτῷ εἰς τὰ πράγματα; εἰ μὲν ἡμὰρ ἐμὲ ἁγαπᾶς, ὥσπερ οὖν ἁγαπᾶς, δηλονότι καὶ οὖσ ἄντ' ἐμαυτοῦ ἔχω ἀναπάντασαι πάση δυνάμει προαιρῆ. τί οὖν ἐστὶν ὁ παρακαλῶ: φυλαχθῆναι αὐτῷ τὴν παλαιὰν ἀπογραφὴν. καὶ

1 πάθοιμι E. 2 καταλάβης C, D. 3 μη om. C, D. 4 σοι F.

1 i.e. administer to his needs; cf. next letter.
or more able to relieve me with whatever means fortune may bring him, than our most reverend brother Leontius. Treat his household as you would my own, in case you should find me, not in this state of poverty in which I now live with God, but seized of some measure of prosperity and in the possession of a landed estate. For in that case you surely would not reduce me to poverty, but you would guard my present possessions, or even increase my prosperity. This accordingly we beg you to do in the case of the aforesaid household of Leontius. Your reward for all this will be what I am accustomed to pay—a prayer to the Holy God to prosper all your undertakings, inasmuch as you are an honourable and upright man, and forestall the petitions of the needy.

LETTER XXXVI

Without address, asking Assistance

It has long been known to your noble self, I believe, that the presbyter of this place is a foster-brother of mine. So what else need I say to induce your kind heart to look upon him with favour, and to help him in his affairs? For if you love me, as indeed you do, it is, of course, your wish by all means in your power to relieve those also whom I regard as my own self. Now what is it that I ask of you? That his old rating be retained for him.

2 Written at the same time as the preceding, asking that special care be taken lest any injustice be done to a friend in the valuation of personal property during the impending taking of the census.  
3 Cf. Justin, *Apol.* 1. 34.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

γὰρ καὶ κάμνει οὐ μετρίως ἡμῖν ὑπηρετῶν πρὸς τὸν βίον διὰ τὸ ἡμᾶς, ὡς αὐτὸς ἐπίστασαι, μηδὲν κεκτήσθαι ἵδιον, ἀλλὰ τοῖς τῶν φίλων καὶ συγγενῶν ἀρκεῖσθαι. 1 ὡς οὖν ἔμοι οἶκον, μᾶλλον δὲ ὦς ἑαυτοῦ, οὔτω θέασαι τὸν τοῦ ἀδελφοῦ τούτες καὶ ἀντὶ τῆς εἰς αὐτὸν ἐυποιίας παρέξει Θεὸς καὶ σοὶ, καὶ οἶκῳ, καὶ γένει παντὶ σοι τὴν συνήθη 2 βοηθειαν. 3 γίνωσκε δὲ μοι πάνω ἐπιμελές εἶναι μηδὲν ἐκ τῆς ἐξισώσεως ἐπηρεασθῆναι τὸν ἄνθρωπον.

XXXVII

Αἰεπίγραφος, ὑπὲρ συντρόφου

Ὑφορωμαι λοιπῶν τῶν ἐπιστολῶν τὸ πλῆθος. βιαίως μέν, καὶ μὴ φέρων τὴν ἐπάχθειαν τῶν ἁπατούντων ἡμᾶς, ἐκφωνεῖν ἀναγκάζομαι· γράφω δὲ οὖν ὁμως, ἄλλον ἀπαλλαγῆς τρόπον ἐπινοεῖν οὐκ ἔχων, ἢ διδοὺς αὐτοῖς τὰς ἐπιστολάς αὐτοῦσιν ἐκάστοτε παρ’ ἡμῶν. φοβοῦμαι τοῖνυ μή, ἐπειδὴ πολλοὶ προσκομίζουσι γράμματα, εἰς τῶν πολλῶν νομισθῆ καὶ ὁ ἀδελφὸς ὁ δείνα. ἐγὼ γὰρ πολλοὺς φίλους καὶ συγγενεῖς ἔχειν ἐπὶ τῆς πατρίδος ὁμολογῶ, καὶ αὐτός εἰς τὴν πατρικὴν τάξιν τετάξαθαι, διὰ τὸ σχῆμα τοῦτο εἰς ὁ ἔταξεν ἡμᾶς ὁ Κύριος. σύντροφον δὲ τῆς θρεψίμενης

1 κείσθαι E. 2 συνήθη om. C, D. 3 συνήθη βοηθειαν] συνήθειαν E.
LETTER XXXVII

For he labours not a little in administering to our necessities, since, as you know, we possess nothing of our own, but are content with what our friends and relatives provide. I pray you, therefore, to regard this brother’s household as my own, or rather as your own; and in return for this benefaction to him God will grant unto you, your household, and all your family His accustomed aid. Be assured that it is a matter of grave concern to me that the man be not wrongfully treated through the equalization of ratings.

LETTER XXXVII

Without address, in behalf of a Foster-brother

I am coming to look with suspicion on the number of my letters. Under compulsion and when I cannot endure the annoyance of insistent petitioners, I am obliged to speak my mind; but nevertheless I do write because I can devise no way of relief other than to give them the letters when they demand them of me. Consequently I am afraid that, since there are many who come to you with letters, a certain brother of ours may be considered one of the many. For I admit that I have many friends and relatives in my country, and that I myself have been appointed to the position of a father by reason of this station to which the Lord has appointed me. But I have only one foster-

1 Written at the same time as the preceding.
2 Maran considers this to be not his episcopate but his presbyterate.

VOL. I.
με νίον τούτον ἔχω ἕνα, καὶ εὐχομαι τὸν οἶκον ἐν ὅ ἀνετράφην ἐπὶ τῇ ὁμοίᾳ καταστάσεως δια-
μεῖναι, ἵνα μὴ τί ἡ πάντας ἐνεργετοῦσα ἐπιδημία τῆς σῆς κοσμιότητος ἀφορμή πρὸς λύπην τῷ ἀνδρὶ γέννηται. ἀλλ' ἐπειδὴ ἔτι καὶ νῦν ἐκ τοῦ ἀυτοῦ διατρέφομαι οἶκον, οὕτων ἔχων τῶν ἐμαυτοῦ, ἀρκούμενος δὲ τοῖς τῶν ἀγαπητῶν, παρακαλῶ οὕτω φείσασθαι τῆς οἰκίας ἡ ἐνετράφην, ὡς ἐμοὶ τῆς τροφῆς τὴν χορηγίαν διασώζοντα. καὶ σε ὁ Θεὸς ἀντὶ τούτων τῆς αἰωνίου ἀναπαύσεως ἀξιώσειν.

Ἐκεῖνό γε μὴν πάντων ἀληθέστατον γινώσκειν
σον τὴν κοσμιότητα βούλομαι, ὅτι τῶν ἀνδρα-
pόδων τὰ πλεῖστα παρ' ἡμῶν ὑπῆρξεν αὐτὸ
μισθὸς τῆς τροφῆς ἡμῶν, τῶν γονέων ἡμῶν
παρασχομένων. ὁ δὲ μισθὸς οὐ παντελῆς ἐστι
dωρεὰ, ἀλλὰ χρήσις διὰ βίου. ὡστε ἐάν τι βαρὺ
περὶ αὐτὰ γένηται, ἐξεστὶν αὐτῷ πρὸς ἡμᾶς
ἀποπέμψαι, καὶ ἑσόμεθα ἡμεῖς δὴ ἐτέρας ὀδὸν
ὑπεύθυνοι τελέσμασι καὶ ἀπαιτητάς πάλιν
γινόμενοι.

1 τι om. C. 2 διασώζωςαν E. 3 μισθῶν C, D.
LETTER XXXVII

brother, this man who is the son of the woman who nursed me, and I pray that the household in which I was brought up may remain at its old assessment, in order that the sojourn of your modesty, which brings benefit to all, may not be an occasion of regret for this man. Nay, since I am even now supported by this same household, having nothing of my own, but depending upon these loved ones for succour, I urge you with this thought to spare the family in which I was nourished—that by so doing you are preserving the source of my present subsistence. And in return for this may God account you worthy of the everlasting rest.

Furthermore, there is one thing that I want your modesty to know as beyond question the truth—that most of the slaves belong to this man as a gift from us as remuneration for our sustenance, our parents having bestowed them upon him. Yet this remuneration is not entirely a gift, but merely a loan for life. Accordingly, if anything oppressive happens in connection with the slaves,\(^1\) he may return them to us, and we shall thus by another way become liable to assessments and subject to tax-gatherers.

\(^1\) *i.e.* if the assessment is altered on account of the man's possession of slaves—an additional argument in favour of the petition, for Basil will be the one to suffer by the increased taxation.
Γρηγορίῳ ἀδελφῷ περὶ διαφορὰς συνίας καὶ υποστάσεως ¹

'Επειδὴ πολλοὶ, τὸ κοινὸν τῆς συνίας ² ἐπὶ τῶν μυστικῶν δογμάτων μὴ διακρίνοντες ἀπὸ τοῦ τῶν υποστάσεων λόγου, ταῖς αὐταῖς συνεμπίπτουσιν υποστάσεις, καὶ οἶνονταί διαφέρειν μηδὲν συνίαν ἢ υπόστασιν λέγειν (ὁθεν καὶ ἡρεσεὶ τισὶ τῶν ἀνεξετάστως τὰ τοιαῦτα προσδεχομένων, ὡσπερ μίαν συνίαν, οὕτω καὶ μίαν υπόστασιν λέγειν· καὶ τὸ ἐμπαλίν, οἱ τὰς τρεῖς υποστάσεις παραδεχόμενοι καὶ τὴν τῶν συνίας διαίρεσιν, κατὰ τὸν ἵσον ἀριθμὸν, ἐκ τῆς ὁμολογίας παύτης δογματίζειν οἶνον τείνονταί δειν). διὰ τοῦτο ὡς ἂν μὴ καὶ ὑ ὑ τὰ ὁμοῖα πάθοις, ³ υπόμιμημα σοι διὰ βραχέων τὸν περὶ τοῦτον λόγον ἐποιησάμην. ἐστὶ τοῖνυν, ὡς ἐν ὁλίγῳ παραστήσας, τοιαύτῃ τῶν λεγομένων ἢ ἐννοια.

Πάντων τῶν ὁνομάτων τὰ μὲν ἐπὶ πλειώνων καὶ τῶν ἀριθμῶν διαφερόντων λεγόμενα πραγμάτων καθολικώτεραν τινὰ τὴν σημασίαν ἔχει, οἷον ἄνθρωπος. ο ὡς ἄρε τοῦτο ἐπὶ τῶν κοινῶν φύσιν διὰ τοῦ ὁνόματος δείξας, οὐ περιέγραψε τῇ φώνῃ τῶν τινὰ ἄνθρωπον, τὸν ἰδίως ὑπὸ τοῦ ὁνόματος γνωριζόμενον. οὖ γὰρ μᾶλλον Πέτρος ἄνθρωπος

¹ Sic C, D, E; Γρηγορίῳ ἀδελφῷ in marg. περὶ διαφορὰς συνίας καὶ υποστάσεως A, B; πρὸς Γρηγόριον ἀδελφὸν F.
² φύσεως E.
³ πάθης C, D.
LETTER XXXVIII

To Gregory his brother, on the difference between substance and person

Seeing that many, in treating of the mysterious doctrine of the Trinity, because they fail to discern any difference between the general conception of substance and that of the persons, come to like notions and think that it matters not whether they use the term "substance" or "person" (and for this reason some of those who accept such things without investigation are pleased to attribute one person to God just as they do one substance; and vice versa, those who profess three persons feel obliged to assert as a consequence of this truth the same number of divine substances): for this reason, in order that you too may not fall into the same error, I have composed this brief discussion of the subject by way of a memorandum for you. Now the meaning of these words, to explain it in brief, is as follows.

Those nouns which are predicated of subjects plural and numerically diverse have a more general meaning, as for example "man." For when you say "man," you thereby signify the general class, and do not specify any man who is particularly known by that name. For "man" is no less applicable to

---

1 This letter seems to have been written either in 369 or 370. It is included among the works of Gregory of Nyssa, addressed to Peter, Bishop of Sebaste, brother of Basil and Gregory of Nyssa. Maran, however, considers it Basil's on stylistic grounds. Besides, it was referred to as Basil's at the Synod of Chalcedon, and all the MSS. collated likewise ascribe it to him. For the theological matters concerned herein, cf. Introd., and also note 1 of Letter VIII.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

εστιν, ἢ καὶ Ἀντρέας, καὶ Ἰωάννης, καὶ Ἰάκωβος. ἢ οὖν κοινότης τοῦ σημαινομένου, ὁμοίως ἐπὶ πάντας τοὺς ὑπὸ τὸ αὐτὸ ὄνομα τεταγμένους χωροῦσα, χρείαν ἔχει τῆς ὑποδιαστολῆς, δι' ἢς οὐ τὸν καθόλου ἀνθρώπον, ἀλλὰ τὸν Πέτρον ἢ τὸν Ἰωάννην ἐπιγνωσόμεθα.

Τὰ δὲ τῶν ὄνομάτων ἰδιωτέραν ἔχει τὴν ἐνδείξει, δι' ἢς οὖχ ἢ 1 κοινότης τῆς 2 φύσεως ἐνθεωρεῖται τῷ σημαινομένῳ, ἀλλὰ πράγματος τινος περιγραφῆς, μηδεμίαν ἔχουσα πρὸς τὸ ὁμογενές, κατὰ τὸ ἰδιάζουν, τὴν κοινωνίαν, οἷον ὁ Παῦλος, ἢ ὁ Τιμοθέος. οὐκέτι γὰρ ἡ τοιαύτη φωνὴ ἐπὶ τὸ κοινὸν τῆς φύσεως φέρεται, ἀλλὰ χωρίσασα 3 τῆς περιληπτικῆς σημασίας, περιγραφημένων τινῶν πραγμάτων ἐμφασίσει διὰ τῶν ὄνομάτων παρίστησιν. οἷον οὖν ὑ.diag ἢ καὶ πλειόνων κατὰ τὸ αὐτὸ ὄντων, οἷον Παῦλον καὶ Σιλουανοῦ καὶ Τιμοθέου, περὶ τῆς οὐσίας τῶν ἀνθρώπων ξητήται λόγος, οὐκ ἄλλον τις ἀποδόωσει τῆς οὐσίας ἐπὶ τοῦ Παῦλου λόγου, ἔτερον δὲ ἐπὶ τοῦ Σιλουανοῦ, καὶ ἄλλον ἐπὶ τοῦ 4 Τιμοθέου· ἀλλὰ δι’ ὃν ἢν λόγον ἡ οὐσία τοῦ Παῦλου δειχθῇ, οὕτω καὶ τοῖς ἄλλοις ἐφαρμόσουσι καὶ εἰσιν ἄλληλοις ὁμούσιοι οἱ τῷ αὐτῷ λόγῳ τῆς οὐσίας ὑπογραφόμενοι. ἐπειδὰν δὲ τις, τὸ κοινὸν μαθών, ἐπὶ τὰ ἰδιάζοντα τρέψῃ τὴν θεωρίαν, δι’ ὃν χωρὶζεται τοῦ ἐτέρου τὸ ἐτέρου, οὐκέτι ὁ ἐκάστου γνωριστικὸς λόγος τῷ περὶ τοῦ ἄλλου διὰ πάντων συνενεχθῆσεται, κἂν ἐν τισιν εὑρεθῇ τὸ κοινὸν ἐχων.

LETTER XXXVIII

Peter than to Andrew, John, or James. This common element of the thing predicated, seeing that it refers to all alike who are included under the same term, demands a further note of distinction if we are to understand, not merely man in general, but "Peter" or "John" in particular.

Other nouns have a very specific denotation, whereby it is not the common property of the class that is indicated by the term employed, but rather a limitation to a particular thing, this delimitation implying no participation in the genus so far as the individuality of the object is concerned; for example, "Paul" or "Timothy." For such expressions no longer have reference to the properties common to the nature of the objects, but, by setting apart certain delimited objects from the comprehensive term, specify what they are by means of these names. Now when a name is sought for two or more similar objects, as, for example, "Paul," "Silvanus," and "Timothy," which will indicate the substance of these men, you will not apply one term to the substance of Paul, but a different one to that of Silvanus, and still another to that of Timothy; but whatever terms indicate the substance of Paul will apply to the two others as well; and those who are described with reference to their substance by the same terms are consubstantial with one another. And when you have learnt the common element and turn your investigation to the individual characteristics whereby the one is differentiated from the other, then the description which conveys knowledge of each will not agree in all respects with that which describes the other, even if in certain respects it is found to include the element common to all.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

Τούτο τούνων φαμέν· τὸ ἰδίως λεγόμενον τῷ τῆς ὑποστάσεως δηλοῦσθαι ρήματι. ὁ γὰρ ἀνθρώπων εἰπὼν ἐσκεδασμένην τινὰ διάνοιαν τῷ ἀορίστῳ τῆς σημασίας τῇ ἀκοῇ ἐνεποίησεν, ἴστη τὴν μὲν φύσιν ἐκ τοῦ ὄνοματος δηλωθῆναι, τὸ δὲ ὕφεστῶς 1 καὶ δηλούμενον ἰδίως ὑπὸ τοῦ ὄνοματος πρᾶγμα μὴ σημανθήναι. ὁ δὲ Παύλου εἰπών ἐδείξεν ἐν τῷ δηλούμενῳ ὑπὸ τοῦ ὄνοματος πράγματι ὕφεστῶσαν τὴν φύσιν.

Τούτῳ οὖν ἐστὶν ἡ ὑπόστασις, οὐχ ἡ ἀοριστὸς τῆς οὐσίας ἐννοια, μηδεμίαν ἐκ τῆς κοινότητος τοῦ σημαινομένου στάσιν εὐρίσκουσα, ἀλλὰ ἡ τὸ κοινὸν τε καὶ ἀπερίγραπτον ἐν τῷ τινὶ πράγματι διὰ τῶν ἐπιφαινομένων ἰδιωμάτων παριστῶσα καὶ περιγράφουσα· ὡς καὶ τῇ Γραφῇ σύνηθες τὸ τοιοῦτον ποιεῖν, ἐν ἄλλοις τε πολλοῖς, καὶ ἐν τῇ κατὰ τὸν 'Ἰωβ ιστορίᾳ. ἐπειδὴ γὰρ ἔμελλε τὰ περὶ αὐτοῦ διηγεῖσθαι, πρότερον τοῦ κοινοῦ 2 μνημοιεύσασα, καὶ εἴποισα ἀνθρώπος, εὐθὺς ἀποτέμνει τῷ 3 ἰδιάζοντι ἐν τῇ προσθήκῃ τοῦ τις. ἀλλὰ τῆς μὲν οὐσίας τῆς ὑπογραφῆν, ὡς οὐ δὲν φέρουσαν κέρδος πρὸς τὸν προκείμενον τοῦ λόγου σκοπόν, ἐσιώπησε· τὸν δὲ τινὰ διὰ τῶν

1 ύφεστήκως C, D. 2 τὸ κοινὸν from τῶν κοινῶν F. 3 τὸ from τῷ F.

200
LETTER XXXVIII

This, then, is our statement of the matter; that which is specifically referred to is indicated by the expression "hypostasis" (person). For if you say "man," by the indefiniteness of the term used you have produced in our minds a sort of vague concept, so that, although the nature of the thing is indicated by the noun, yet the thing which subsists in that nature and is specifically indicated by the noun is not made evident to us. But if you say "Paul," you have indicated by the noun the nature subsisting in the particular object.

This, then, is subsistence or "hypostasis" (person). It is, however, not the indefinite notion of "ousia" (substance), which by reason of the generality of the term employed discloses no "sistence"; it is the conception which, by means of the specific notes that it indicates, restricts and circumscribes in a particular thing what is general and uncircumscribed, as is shown in many examples in Scripture and in the story of Job. For as he begins the narration of his experience, he first mentions the general and common term, saying "a man," and immediately afterwards cuts off a portion by specifying the individual and adding the word "certain." But as to the description of the substance he says nothing at all, feeling that it contributes nothing to the object of his discussion; but the "certain" person

2 Cf. Job 1. 1-2: "Ἀνθρωπός τις ἦν ἐν χώρᾳ τῇ Ἀνατίδι Φῶνομα Ἰαββ. καὶ ἦν ὁ ἄνθρωπος ἐκεῖνος ἄληθινός, ἀμεμπτός, δίκαιος, θεοσέβης, ἀπεχόμενος ἀπὸ παντὸς πονηροῦ πράγματος, ἐγένοντο δὲ αὐτῷ νιὸν ἐπὶ καὶ θυγατέρες τρεῖς, ἔτη. "There was a man in the land of Hus, whose name was Job, and that man was simple and upright, and fearing God, and avoiding evil. And there were born to him seven sons and three daughters," etc.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

οικείων γνωρισμάτων χαρακτηρίζει, καὶ τόπον λέγουσα καὶ τὰ τῶν ἄθεους γνωρίσματα, καὶ ὅσα τῶν ἐξωθεὶ τελευτηθέντα χωρίζειν αὐτὸν καὶ ἀφιστῶν ἐμελλεῖ 1 τῆς κοινῆς σημασίας: ὡστε διὰ πάντων ἐναργῆ τοῦ ἱστορουμένου γενέσθαι τῆν ὑπογραφὴν, ἐκ τοῦ ὑνόματος, ἐκ τοῦ τόπου, ἐκ τῶν τῆς ψυχῆς ὑδαμάτων, ἐκ τῶν ἐξωθεὶ περὶ αὐτοῦ θεωρουμένων. ἐὶ δὲ τῶν τῆς οὐσίας ἐδίδοι 2 λόγου, οὐδεμία ἀν ἐγένετο τῶν εἰρημένων εὖ τῇ τῆς φύσεως ἐρμηνεία μνήμῃ. ὁ γὰρ αὐτὸς ἀν ἦν λόγος, ὃς καὶ ἐπὶ τοῦ Βαλδάδ τοῦ Σαυχίτου 3 καὶ Σοφάρ τοῦ Μιναίου καὶ ἑφ’ ἐκάστου τῶν ἐκεί μνημονευθέντων ἀνθρώπων.

"Ον τοίνυν ἐν τοῖς καθ’ ἡμᾶς ἐγνώς διαφοράς λόγον ἐπὶ τε τῆς οὐσίας καὶ τῆς ὑποστάσεως, τούτων μετατιθείς καὶ ἐπὶ τῶν θείων δογμάτων, οὐχ ἀμαρτήσεις. πῶς 4 τὸ εἶναι τοῦ Πατρός, ὅ τι ποτὲ ὑποτίθεται σου 5 ἡ ἦνυνοια (πρὸς οὐδέν γὰρ ἐστιν ἀποτελεθαμένου 6 νόημα τῆς ψυχῆς ἐπερείδειν, διὰ τὸ πεπείθεσθαι αὐτὸ ὑπὲρ πᾶν εἶναι νόημα), τούτῳ καὶ ἐπὶ τοῦ Τίου νοῆσεις, τούτῳ ὡσαύτους καὶ ἐπὶ τοῦ Πνεῦματος τοῦ ἀγίου. ὁ γὰρ τοῦ ἀκτίστου καὶ τοῦ ἀκαταλήπτου λόγος, εἰς καὶ ὁ αὐτὸς ἐπὶ τὲ τοῦ Πατρός καὶ τοῦ Τίου καὶ τοῦ ἀγίου Πνεῦματος ἐστίν. οὐ γὰρ τὸ μὲν μᾶλλον

1 ἐμελεῖ Γ, ἡμελεῖ Δ. 2 ἐδήλου Ε. 3 Αὐχίτου Δ, Β. 4 ἀμαρτήσεις. πῶς] ἀμάρτησις εἰ πῶς C, D. πῶς] ὡς Α. 5 σοι C, D. 6 ἀποτελεθαμένου Ε.

1 Cf. Job 2. 11: Ἀκούσαντες δὲ οἱ τρεῖς φίλοι αὐτοῦ τὰ κακὰ πάντα τὰ ἐπελθόντα αὐτῷ, παρεγένοντο ἐκάστος ἐκ τῆς ἰδίας

202
he characterizes by the peculiar notes which identify him, mentioning both a place, the marks which reveal his character, and all such external adjuncts as will differentiate him and set him apart from the general idea. Consequently, by all these means—the name, the place, the peculiar qualities of his character, and his external attributes as disclosed by observation—the description of the subject of the story becomes explicit. But if he had been giving an account of the substance, there would have been no mention of the aforesaid things in his explanation of its nature; for the same terms would have been used as in describing Baldad the Suhite, Sophar the Minnaean, and each of the men mentioned in the narrative.¹

Accordingly, if you transfer to divine dogmas the principle of differentiation which you recognize as applying to substance and person in human affairs, you will not go astray. In whatever manner and as whatever thing your mind conceives of the substance of the Father (for it is of no avail to press upon a spiritual thing a definitely prescribed conception, because we are sure that it is beyond all conception), this you will hold for the Son also, and likewise for the Holy Ghost. For one and the same conception of Being Uncreated and Incomprehensible is to be attributed to the Father and to the Son and to the Holy Ghost. For one cannot

Χώρας πρὸς αὐτῶν, Ἐλειφὰζ ὁ Θαιμανῶν βασιλεὺς, Βαλδᾶδ ὁ Σαυχαίων τύραννος, Σωφᾶρ ὁ Μειναίων βασιλεὺς. "Now when Job's three friends heard all the evil that had befallen him, they came every one from his own place, Eliphaz the Themanite, and Baldad the Suhite, and Sophar the Naamathite."
akatablēttōn te kai aktistov, tō de ἡττουν. ēpēi 1 de χρή diα tōn idiaizonontωn symbēwon ἀσύγχυτων ēpì tis Triádos tīn diákriσin ēxein, tō mēn koinōs ἐπιθεωρομενου, οἵον tō aktistov légw, ἢ tō ὑπ'ερ πάσαν κατάληψiν, ἢ εἴ tι τοιούτων, οὐ συμπαραλήψιμοθα eis tīn toû idiaizonontos krísin, ἐπιζητίσομεν de mōnon, di' tôn ἡ περὶ ἑκάστου ἐννοια τηλαυγωσ καὶ ἀμίκτως τῆς συνθεωρομενής ἀφορισθήσεται.

Kalōs oûn ēxein moi δοκεῖ οὕτως ἀνιχνεύσαι tōn λόγων. pān ὅπερ ἁν εἰς ἡμᾶς ἐκ θείας δυνάμεως ἄγαθων φήσι, tῆς πάντας ἐν πάσιν 2 ἐνεργοῦσις χάριτος ἐνεργειαν εἶναι φαμεν' καθως φήσιν ὁ ἀπόστολος, ὅτι Γαύτα δὲ πάντα ἐνεργεῖ τὸ ἐν καὶ τὸ αὐτὸ Πνεῦμα, διαιροῦν ἰδία ἑκάστῳ καθὼς βούλεται. ἵπτοντες δὲ εἰ ἐκ μῶν τοῦ ἄγιου Πνεύματος ἡ τῶν ἄγαθῶν χορηγία τῆν ἀρχὴν λαβοῦσα οὕτω παραγίνεται τοῖς ἀξίοις, πάλιν ὑπὸ τῆς Γραφῆς ὁδηγούμεθα εἰς τὸ τῆς χορηγίας τῶν ἄγαθῶν τῶν διὰ τοῦ Πνεύματος ἡμῶν ἐνεργομένων ἀρχηγῶν καὶ αἴτιων τῶν μονογενῆ Θεοῦ εἶναι πιστευεῖν. πάντα γὰρ δι' αὐτοῦ γεγενήθαι, καὶ ἐν αὐτῷ συνεστάναι, παρὰ τῆς ἀγίας Γραφῆς ἑδιδάχθημεν. ὅταν τοίνυς καὶ πρὸς ἐκείνην ὑψωθῶμεν τὴν ἐννοιαν, πάλιν ὑπὸ τῆς θεοπνεύστου χειραγωγίας ἀναγόμενοι δίδασκομεθα, ὅτι δι' ἑκείνης μὲν πάντα τῆς δυνάμεως ἐκ

1 ἑπειδὴ F. 2 ἐν πᾶσιν om. C, D.

1 1 Cor. 12. 11.
2 Cf. John 1. 3: πάντα δι' αὐτοῦ ἐγένετο, καὶ χωρὶς αὐτοῦ ἐγένετο οὐδὲ ἐν, ὁ γέγονεν. "All things were made by Him: 204
LETTER XXXVIII

be said to be more incomprehensible and uncreated and the other less. But since we must use the words which individualize the three in order that we may keep free from confusion the distinction we shall make when dealing with the Trinity, with this aim in view we shall not include in our discussion of the individualizing element any general speculation, such as the quality of being uncreated, beyond comprehension, and so forth, but we shall investigate only those qualities by which the conception of each person in the Trinity will be conspicuously and sharply marked off from that which results from the study of all three together.

Now the best way to follow up the discussion seems to be this. Every blessing which is bestowed on us by power divine we say is the working of the Grace which worketh all things in all; as the Apostle\(^1\) says, "But all these things one and the same Spirit worketh, dividing to everyone according as he will." But if we ask whether from the Holy Ghost alone this supply of blessings taketh its origin and cometh to those who are worthy, we are again guided by the Scriptures to the belief that the Only-begotten God is the source and cause of the supply of blessings which are worked in us through the Spirit. For we have been taught by the Holy Scripture\(^2\) that all things were made by Him and in Him cohere. Then when we have been lifted up to that conception, we are again led on by the divinely-inspired guidance and taught that through this power all things are brought into being from and without Him was made nothing that was made." Cf. also Col. 1. 17: καὶ αὐτὸς ἐστι πρὸ πάντων, καὶ τὰ πάντα ἐν αὐτῷ συνέστηκε. "And He is before all, and by Him all things consist."

205
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

tou μὴ οὖντος εἰς τὸ εἶναι παράγεται: οὐ μὴν ουδὲ ἐξ ἐκεῖνης ἀνάρχως· ἀλλὰ τῆς ἐστι δύναμις ἀγεννητῶς καὶ ἀνάρχως υφεστῶσα, ἤτοι ἐστὶν αἰτία τῆς ἀπάντων τῶν οὖντων αἰτίας. ἐκ γὰρ τοῦ Πατρὸς ὁ Τίος, δι' οὗ τὰ πάντα, φ' πάντοτε τὸ Πνεῦμα τὸ ἁγιον ἀχωρίστως συνεπινοεῖται. οὐ γὰρ ἐστιν ἐν περινοῖᾳ τοῦ Τίοῦ γενέσθαι, μὴ προκατανυσασθέντα τῷ Πνεύματι. ἐπειδὴ τοῖς τὸ ἁγιον Πνεῦμα, ἀφ' οὗ πᾶσα ἐπὶ τὴν κτίσιν ἡ τῶν ἁγαθῶν χορηγία πηγάζει, τοῦ Τίοῦ μὲν ἢρτηται, ὁ ἀδιαστάτως συνικαταλαμβάνεται· τῆς δὲ τοῦ Πατρὸς αἰτίας ἔξημιμένον ἕχει τὸ εἶναι, ὅθεν καὶ ἐκπορεύεται· τοῦτο γνωριστικῶν τῆς· κατὰ τὴν ὑπόστασιν ἱδιότητος σημείου ἔχει, τὸ μετὰ τὸν Τίον καὶ σὺν αὐτῷ γνωρίζεσθαι, καὶ τὸ ἐκ τοῦ Πατρὸς υφεστάναι.

Ὁ ἐδὲ Τίος, ὁ τὸ ἐκ τοῦ Πατρὸς ἐκπορευομένου Πνεῦμα δι' ἑαυτοῦ καὶ μεθ' ἑαυτοῦ γνωρίζων, μόνος μονογενῶς ἐκ τοῦ ἀγεννητοῦ φωτὸς ἐκλάμψας, οὐδεμίαν, κατὰ τὸ ἰδιὰξον τῶν γνωρισμάτων, τῆς κοινωνίαν ἔχει πρὸς τὸν Πατέρα ἡ πρὸς τὸ Πνεῦμα τὸ ἁγιον, ἀλλὰ τοῖς εἰρημένοις σημείοις μόνος γνωρίζεται. ο ἐδὲ ἐπὶ πάντων Θεός, ἐξαίρετον τι γνωρίσμα τῆς ἑαυτοῦ υποστάσεως, τὸ Πατήρ εἶναι, καὶ ἐκ μηδεμίας αἰτίας υποστήναι, μόνος ἔχει· καὶ διὰ τοῦτο πάλιν τοῦ σημείου καὶ αὐτὸς ἰδιαξόντως ἐπιγνωσκεται. τοῦτον ἐνεκεν ἐν τῇ τῆς οὐσίας κοινότητι ἁσύμβατα φαμεν εἶναι καὶ ἀκοινώνητα τὰ ἐπιθεωρούμενα τῇ Τριάδι γνωρίσματα, δι' ὅν ἡ ἱδιότης παρίσταται τῶν ἐν τῇ πίστει παραδεδο-

1 ἔξημιμένον C, D.
2 ἐπὶ E.
LETTER XXXVIII

not-being; not, however, even by this power without a beginning; nay, there is a power which exists without generation or beginning, and this is the cause of the cause of all things that exist. For the Son, by whom all things are, and with whom the Holy Spirit must always be conceived as inseparably associated, is of the Father. For it is impossible for a man, if he has not been previously enlightened by the Spirit, to arrive at a conception of the Son. Since, then, the Holy Spirit, from whom the entire supply of blessings gushes forth to creation, is united with the Son and with Him is inseparably produced, He has His being attached to the Father as a cause, from whom indeed He proceeds. He has this distinguishing note characteristic of His person, that He is produced after the Son and with Him and that He has His subsistence from the Father.

As for the Son, who through Himself and with Himself makes known the Spirit which proceeds from the Father, and who shines forth as the only-begotten from the unbegotten light, He in the matter of the individual tokens which distinguish Him has nothing in common with the Father or with the Holy Spirit, but alone is recognized by the note just named. And God, who is over all, alone has an exceptional note of His person, in that He is Father and proceeds from no other principle; and by this note again He is also recognized individually Himself. Therefore we assert that in the community of substance there is no accord or community as regards the distinguishing notes assigned by faith to the Trinity, whereby the individuality of the persons of the Godhead, as they have been handed
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

μένων προσώπων, έκάστου τούς ἰδίους γνωρίσμασι
diakekrirméwos katalamβanoménou. ὡστε διά τῶν
eirhmenón σημείων τὸ κεχωρισμένον τῶν ὑποστάσ-
εων ἐξευρεθήναι. κατὰ δὲ τὸ ἀπειρον, καὶ
ἀκατάληπτον, καὶ τὸ ἀκτίστως εἶναι, καὶ μηδενὶ
tóπω περιειλήφθαι, καὶ πᾶσι τοῖς τοιούτοις,
mēdemían εἶναι παραλλαγὴν ἐν τῇ ζωοποίῳ φύσει,
ἐπὶ Πατρός λέγω καὶ Τίοι καὶ Πνεύματος ἄγιον·
ἀλλὰ τινὰ συνεχῆ καὶ ἀδιάσπαστον κοινωνίαν ἐν
αὐτοῖς θεωρεῖσαι. καὶ δὶ ὅν ἄν τις νοημάτων
tὸ μεγαλεῖον ἐνὸς τινος τῶν ἐν τῇ ἁγίᾳ Τριάδι
pistheuoménōn katanóhseie, διὰ τῶν αὐτῶν1 προσ-
eléusetai, ἀπαραλλάκτως, ἐπὶ Πατρός, καὶ Τίοι,
cαὶ Πνεύματος ἄγιον τὴν δόξαν βλέπων, ἐν οὔδειν
dialeívmati metaxú Patroś kai Τίοι καὶ ἄγιον
Πνεύματος τῆς διανοίας κενεμβατούσης. διότι
οὐδὲν ἔστι τὸ διὰ μέσου τούτων παρενερόμενου,
oúte prágma úfestoς ἀλλο τι παρὰ τὴν θείαν
φύσιν, ὁς καταμερίζειν αὐτὴν πρὸς ἑαυτὴν διὰ
τῆς τοῦ ἄλλοτρίου παρεμπτώσεως δύνασθαι, οὔτε
diaστήματος τινος ἀνυποστάτου κενότης, ἦτις
kexhnenai 2 poiei tis theia souías tis prōs eautēn
ármonean, tis parynthēkis tου kevou tis synexes
diaσtéllousa. ἀλλ' ὁ τῶν Patēra νοήσας, αὐτῶν
tē ἐφ' ἑαυτοῦ ἐνόησε, καὶ τῶν Τίοι τῆς διανοίας
συμπαρεδέξατο· ὁ δὲ τοῦτον λαβὼν τοῦ Τίοι τὸ
Πνεῦμα 3 oúc ἀπεμέρισεν, ἀλλ' ἀκολούθως μὲν,
katà tēn tâξin, synēmmevōs δε, katà tēn φύσιν,

1 διὰ τῶν αὐτῶν from δι' αὐτῶν alia m. F.
2 kexhnenai F.
3 τῶν πατέρα from τὸ Πνεῦμα alia m. F.
down in our faith, is made known to us, for each is apprehended separately by means of its own particular distinguishing notes. It is by means of the marks just mentioned that the distinction of the Persons is ascertained; but regarding attributes denoted by the terms infinite, incomprehensible, uncreated, uncircumscribed by space, and all others of like nature, there is no variation in the life-giving nature—I mean in the case of the Father, or of the Son, or of the Holy Spirit—but a certain continuous and uninterrupted community appears in them. And through whatever processes of thought you reach a conception of the majesty of any one of the three persons of the Blessed Trinity in which we believe, through these same processes you will arrive invariably at the Father and Son and Holy Spirit, and gaze upon their glory, since there is no interval between Father and Son and Holy Spirit in which the intellect will walk in a void. The reason is that there is nothing which intrudes itself between these persons, and that beyond the divine nature there is nothing which subsists that could really divide it from itself by the interposition of some outside thing, and that there is no void, in the form of an interspace in which there is no subsistence, between the three Persons, which could cause the inner harmony of the divine essence to gape open by breaking the continuity through the insertion of this void. But he who has conceived the Father, and conceived of Him apart by Himself, has at the same time mentally accepted the Son also; and he who lays hold of the Son does not dismember the Spirit from the Son, but in due sequence, so far as their order is concerned, yet unitedly, as regards
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

tὸν τριῶν κατὰ ταύτον συγκεκραμένην ἐν ἑαυτῷ τὴν πίστιν ἀνετυπώσατο. καὶ ὁ τὸ Πνεῦμα μόνον εἴπὼν συμπεριέλαβε τῇ ὀμολογίᾳ ταύτη καὶ τὸν οὗ ἐστὶ τὸ Πνεῦμα. καὶ ἐπειδὴ τοῦ Χριστοῦ ἐστὶ τὸ Πνεῦμα, καὶ ἐκ τοῦ Θεοῦ, καθὼς φησιν ὁ Παύλος, ὡσπερ ἐξ ἀλύσεως ὁ τοῦ ἐνὸς ἀκρου ἀψάμενος καὶ τὸ ἐτερον ἀκρου συνεπεσπάσατο, οὕτως ὁ τὸ Πνεῦμα ἑλκύσας, καθὼς φησιν ὁ προφήτης, δἰ αὐτοῦ καὶ τὸν Τίον καὶ τὸν Πατέρα συνεφελκύσατο. καὶ εἰ τὸν Τίον ἀληθινὸς τις λάβω, ἐξεὶ αὐτὸν ἐκατέρωθεν, τὴν μὲν τὸν ἑαυτοῦ Πατέρα, τὴν δὲ τὸ ἱδίον Πνεῦμα συνεπαγόμενον. οὕτε γὰρ τοῦ Πατρὸς ὁ ἀεὶ ἐν τῷ Πατρὶ ὅων ἀποτμηθῆναι δυνῆσται, οὕτε τοῦ Πνεύματος ποτε διαζευχῆσεται τοῦ ἱδίου ὁ πάντα ἐν αὐτῷ ἐνεργῶν. ὡσαύτως δὲ καὶ ὁ τὸν Πατέρα δεξάμενος καὶ τὸν Τίον καὶ τὸ Πνεῦμα συμπαρεδέξατο τῇ δυνάμει. οὐ γὰρ ἐστὶν ἐπι- νοῆσαι τομὴν ἡ διαίρεσιν κατ' οὑδένα τρόπον, ωσ ἡ Τίον χωρὶς Πατρὸς νοηθῆναι, ἢ τὸ Πνεῦμα τοῦ Τίον διαζευχῆσεται. ἀλλά τις ἀρρήτους καὶ ἀκατανόητος ἐν τούτοις καταλαμβάνεται καὶ ἡ κοινωνία καὶ ἡ διάκρισις, οὔτε τῆς τῶν ὑποστάσεων διαφορᾶς τῷ τῆς φύσεως συνεχές διασπώσῃς, οὔτε τῆς κατὰ τὴν οὐσίαν κοινότητος τὸ ἴδιαζον τῶν ἁρκρισμάτων ἀναχεύσῃς. μὴ θαυμάσῃς δὲ εἰ

1 ἀπόστολος C, D, F.
2 τὸν πατέρα ἁρμὸν τὸ πνεῦμα alia m. F.
3 ἐν αὐτῷ om. C, D. 4 ἡ om. A, B.

1 Cf. Rom. S. 9: εἰ δὲ τις πνεῦμα Χριστοῦ ὀνκ ἐχει, οὖτος οὐκ ἐστὶν αὐτοῦ. "Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his." Cf. also 1 Cor. 11. 12: ὡσπερ γὰρ
their natures, forms within himself an image of the faith that is a blending of the three in the same way. And he who has mentioned the Spirit alone has embraced with It in this confession also Him of whom the Spirit is. And since the Spirit is of Christ and from God, as Paul says, just as he who grasps one end of a chain pulls along with it the other end also to himself, so he who draws the Spirit, as the prophet says, through the Spirit draws both the Son and the Father along with It. And if you truly lay hold of the Son, you will hold Him on two sides, on the one where He draws His Father to himself, and on the other where He draws His own Spirit. For neither will He who eternally exists in the Father by any possibility be cut off from the Father, nor will He who works all things in the Spirit ever be disjoined from the Spirit which is His own. In like manner he who accepts the Father virtually accepts along with Him the Son and the Spirit also. For it is impossible in any manner to conceive of a severance or separation whereby either the Son is thought of apart from the Father or the Spirit is parted from the Son; but there is apprehended among these three a certain ineffable and inconceivable communion and at the same time distinction, with neither the difference between their persons dis-integrating the continuity of their nature, nor this community of substance confounding the individual character of their distinguishing notes. Do not ἡ γυνὴ ἐκ τοῦ ἀνδρός, οὕτω καὶ ὁ ἄνηρ διὰ τῆς γυναικὸς, τὰ δὲ πάντα ἐκ τοῦ θεοῦ. "For as the woman is of the man, so also is the man by the woman: but all things of God."

2 A misinterpretation, perhaps intentional, of Psal. 119. 131 : εἰλαχιστά πνεύμα. "I drew breath," "I pantedit."
C O L L E C T E D L E T T E R S O F S A I N T B A S I L

τὸ αὐτὸ καὶ συνημμένου καὶ διακεκριμένον εἶναι φαμεν, 1 καὶ τινα ἐπινοούμεν, ὡσπερ ἐν αἰνύγματι, καὶνῇ καὶ παράδοξον διάκρισιν τε συνημμένην καὶ διακεκριμένην συνάφειαν. εἰ γὰρ μὴ τις ἐριστικῶς καὶ πρὸς ἐπιήρειαν ἀκούοι τοῦ λόγου, καὶ ἐν τοῖς αἰσθητοῖς δυνατὸν ἕστι τὸ τοιοῦτον εὑρεῖν.

Καὶ μοι δέξασθε τὸν λόγον ὡς ὑπόδειγμα καὶ σκίαν ἀληθείας, οὐχ ὡς αὐτὴν τὴν τῶν πραγμάτων ἀληθείαν. οὐ γὰρ δυνατὸν ἕστι διὰ πάντων ἐφαρμοσθῆναι 2 τὸ εἵν τοῖς ὑποδείγμασι θεωροῦμεν τοῖς πρὸς ἣ τῶν ὑποδείγματων χρεία παραλαμβάνεται. πόθεν οὖν φαμὲν τὸ διακεκριμένον ἄμα καὶ συναφὲς 3 εἰκ τῶν κατὰ τὴν αἰσθησιν ἡμῖν προφαινομένων ἀναλογίζεσθαι; ἣδι ποτὲ τοῦ ἐν τῇ νεφέλῃ τόξῳ τῆς λαμπηδόνα κατὰ τὸ ἔαρ τεθέασαι, ἐκεῖνο λέγω τὸ τόξον, ὅπερ ὁ κοινὸς λόγος ἵριν εἰσωθὲν ἐπονομάζειν· ὁ φασὶν οἱ περὶ ταῦτα δεινοὶ τὸτε συνιστασθαι, ὅταν ἀνακεκραμένη τις ἐπὶ τοῦ ἀέρα νοτίς, τῆς τῶν πνευμάτων βίας τὸ ἐν τοῖς ἀτμοῖς ὑγρὸν καὶ παχύ, νεφώδες ἥδη γενόμενον, εἰς ὑπὸ ὑποθλιβούσης, συνιστασθαι δὲ λέγουσιν οὕτως. ἐπειδὰν τῇ τοῦ ὠλίου ἀκτίς, κατὰ τὸ πλάγιον ὑποδραμοῦσα τὸ πυκνόν τε καὶ συνηρεῖς τῆς νεφώσεως, εἴτε κατὰ τὸ εὔθυ νέφει τινὶ τῶν ἱδιον κύκλον ἐναπερείσηται, ὁδὸς τῆς καμπῆ καὶ ἐπάνωδος τοῦ φωτὸς πρὸς ἐαυτὸ γίνεται, τῆς αὐγῆς πρὸς τὸ ἐμπαλίν ἀπὸ τοῦ ὑγροῦ τε καὶ στίλβοιτος ἀναλυούσης. ἐπειδὴ γὰρ φύσις ἐστὶ ταῖς φλογώδεσιν

1 ἐφαμὲν A, B.
2 ἐφαρμόσασθαι F.
3 συναφὲς E; συμφυνές A, B, C, D; συμφυνές from συναφεῖς alia m. F.
LETTER XXXVIII

marvel if we assert that the same thing is both joined and separated, and if, as though speaking in riddles, we devise a strange and paradoxical sort of united separation and disunited connection. Indeed, unless you are listening to what I say in a contentious and spiteful spirit, even among things perceptible to the senses a similar phenomenon may be found.

Accept my words as an illustration merely and adumbration of the truth, not as the very truth of the matter; for it is impossible that the object which is observed in illustrations should agree in every respect with that to explain which the use of illustrations is resorted to. Why, then, do we say that that which is disunited and at the same time connected can be inferred by analogy from things which appear to our sense-perceptions? Now and then in spring-time you have seen in the cloud the lustre of the bow; that bow, I mean, which common parlance is wont to call the "Iris" or rainbow. Those who are skilled in such matters say that it is formed only when certain moisture is mixed with the air, the force of the breezes pressing the moist and dense portion of the vapours, this portion having already become cloudy, into rain. They say that the process of formation is this. When the sunbeam, intercepting obliquely the compact and opaque portion of the cloudy mass, then causes its own circle to impinge in a straight line upon a particular cloud, there occurs a sort of bending of the light and its return upon itself, for the sunlight returns in the opposite direction from what is moist and shiny. For since it is in the nature of flame-like flashes of light, when they fall
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

μαρμαρυγαίς, εἴ τινι λείψω προσπέσοιεν,1 πρὸς ἑαυτὰς πάλιν ἐπανακλᾶσθαι, κυκλοτερὲς δὲ τοῦ ἡλίου2 τὸ σχῆμα, τὸ διὰ τῆς ἀκτίνος ἐν τῷ ύγρῷ τε καὶ λείψω τοῦ ἀέρος γυμνὸμενον, ἐξ ἀνάγκης κατὰ τὸ σχῆμα τοῦ ἡλιακοῦ κύκλου3 καὶ ὁ παρακείμενος τῷ νεφεὶ ἀὴρ διὰ τῆς ἀποστιλβοῦσης αὐγῆς περιγράφεται. αὐτῇ τοῖνυν ἡ αὐγὴ καὶ συνεχῆς ἐστὶ πρὸς ἑαυτὴν καὶ διήρηται. πολύχρως4 γὰρ τις οὕσα καὶ πολυειδῆς, ἀφανῶς τοῖς ποικίλοις ἀνθεσι τῆς βαφῆς πρὸς ἑαυτὴν κατακρινάται τῶν ἑτεροχροούντων τῆς πρὸς ἀλλῆλα συμβολῆν ἐκ τῶν ὄψεων ἡμῶν κατὰ τὸ λειψθὸς ὑποκλέπτουσα.5 ὡς μὴ ἀν ἐπιγνωσθῆναι τοῦ ἡλιακοῦ πρὸς τὸ πυραυγῆς τὸν διὰ μέσον τόπον τὸν μιγνύοντα6 δι᾽ ἑαυτοῦ καὶ χωρίζοντα τὴν τῶν χρωδῶν ἑτερότητα, ἢ τοῦ πυραυγοῦ πρὸς τὸ πορφύρεον, ἢ ἐκείνου πρὸς τὸ ἡλέκτρινον. πάντων γὰρ αἱ αὐγαὶ κατὰ ταῦτα ὄρομεναι καὶ τηλαυγεῖς εἰσί, καὶ τῆς πρὸς ἀλλῆλας συναφείας τὰ σημεῖα κλέπτουσαι, τοὺς ἐλέγχους ἐκφεύγουσιν,7 ὡς ἀμήχανον ἔξευρεῖν μέχρι τίνος ἐστηκε τὸ πυρὸς ἢ τὸ σμαράγδιζον τῆς αὐγῆς, καὶ ἀπὸ τίνος ἄρχεται μηκέτι τοιοῦτον εἶναι, οὐν ἐν τῷ τῆλαυγεῖ καθορᾶται.

"Ωσπερ τοῖνυν ἐν τῷ ὑποδείγματι καὶ τὰς τῶν

1 προσπέσειεν C.
2 τοῦ ἡλίου] τοῦτο A, B, C, D, E; τοῦτο from ἡλίου alia m. F.
3 κατὰ τὸ σχῆμα τοῦ ἡλιακοῦ κύκλου in marg. alia m. F; τοῦ κύκλου τοῦ ἡλιακοῦ C, D.
4 πολύχρωμος A, D, E.
5 ὀπεκκλέπτουσα A, B.
6 μιγνύντα E, F.
7 φεύγουσιν E.

214
on something smooth, to recoil again upon themselves, and since the shape of the sun which is formed by the ray in the damp and smooth part of the air is circular, necessarily then the air also which is adjacent to the clouds is outlined by the reflecting brilliancy in conformity with the shape of the sun's disc. Now this brilliancy is both continuous with itself and separated. For although it is of many colours and multiform, imperceptibly it becomes intermingled with the various hues of the dyer's art, stealing unawares from our sight the point of mutual juncture of the various colours. Consequently we cannot possibly discern between the blue-green and the yellow the intervening space which both mingles together and separates the two different colours, or between the yellow and the purple, or between the purple and the amber. For when the rays of all the colours are seen together, they are both distinct and yet at the same time filch from our view the points of their juncture with one another, and they elude our scrutiny, so that it is impossible to discover how far the red or the green portion of the radiance extends, and at what point it begins to be no longer what it is observed to be in the distinct portion.1

Just as, therefore, in the illustration we distinguish

1 Basil seems to be ignorant of the order of the colours of the spectrum, for though he places "yellow" (πυραυγίς, "flame-colour") between "blue-green" (γλαυκόν) and "purple" (or "red," πορφύρον), he places "purple" or "red" between "yellow" and "amber" (ηλέκτρινον), whereas "amber," which ought to correspond to our "orange," is really between "yellow" and "red." But the Greek terms for the colours are vague, and no one of the equivalents used in the translation is really certain.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

χρωμάτων διαφόρας φανερῶς διαγινώσκομεν, καὶ
dιαίστασιν έτέρου πρός το έτερον οὐκ ἐστὶ τῇ
αἰσθήσει καταλαβεῖν,1 οὔτω μοι λόγισαι 2 δυνατόν
εἶναι καὶ περὶ τῶν θείων δογμάτων ἀναλογίσασθαι-
tὰς μὲν τῶν υποστάσεων ἰδιότητας, ὡσπερ τι
ἀνθὸς τῶν κατὰ τὴν ἴδιον φαινομένων, ἐπαστράπ-
tein 3 ἐκάστῳ τῶν ἐν τῇ ἀγίᾳ Τριάδι πιστευο-
μένοις τῆς δὲ κατὰ τὴν φύσιν ἰδιότητος μηδεμίαν
ἐτέρου πρός το έτερον ἐπισκεψθαί διαφοράν, ἀλλ'
ἐν τῇ κοινότητι τῆς οὐσίας τὰς γνωριστικὰς
ἰδιότητας 4 ἐπιλάμπειν ἐκάστῳ, καὶ γὰρ κάκει
ἐν τῷ υποδείγματι ἡ ἀπανγάζουσα τὴν πολύ-
χροον 5 ἐκείνην αὐγήν μία οὐσία ἢν, ἢ διὰ τῆς
ἡλιακῆς ἀκτίνος ἀνακλωμένη το δὲ ἀνθὸς τοῦ
φαινομένου πολυειδὲς: παιδεύοντος ἡμᾶς τοῦ
λόγου καὶ διὰ τῆς κτίσεως μὴ ἐνεποπαθεῖν 6 τοῖς
περὶ τοῦ δόγματος λόγοις, ὅταν εἰς τὸ δυσθεώ-
ρητον ἐμπεσόντες πρὸς τὴν τῶν λεγομένων
συγκατάθεσιν ἑλεγχμάσωμεν, ὡσπερ γὰρ ἐπὶ
tῶν τοῖς ὀφθαλμοῖς φαινομένων κρείττων ἐφάνη
τοῦ λόγου τῆς αἰτίας ἡ πείρα, οὔτω καὶ τῶν
ὑπεραναβεβηκότων δογμάτων κρείττων ἐστὶ τῆς
diα λογισμῶν καταλήψεως ἡ πίστις, καὶ τὸ
κεχωρισμένον ἐν υποστάσει καὶ τὸ συνημμένον ἐν
τῇ οὐσίᾳ διδάσκουσα. ἐπεὶ οὖν τὸ μὲν τι κοινὸν
ἐν τῇ ἀγίᾳ Τριάδι τὸ δὲ ἱδίαξον ὁ λόγος ἐνεθεώ-
ρησεν, ὃ μὲν τῆς κοινότητος λόγος 7 εἰς 8 τὴν

1 καταλαμβάνειν F.
2 λόγισαι νοεί A; λόγισαι from νοῆσαι alia m. F.
3 ἐπαναστράπτειν A; ἐπανάπτειν B.
4 οὐσιότητας E.
5 πολύχρωμον C, D; πολύχροον from πολύχρωμον alia m. F.
6 κενοπαθέων A, B, C, D, E.
7 ἐνεθεώρησεν . . . λόγος om. C, D.

216
clearly the different colours and yet cannot perceive by our senses any interval that separates the one from the other, conclude, I pray, that you may in the same way draw inferences from analogy regarding the divine dogmas. You may thus reason: that the individual traits of the Persons, which may be compared with a particular hue of the colours of the rainbow, flash their light upon each of those whom we believe to constitute the Holy Trinity; that, however, no difference can be perceived in the individual character of the nature of one as compared with another, although together with their community of substance the distinguishing characteristic traits of each shine forth. For in fact even in our illustration it is one substance which flashes forth that many-coloured ray, even the substance which through the sunbeam is bent back; but the hue of the rainbow we see is multi-form. Thus even though a created object, reason teaches us not to allow the discussion of dogma to make us uneasy whenever we fall into a matter difficult to understand and become dizzy when we face the conflict of the different propositions. For just as in the case of things which appear to our eyes experience seems better than a theory of causation, so too in the case of dogmas which transcend our comprehension faith is better than apprehension through processes of reasoning, for faith teaches us to understand that which is separated in person but at the same time united in substance. Since, therefore, reason has distinguished an element common to the Persons of the Trinity as well as an element peculiar to each, what reason shows is common is referred

8 εἰς from κατὰ ἄλλα m. F.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

οὐσίαν ἀνάγεταί, ἡ δὲ ὑπόστασις τὸ ἱδιαζον ἐκάστου σημεῖόν ἐστιν.

'Αλλ' ἵσως οἶται τις μὴ συμβαινείν τῶν ἀποδοθέντα περὶ τῆς υποστάσεως λόγου τῇ διανοίᾳ τῆς τοῦ ἀποστόλου γραφῆς, ἐν οἷς φησὶ περὶ τοῦ Κυρίου, ὅτι 'Απαύγασμα τῆς δόξης αὐτοῦ, καὶ χαρακτήρ τῆς υποστάσεως. εἰ γὰρ ὑπόστασιν ἀποδεδόκαμεν εἶναι τὴν συνδρομὴν τῶν περὶ ἐκαστον ἰδιωμάτων, ὁμολογεῖται δὲ, ὥσπερ ἐπὶ τοῦ Πατρός, εἶναι τι τὸ ἱδιαζόντως ἐπιθεωροῦμεν, δὲ οὐ μόνος ἐπιγινώσκεται, κατὰ τὸν αὐτὸν δὲ τρόπον καὶ περὶ τοῦ Μονογενοῦς τὸ ἵσον πιστεύεται πῶς ἐνταῦθα τὸ τῆς υποστάσεως ὄνομα τῷ Πατρὶ μόνῳ προσμαρτυρεῖ ἡ Γραφή, τὸν δὲ Τίὸν μορφὴν λέγει τῆς υποστάσεως, οὐκ ἐν ἰδίοις, ἀλλ' ἐν τοῖς τοῦ Πατρὸς γνωρίσμασι χαρακτηριζόμενον; εἰ γὰρ ἡ υπόστασις τὸ ἱδιαζον τῆς ἐκάστου υπάρξεως σημείον ἐστι, τοῦ δὲ Πατρὸς ἱδιόν τὸ ἁγεννήτως εἶναι ὁμολογεῖται, μεμόρφωται δὲ ὁ Τίὸς τοῖς τοῦ Πατρὸς ἰδιώμασιν, ἀρα οὐκέτι διαμένει τῷ Πατρὶ κατ᾽ ἐξαίρετον ἐπ᾽ αὐτοῦ μόνου τὸ ἁγεννητὸν λέγεσθαι, εὕπερ τῷ ἱδιάζοντι τοῦ Πατρὸς ἡ τοῦ Μονογενοῦς χαρακτηρίζεται υπάρξεις.

'Αλλ' ἡμεῖς τούτο φαμεν, ὃτι ἔτερον πληροὶ σκοποῦν ἐνταῦθα τῷ ἀποστόλῳ ὁ λόγος, πρὸς δὲν

1 ἐπιγινώσκεται B. 2 ἐπ' from ὑπ' alia m. F. 3 καὶ add. A, B, C, D, E, F. 4 τοῦ ἀποστόλου F.
LETTER XXXVIII

to the substance, and the Person is the individualizing note of each member of the Trinity.

But perhaps someone thinks that the doctrine of the person here presented does not agree with the conception in the writings of the apostle, where he\(^1\) says that the Lord is the brightness of His glory and the figure of His person. For if we have taught that person is the conflux of the individual traits of each member of the Trinity, and if all agree, as in the case of the Father, that that trait which is individually observed is something whereby that member alone is recognized, and if in the same way we hold the like belief about the Only-begotten also; how then does it happen that the Scriptures in the passage quoted testify to the term "person" for the Father alone, and speak of the Son as the form "of his person" or "hypostasis," as being characterized, that is, not by His own proper distinguishing notes but by those of the Father? For if the person or "hypostasis" is the distinctive sign of the existence of the several members of the Trinity, but being "unbegotten" is acknowledged to be peculiar to the Father, and the Son has been formed by the individual traits of the Father, then there no longer remains to the Father exclusively to be called "unbegotten" in a sense peculiar to Himself alone, if indeed the existence of the Only-begotten is characterized by the individual note peculiar to the Father.

But our answer is this, that the statement of the passage quoted fulfils a different purpose for the

\(^1\) Cf. Heb. 1. 3, where St. Paul uses the word \(\upsilon \nu\sigma \tau\alpha \sigma\nu\), "person."
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

βλέπων ταύτας ἔχρησατο ταἰς φωναῖς: δόξης ἀπαύγασμα λέγων, καὶ χαρακτήρα τῆς ὕποστάσεως· ὅπερ οἱ ἀκριβῶς νοήσας οὐδὲν εὑρήσει τοῖς παρί ἡμῶν εἰρημένοις μαχομένου, ἀλλὰ ἐπὶ τινος ἰδιαζούσης ἐννοίας τὸν λόγον διεξαγόμενον. οὐ γὰρ ὅπως διακριθεὶεν ἀπ’ ἀλλήλων αἱ ὑποστάσεις διὰ τῶν ἐπιφανομένων σημείων ὁ ἀποστολικὸς πραγματεύεται λόγος, ἀλλ’ ὅπως τὸ γνήσιόν τε καὶ ἀδιάστατον καὶ συνημμένον τῆς τοῦ Τίου πρὸς τὸν Πατέρα σχέσεως νοηθείη, καὶ ἐθυμόμενος 1 ὅς ὅν δόξα τοῦ Πατρὸς, καίτοιγε τὸ ἀληθεῖς οὕτως ἔχει, ἀλλὰ τοῦτο παραλιπτῶν ὡς ὀμολογοῦμεν, τὸ μή ἂλλο τι δόξης εἴδος ἐπὶ τοῦ Πατρὸς καὶ ἑτερον ἐπὶ τοῦ Τίου νοεῖν διδάσκων, αὐτῆς τῆς τοῦ Πατρὸς δόξης ἀπαύγασμα τῆν τοῦ Μονογενοῦς διορίζεται δόξαν, τὸ ἀδιαστάτως 2 συνεπινοεῖσθαι τῷ Πατρὶ τοῦ Τίον κατασκευάζων ἕκ τοῦ κατὰ τὸ φῶς ὑποδείγματος. ὡς γὰρ ἐκ τῆς φλογὸς μὲν ἡ αὐγή, οὐ μὴν ὑστέρα μετὰ τῇ φλόγῃ ἐστιν ἡ αὐγή, ἀλλ’ ὁμοῦ τε ἡ φλὸξ ἀνέλαμψε, καὶ συναπηγυμνάθη τὸ φῶς: οὕτω βούλεται καὶ ἐκ τοῦ Πατρὸς μὲν τῶν Τίον νοεῖσθαι, οὐ μὴν παρατάσει τινὶ διαστηματικῇ 4 τῆς τοῦ Πατρὸς ὑπάρξεως τῶν Μονογενῆς διορίξεται, ἀλλ’ ἀεὶ τῷ αἰτίῳ τὸ ἐξ αὐτοῦ συνυπολαμβάνειν.

Κατὰ τοῦ αὐτοῦ ὁμοί τρόπον, ὅππερ ἐφερμηνεύτων τὸν προαποδοθέντα νοῦν, καὶ ὑποστάσεως χαρακτήρα φησὶ, τοῖς σωματικοῖς ἡμᾶς ὑποδείγμασι 5 πρὸς 6 τήν τῶν ἀοράτων χειραγωγῶν

1 τινος from τῆς alia m. F. 2 ὃς editi; καὶ F.
3 ἀδιαστάτως E. 4 διαστηματικῇ E.
5 ὑποδείγμασι from δόγμασι alia m. F.

220
apostle, which purpose he had in mind when he used the words "the brightness of His glory and the figure of His person." And if you reach an accurate understanding of this purpose, you will find nothing that contradicts our statements, but that, on the contrary, his argument is carried on with a certain peculiar intent. The intention of the apostle is not to distinguish the Persons from one another by their evident marks, but to establish the true sonship, the indivisibility, and the intimacy of the relationship of the Son to the Father. For he does not say, "who being the glory of the Father," although this is the truth, but he takes this for granted, and in his endeavour to teach us not to conceive of one kind of glory in the Father and another in the Son, he defines the glory of the Only-begotten as the "brightness of the glory" of the Father, causing the Son to be associated inseparably with the Father in our thoughts by making use of the light by way of illustration. For just as the radiance is from the flame, and surely not after the flame, but at the very moment that the flame is kindled, the light also beams forth as brightness; so the apostle wishes the Son to be considered as from the Father, not surely that the Only-begotten should by any extent that forms an interval be separated from the existence of the Father, but that our minds should always conceive with the causing principle that which proceeds from it.

Then in the same manner, as if to interpret the preceding notion, he says, "and the figure of his person," conducting us by corporeal illustrations to the

6 ἐπὶ from καὶ alia m. F.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

κατανόησιν. ὡς γὰρ τὸ σῶμα πάντως ἐστὶν ἐν σχήματι, ἀλλ’ ἐτερος μὲν ὁ τοῦ σχήματος, ἐτερος δὲ ὁ τοῦ σῶματος λόγος, καὶ οὐκ ἂν τις ἀποδίδοις τὸν ἐκατέρου τούτων ὀρισμὸν συνενεχθείς τῷ περὶ τοῦ ἐτέρου πλὴν ἀλλὰ κὰν λόγῳ διακρίνης τὸ σχῆμα τοῦ σῶματος, ἡ φύσις οὐ παραδεχεται τὴν διάκρισιν, ἀλλὰ συνημμένως νοεῖται μετὰ τοῦ ἐτέρου τὸ ἐτερος οὕτως οἴεται δεῖν ὁ ἀπόστολος, κἂν ὁ τῆς πίστεως λόγος ἀσύγχυτος καὶ διηρημένη τῇ τῶν ὑποστάσεων διδάσκῃ διαφοράς, ἀλλὰ καὶ τὸ προσέχει καὶ οἶμαι συμφύσει τοῦ Μονογενοῦς πρὸς τὸν Πατέρα διὰ τῶν εἰρημένων παριστάναι, οὐχ ὡς οὐκ οὖντος ἐν ὑποστάσει καὶ τοῦ Μονογενοῦς, ἀλλ’ ὡς οὐ παραδεχομένου μεσότητα τινα τῆς ἑαυτοῦ πρὸς τὸν Πατέρα ἐνώσεως· ὡστε τὸν τῷ χαρακτηρί τοῦ Μονογενοῦς διὰ τῶν τῆς ψυχῆς ὀμμάτων ἐνατεύναντα καὶ τῆς τοῦ Πατρὸς ὑποστάσεως ἐν περινοια γενέσθαι, οὐκ ἔπαλλασσομένης οὔδε συναναμιγνυμείνης τῆς ἐπιθεωρομένης 5 αὐτοῖς ἰδιότητος, ὡς ὁ τῶ Πατρὶ τὴν γέννησιν, ἢ τῶ Τιῶ τῆς ἀγεννησίαν ἐπιμορφάξειν, ἀλλ’ ὡς οὐκ ἐνδεχόμενον τὸ ἐτέρον τὸ ἐτέρον διαξεύχατας, ἐφ’ ἑαυτοῦ μόνου καταλαβεῖν ἀπὸ τὸ λειπόμενον, οὔδε γὰρ ἐστὶ δυνατόν, Τίνων ὀνομάσαντα, μὴ καὶ Πατρὸς ἐν περινοια γενέσθαι, σχετικῶς τῆς προσηγορίας ταύτης καὶ τὸν Πατέρα συνεμφαίνουσι.

1 σώματος F. 2 σχήματος F. 3 διακρίνη C, D, F. 4 παρίστησιν editi; παριστάναι R. J. D. 5 ἐπιθεωρούσης E. 6 διαξεύξατος E. 7 μόνον C, D. 8 καταλαβεῖν from καταλαμβάνειν alia m. F.
understanding of things invisible. For as the body consists altogether in form, although the principle of the form is different from that of the body, and no one in giving a definition of each would identify it with the definition given for the other—with this difference, however, that even if by reason you separate form from body, nature does not admit of the separation, but the one is always thought of in connection with the other; just so the apostle thinks that, even if the doctrine of the faith teaches that the different Persons are unconfounded and distinct from one another, he is bound to set forth in the words above quoted the continuity and as it were congenital unity of the Only-begotten in relation to the Father; and he states this, not as if the Only-begotten were not also in "hypostasis" or person, but as if He did not admit any interspace interrupting His oneness with the Father; so that he who gazes intently with his soul's eyes upon the "figure" of the Only-begotten at the same time becomes keenly aware of the "hypostasis" or person of the Father, their recognized individuality not being transferred from one to the other nor yet intermingled, so that we could falsely ascribe either begottenness to the Father or unbegottenness to the Son, but that, if we should disunite the one from the other—an impossible thing—we should apprehend alone by itself the one remaining. For in naming the Son it is impossible not to be keenly aware of the Father also, the appellation "Son" implicitly connoting the Father as well.

1 i.e. not in the sense that the relationship between the Father and Son is merely a figure of speech and that the Father and the Son are not distinct Persons.
'Επειδὴ τοίνυν ὁ ἐωρακὼς τὸν Τίδον ὅρα τὸν Πατέρα, καθὼς φησιν ἐν εὐαγγελίοις ὁ Κύριος, διὰ τούτο χαρακτηρά φησιν εἶναι τὸν Μονογενῆ τῆς τοῦ Πατρὸς ὑποστάσεως. καὶ ὡς ἄν μᾶλλον ἐπιγνωσθείη τὸ νόημα, καὶ ἄλλας συμπαράλληψις ὁμεθα τοῦ ἀποστόλου φωνάς, ἐν αἷς εἰκόνα τοῦ Ἰησοῦ τοῦ ἀστάτου, καὶ τῆς ἀγαθότητος αὐτοῦ πάλιν εἰκόνα φησίν, οὐχὶ τῷ διαφέρειν τοῦ ἀρχετύπου τῆς εἰκόνα κατὰ τὸν τῆς ἀφοσίας καὶ τῆς ἀγαθότητος λόγου, ἀλλ' ἕνα δειχθῇ ὅτι ταύτων τῷ πρωτοτύπῳ ἐστί, καὶ ἔτερον ἦ. οὐ γὰρ ἂν ὁ τῆς εἰκόνος διασωθείη λόγος, εἰ μὴ διὰ πάντων τὸ ἐναρχῆς ἔχοι\(^1\) καὶ ἀπαράλλακτον. οὐκοῦν ὁ τὸ τῆς εἰκόνος κατανοήσας κάλλος ἐν περινοῖᾳ τοῦ ἀρχετύπου γίνεται. καὶ ὁ τοῦ Τίου τὴν οἴονει μορφὴν τῇ διανοίᾳ λαβὼν τῆς πατρικῆς ὑποστάσεως τὸν χαρακτήρα ὀνειτυπώσατο, βλέπων διὰ τούτου ἐκείνου, οὐ τὴν ἀγέννησιν τοῦ Πατρὸς ἐν τῷ ἀπεικονίσματι βλέπων (ἡ γὰρ ἂν δ' ὄλου ταύτων ἦν καὶ οὐχ ἔτερον), ἀλλὰ τὸ ἀγέννητον κάλλος ἐν τῷ γεννητῷ κατοπτεύσας. ὡσπερ γὰρ\(^2\) ὃ ἐν τῷ καθαρῷ κατόπτρῳ τῆς γενομένης τῆς μορφῆς ἐμφάσιν κατανοήσας, ἐναρχῇ τοῦ ἀπεικονισθέντος προσώπου τῆς γνώσεως ἔσχεν, οὕτως ὁ τὸν Τίον ἐπιγνοὺς τὸν χαρακτῆρα τῆς πατρικῆς ὑποστάσεως, διὰ τῆς τοῦ Τίου γνώσεως,

\(^1\) \(\epsilonχε\) F. 
\(^2\) γαρ om. A, B, C, D, F.

\(^1\) Cf. John 14. 9: Δέγει αὐτῷ ὁ Ἰησοῦς, Τοσοῦτον χρόνον μεθ' ὑμῶν εἰμί, καὶ οὐκ ἐγνωκάς με, Φίλιππε; ὁ ἐωρακὼς ἐμὲ ἐώρακε τὸν πατέρα. "Jesus saith to him, Have I been so long a time with you: and have you not known me, Philip? He that seeth Me seeth the Father also."
Therefore, since he that hath seen the Son seeth the Father also, as the Lord says in the Gospels,¹ on this account the apostle says that the Only-begotten is “the figure of His (that is, the Father’s) person.” And in order that the thought may be more clearly perceived, we shall take up still other expressions of the apostle, where he² speaks of the Son as “the image of the invisible God,” and again³ as the “image of His goodness,” using the word “image” not by reason of any difference between image and archetype so far as the principles of invisibility and goodness are concerned, but that it may be shown that the image is identical with the prototype, even though it is different. For the principle of the image would not be preserved, unless it should in all respects retain the manifest and invariable likeness to the original. Accordingly, he who has conceived the beauty of the image is keenly aware of the archetype. And he who grasps in thought the “form,” so to speak, of the Son images “the figure of His (the Father’s) person” or “hypostasis,” seeing the latter through the former, not seeing, however, in the copy any unbegottenness of the Father (for in that case the Son would assuredly be completely identical with the Father and not different), but discerning the unbegotten beauty in the Begotten. For just as one, perceiving in a bright mirror the reflection of a shape that appears therein, receives a definite knowledge of the imaged face, so he who recognizes the Son, through his knowledge of the Son receives in his heart the “figure of His (the

² Col. 1. 15.
³ Wis. 7. 26. These are not the words of the apostle, but are ascribed to Solomon.

225
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

ἐν τῇ καρδίᾳ ἐδέξατο. 1 πάντα γὰρ τὰ τοῦ Πατρὸς ἐν τῷ Τίῳ καθοράται, καὶ πάντα τὰ τοῦ Τίῳ τοῦ Πατρὸς ἐστιν, ἐπειδὴ καὶ ὅλος ὁ Τίῳ ἐν τῷ Πατρὶ μένει καὶ ὅλον ἔχει πάλιν ἐν ἐαυτῷ τὸν Πατέρα. ὡστε ἡ τοῦ Τίῳ ὑπόστασις οἰονεὶ μορφὴ καὶ πρόσωπον γίνεται τῆς τοῦ Πατρὸς ἐπιγεννόμεσως· καὶ ἡ τοῦ Πατρὸς ὑπόστασις ἐν τῇ τοῦ Τίῳ μορφῇ ἐπιγεννόμεσκεται, μενούσης αὐτοῖς τῆς ἐπιθεωρουμένης ἰδιότητος εἰς διάκρισιν ἐναργη ῥ τῶν ὑποστάσεων.

XXXIX

Ἰουλιανὸς Βασιλείῳ 2

Ἡ μὲν παροιμία φησίν, Ὡὐ πόλεμον ἀγγέλλεις, ἐγὼ δὲ προσθείην ἐκ τῆς κωμῳδίας, Ὡ χρυσὸν ἀγγείλας ἐπῶν. ἵθι οὖν, ἕργοις αὐτὸ δεῖξον,

1 εἰσεδέξατο E; εἰσεδέξατο from ἐδέξατο alia m. F.
2 This letter is not to be found in any of the six MSS. examined by the writer.

1 Cf. John 14. 10: οὐ πιστεύεις ὅτι ἐγὼ ἐν τῷ πατρὶ, καὶ ὁ πατὴρ ἐν ἐμοί ἐστι; τὰ ῥήματα ἃ ἐγὼ λαλῶ ὑμῖν, ἀπ’ ἔμαυτον ὦ λαλῶ. ὃ δὲ πατὴρ ὁ ἐν ἐμοὶ μένων, αὐτὸς ποιεῖ τὰ ἔργα, etc.

"Do you not believe that I am in the Father, and the Father in Me? The words that I speak to you, I speak not of Myself. But the Father who abideth in Me, He doth the works," etc.

2 Thus Basil expresses the orthodoxy of the Trinity in one phrase: μία οὐσία, τρεῖς ὑπόστασεις, "one substance, three persons." Never again in his writings does he use ὑπόστασις in its earlier sense, as equivalent to οὐσία. Cf. Athan. Orat. contra Arianos, iii. 64 and iv. 33.

3 This letter of Julian, the Emperor, is addressed to a certain Basil, but in all probability not to ours. In fact,
LETTER XXXIX

Father's) person or "hypostasis." For all the attributes of the Father are beheld in the Son, and all the attributes of the Son belong to the Father, in so much as the Son abides wholly in the Father and in turn has the Father wholly in Himself. Thus the person or "hypostasis" of the Son becomes as it were the form and countenance by which the Father is made known, and the person or "hypostasis" of the Father is made known in the form of the Son, although their observed individuality abides in each to serve as a clear differentiation of their persons or "hypostases." 2

LETTER XXXIX

JULIAN TO BASIL 3

The proverb 4 says, "Thou comest not as messenger of war," but I would add a phrase from comedy, 5 "O messenger of golden words." Come apart from the information in these letters (XXXIX, XL, XLI), nothing is known of Basil's acquaintance with Julian, except that, by reason of having attended the University of Athens at about the same time, they probably had met. Furthermore, the letter does not appear in any of the MSS. of Basil. Claude Morel inserted it in his edition of St. Basil in 1618, apparently taking it from some edition of the works of the Emperor Julian. The letter seems to have been written just after Julian became Emperor, in the winter of 361–362, since of that period alone can one say that Julian, as Emperor, enjoyed any leisure. Cf. Bessières; also Bidez and Cumont, Epistolae Imp. Caesaris Flavii Claudii Juliani, London 1922, p. 39; but see, for the opinion that this letter is not addressed to some other Basil, W. C. Wright's Julian in L.C.L., introduction Vol. II, p. xli.

4 Plut. Legg. iv. 702 D; Phaedr. 242 B.
5 Aristoph. Plut. 268.
kaí σπεύδε παρ’ ἡμᾶς· ἀφίξῃ γὰρ φίλος παρὰ φίλοιν.

Ἡ δὲ περὶ τὰ πράγματα κοινῆ καὶ συνεχῆς ἀσχολία δοκεῖ μὲν εἶναι πως τοὺς πάρεργον αὐτῷ ποιοῦσιν ἐπαχθῆς, οἱ δὲ τῆς ἐπιμελείας κοινωνικῶν "τούτατε εἰσιν ἐπιεικεῖς, ὡς ἐμαυτῶν πείθω, καὶ συνετοί, καὶ πάντως ἰκανοὶ πρὸς πάντα. διδοὺμι¹ οὖν μοι ῥαστῶν, ὃςτε ἐξεῖναι μηδὲν ὀλιγωροῦντι καὶ ἀναπαύεσθαι· σύνεσμεν γὰρ ἀλλήλοις οὐ μετὰ τῆς αὐλικῆς ὑποκρίσεως μόνης, ἂς² οἴμαι σε μέχρι τοῦν δεύρο πεπειράσθαι, καθ’ ἦν ἐπιτιμῶντες μισοῦσι τηλικοῦτον μῖσος, ἥλικον οὐδὲ τοὺς πολεμιωτάτους, ἀλλὰ μετὰ τῆς προσηκούσης ἀλλήλους³ ἐλευθερίας ἐξελέγχουτε τε ὅταν δεῦ καὶ ἐπιτιμῶντες οὐκ ἔλαττον φιλοῦμεν ἀλλήλους τῶν σφόδρα ἔταίρων. ἐνθεὶ ἐξεστὶν ἡμῖν (ἀπεῖν δὲ φθόνους) ἀνειμένοις τε σπουδαίειν καὶ σπουδαία-ζουσι μὴ ταλαίπωρεῖσθαι, καθευδεὶς δὲ ἄδεως, ἐπεὶ καὶ ἐγρηγορῶς οὐχ ὑπὲρ ἐαυτοῦ μᾶλλον ἢ καὶ ὑπὲρ τῶν ἄλλων ἀπαντῶν, ὡς εἰκός, ἐγρήγορα.

Ταύτα ἴσως, κατηδολέχησά σοι καὶ κατ-ελήρησα, παθῶν τι βλακώδες (ἐπήνεσα γὰρ ἐμαυτόν, ὡσπερ Ἀστυδάμας), ἀλλ’ ἱνα σε πεῖσω προὔργου τι μᾶλλον ἡμῖν τὴν σὴν παρουσίαν,

² ἃς μόνης ed. Jul.

¹ Cf. Plat. Menexen. 247 B.
² Julian intimates that his first personal interest is his studies.
³ i.e. to himself, the Emperor.
⁴ An Athenian tragic poet of the middle of the fourth century B.C. He wrote a laudatory inscription to be carved.

228
then, prove this in deed, and hasten to us; for you will come as friend to friend.¹

Routine and unremitting occupation in public affairs seems somehow irksome to those who engage in it as a secondary matter,² but those who share with me the responsibility are, I am convinced, honourable, intelligent, and altogether competent for every task. I therefore grant myself a respite, so that without neglect of duty it is permitted to me even to take a holiday. For our association with one another has nothing in it of that mere court hypocrisy—of which I believe you have had experience before—according to which men praise while hating with such a hatred as they do not feel even for their worst enemies, but is attended by a mutually becoming frankness, so that as the occasion demands we refute and reprove one another, yet love one another no less dearly than do the closest comrades. For this reason it is permitted to us³ (may no envy attend my words!), both in my hours of relaxation to study and in study not to grow weary, but to sleep securely, seeing that even when I am awake it is not so much for myself that I am wakeful but, in all likelihood, for all the rest.

In all this I have perhaps wearied you with my prattling and my idle talk, being afflicted with a sort of dullness of wit (for you see I have been praising myself, as Astydamas⁴ did), but I write this letter with the purpose of convincing you that your

upon a pedestal of a bust of himself which the people had voted in his honour, and Philemon the comic poet gibed at him in the line, σαυτὴν ἐπανεῖς ὑπὲρ Ἀστυδάμας ποτε, "You praise yourself, as Astydamas once did." See Philemon, frag. 190 (Kock), and Suidas, s.v. σαυτὸν ἐπανεῖς.

229
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

άτε ἀνδρὸς ἐμφρονος, ποιήσειν ἡ παραιρήσεσθαί τι τοῦ καιροῦ, ταῦτα ἐπέστειλα. σπεῦδε οὖν, ὅπερ ἔφην, δημοσίως χρησόμενον δρόμῳ. συν-διατρίψας δὲ ἡμῖν ἐφ' ὁσού1 σου φίλον, οἵπερ ἀν θέλης ὕφ' ἡμῶν πεμπόμενοι, ὡς προσήκον ἐστί, βαδιῇ.

XL

'Ιουλιανὸς Βασιλείῳ ἐπ' ἑαυτῷ ἕμφυτόν μοι ἐκ παιδοθεν γαληνοῦ καὶ φιλάνθρωπον μέχρι τοῦ παρόντος ἐπιδεικνύμενος, πάντας ὑπηκόους ἐκομίσαμεν2 τοὺς οἰκονόμας την ύφ' ἡλιον. ἵδον γὰρ πάν γένος βαρβάρων μέχρις ὀρίων 'Οκεανοῦ4 δώρα μοι κόμιζον ἥκε παρὰ ποσὶ τοῖς ἐμοῖς. ὅμοιος δὲ καὶ Σαγίδαρες οἱ παρὰ τὸν Δαύνουβιν ἐκτραφέντες, οἱ εὐμορφο-

1 ὁσον codd. Jul.
2 'Ιουλιανὸς βασιλείου βασιλείῳ E; 'Ιουλιανὸς τοῦ παραβατοῦ πρὸς τὸν μέγαν βασιλείου C, D; 'Ιουλιανὸς πρὸς τὸν ἅγιον βασιλείου F.
3 ἐκομίσαμην E.
4 ποταμοῦ add. C, D, F.

1 The privilege of free transport at the expense of the State, granted to ecclesiastics by Constantine in 314, was revoked by Julian in 362 (Codex Theodos. 8. 5, 12), who reserved to himself the right to make exceptions as a special mark of his favour. Cf. Wright's Introd. to Vol. III. of the L.C.L. edition of Julian.
2 This and the following letter (XLI) are unanimously regarded as spurious, and they were so recognized even in Byzantine times; cf. the remark of the Byzantine scholiast (P.G. 32, 341): ὅτε τῇ ἡδεί, ὅτε τῇ χαράκτηρι, ὅτε μὴν τῇ λέξει τῆς ἐρμηνείας δοκοῦσι μοι προσήκειν αἱ δύο αὐταί ἐπιστολαὶ.
LETTER XL

presence, as a man of wisdom, will be serviceable rather than cause me to lose any time. Therefore, as I have said, hasten; you will use a State conveyance. When you have stayed with me as long as you like, you will be conveyed by me, and you will go, as is proper, wherever you will.

LETTER XL

JULIAN TO BASIL 2

Although we have always, up to the present time, exhibited that leniency and kindness which have been my natural disposition from boyhood, yet we have brought all the peoples that live under the sun beneath our sway. For lo! every race of barbarians, to the borders of the Ocean, have come bringing us gifts, and have placed them at our feet. And in like manner, even the Sagadares, who live along the Danube—that comely-parti-coloured-

τοῖς ἀνδράσιν οἷς ἀνάκεινται, "Neither in character, nor stamp, nor choice of expression do these two letters seem to me to befit the men to whom they are attributed." These letters also do not appear in most of the best MSS., and from this we must infer that they were introduced into the tradition at a late date. The name of the Emperor Julian brought them prominent attention. The content of the letters seems to have been drawn from a fabulous story of Julian now extant only in a Syriac translation. The assumed date is June or July, 362.

The variant readings of the MSS. are so numerous, that we have seen fit to note only the more significant as found in the MSS. CDEF of St. Basil.

3 Julian always uses the name "Ister" for the Danube; cf. Wright's Julian, Vol. III. Introd., p. xlii.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

ποικιλοκανθαρόμορφοι,1 οἷς οὐκ ἐστὶ θέα ὁμοιοειδὴς ἀνθρώπων, ἀλλὰ μορφὴ ἀγριαίνουσα, οὕτως κατὰ τὴν ἑυστῶσαν προκαλυνδοῦνται 2 ἵνα συν τοῖς ἐμοῖς, ὑπισχυμένοι μοι ποιεῖν ἕκεῖνα ἀπερ ἡ ἐμὴ πρέπει 3 βασιλεία. οὐχὶ δὲ ἐν τούτῳ μόνῳ ἐλκομαι, ἀλλὰ δεὶ με σὺν πολλῷ τῷ τάχει καταλαβεῖν τὴν Περσῶν καὶ τροπώσασθαι Σάπφωριν 4 ἐκεῖνον τὸν ἀπόγονον Δαρείου γεγονότα, ἄχρις οὗ ὑπόροφος καὶ ὑποτελής μοι γένηται ἐν ταῦτῳ 5 δὲ καὶ τὴν Ἰνδῶν καὶ τὴν 6 Σαρακηνῶν περιοικίδα ἐκπορθήσαται, ἄχρις οὕτως πάντες ἐν δεύτερα τάξει τῆς ἐμῆς γένουσαι ὑπόφοροι καὶ ὑποτελεῖς.

Ἀλλ’ αὐτὸς ἐπέκεινα τῆς τούτων δυνάμεως πεφρονήκας, εὐλάβειαν λέγων ἐνδεδυσθαί, ἀναίδειαν δὲ προβαλλόμενος7 καὶ πανταχῶ διαφημίζων ἀνάξιον με τῆς τῶν Ῥωμαίῶν βασιλείας γεγονέναι. ἡ οὖν οἰσθα αὐτὸς ὡς Κωνσταντίου 8 τοῦ κρατίστου ἀπόγονος γέγονα; καὶ τούτων οὕτω γνωσθέντων ἡμῖν σοῦ εἰνεκα, οὐδὲ τῆς προτέρας ἐξέστημεν διαθέσεως, ἢς ἐτί νέοι ὀντες τῇ ἡλικίᾳ 9 ἐγὼ τε καὶ σὺ μετεσχήκαμεν. ἀλλὰ γαληνῶ τῷ φρονήματι θεσπίζω δέκα ἐκατοντάδας χρυσίου λιτρῶν ἕξαποστάληται μοι παρὰ σοῦ ἐν τῇ παρόδῳ μου 10 τῇ κατὰ τὴν Καίσαρος, ἔτι μου κατὰ τὴν λεωφόρον ὑπάρχοντος, σὺν πολλῷ τῷ τάχει ἄφικνυμενοι μοι ἐπὶ τὸν Περσικὸν πόλεμον 11 ἐτοίμου ὀντος μου,12 εἰ μὴ τοῦτο

1 εὐμορφοποικιλοκανθαρόμορφοι C, D; εὐμορφοποικιλοκανθαρόμορφοι F: εὐμορφοποικιλοκανθαρόμορφοι editi.
2 προκαλυνδοῦνται F. 3 πρέπει] ἀρμόζει E, F. 4 Σάπφωριν E. 5 ἐν ταύτῳ] ἐνταῦθα F.

232
beetle-shaped folk, whose appearance has no likeness to human kind, and whose shape is savage—these at the present grovel before my feet, and promise to do whatever accords with my sovereignty. And not by all this alone am I harried, but I must now with all speed overthrow the Empire of Persia and rout Saporis, that descendant of Darius, until he becomes my tributary and pays me taxes; and at the same time I must pillage the border-lands of both the Indians and Saracens, until all these peoples, taking second place in my Empire, become tributary to it, and pay us taxes.

But you yourself have surpassed the power of these in arrogance, claiming to have put on piety, and cloaking yourself with shamelessness, and everywhere spreading it abroad that I have proved myself unworthy to be Emperor of the Romans. Do you not know of yourself that I am a descendant of the mighty Constantine? Although all these things, as stated, have been known to us concerning you, we have not abandoned that former regard which we both felt for one another in our youth. Nay, out of my spirit of leniency I decree that a thousand pounds of gold be delivered to me by you as I pass through Caesarea, before I have yet left the highway, as I hasten at full speed to the Persian war; for I am ready, if you do not obey in this, to lay

---

6 τῶν E, F.
7 περιβαλλόμενος (περι in ras. et in marg., alia m.) F.
8 κωνσταντοῦ C, D, E. 9 τὴν ἡλικίαν F.
10 μου om. C, D, F.
11 ἐπὶ τῶν Περσικῶν χόλεμον] κατὰ τὴν Περσῶν E, F.
12 ἐτοίμου ἔντος μου] καὶ C, D.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

ποιήσεις, πάντα τόποιν ἀνασκευάσαι τῆς Ἐκκλησίας καὶ τὰ πάλαι αὐτῆς ἐγγεγραμμένα καλλιουργήματα καταστρέψαι, καὶ κατὰ τόπον μαύσωμα τε καὶ ἀγάλματα ἀναστήσαι, ὡστε με πείσειν πάντας εἰκεῖν βασίλει Ῥωμαίων, καὶ μὴ ὑπεραιρεθεῖαι. τὸ ὀνὸν ἐξονομασθὲν χρυσόν ἔξαρθμοζυγοκαμπανοτρυταίσας καὶ διαμετρήσας, ἀσφαλῶς ἐξαποστειλῶν μοι δι’ οἰκεῖου πιστοῦ σοι ὄντος, δακτυλίῳ τῷ σῷ σφραγισάμενος, ὡστε μὲ ἐπεγνωκότα κἀ̃ν ὑπεῖ ποτὲ τοῦ καιρὸν τὸ ἀπαραίτητον, γαληνὸν σοι γενέσθαι περὶ τὰ ἐπταισμένα. ᾧ δὲ ἀνέγνων, ἐγνών καὶ κατέγνων.7

XLI

Βασίλειος Ἰουλιανῷ πρὸς ταύτα 8

Μικρά σου τὰ τῆς παροῦσης τύχης ἀνδραγαθήματα, καὶ φαύλα τὰ τῆς ἠριστείας, ἃς αὐτὸς ἠρίστευες καθ’ ἡμῶν, οὐχὶ δὲ καθ’ ἡμῶν, ἀλλὰ καθ’ ἑαυτοῦ. ὡς ἐγὼ δὲ τρόμῳ συνέχομαι ὅταν λάβω κατὰ νοῦν πορφυρίδα σε περιβεβλήσθαι, στεφάνῳ δὲ τὴν ἀτίμον κεκοσμήσθαι σοι κεφα-

LETTER XLI

waste every spot in Caesarea, to level to the ground its splendid structures erected long ago, and in their places to set up temples and images of the gods, that I may persuade all men to yield to the Emperor of the Romans, and not unduly exalt themselves. Therefore have the stipulated sum counted-out-weighed-in-scales-and-balances and duly measured; seal it with your own ring, and in the care of a servant faithful to you send it safely to me, that I, recognizing, however tardily, the exigencies of the times,\(^1\) may become lenient with you for your failings. What I have read I have understood, and have condemned.\(^2\)

LETTER XLI

Basil to Julian, a Reply to the Preceding \(^3\)

Trivial are the gallant exploits of your present high fortune, and paltry are those of your own prowess as exhibited in your heroic action against us—not, not against us, but against yourself. As for me, I am seized with trembling when I realize that you have been clothed in purple, and that your dishonoured head has been adorned with a crown;

\(^{1}\) There was urgent business ahead of Julian (the Persian war); recognizing its importance he would, if he got the money, pass on and let Basil go.

\(^{2}\) Compare the last sentence in Basil’s alleged reply, Letter XLI. There is little MS. authority for either of these remarks.

\(^{3}\) Generally regarded as spurious, cf. previous letter, note 1. The assumed date is the same as for the preceding letter.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

λήν, ὁπερ δίχα εὐσεβείας οὐκ ἐντιμον, ἀλλ' ἀτιμον καθίστησι σοι τὴν βασιλείαν. ἀλλ' αὐτὸς, ἔπανελθὼν καὶ ὑπερμεγέθης γενόμενος, ὡς γε φαύλοι καὶ μισόκαλοι δαίμονες εἴλκυσάν σε εἰς τοῦτο, οὐ μόνον ὑπὲρ πᾶσαν φύσιν ἀνθρώπων φρονεῖν ἤρξο, ἀλλὰ καὶ εἰς Θεὸν ὑπεραίρεσθαι, καὶ τὴν πάντων μητέρα καὶ τῆθην ᾑΕκκλησίαν ἐνυβρίζειν, μηνύσει χρησάμενος πρὸς με τὸν εὐτελέστατον χιλιάδα χρυσίον λιτρῶν ἐξαπο-
σταλῆναί σοι παρ' ἔμοι.

Καὶ ἡ μὲν τοῦ χρυσίου ὀλκὴ οὖν ἐθάμβησέ μου τὴν διάνοιαν, εἰ καὶ μάλα πολλῇ καθέστηκεν, ἀλλὰ δακρύσαί με πικρῶς παρεσκεύασεν ἐπὶ τῇ τοιαύτῃ ταχιστῇ σοῦ ἀπωλείᾳ. ἐντεθύμημαι γὰρ καθ' ἐαυτὸν ὡς ἐγώ τε αὐτός καὶ ἡ σή καλοκά-
γαθία κοινῶς μεμαθήκαμεν τὰ ἱερὰ καὶ βέλτιστα γράμματα. ἐκάτερον δὲ διεξήγθημεν τὰς ἀγίας καὶ θεοπνεύστους Γραφὰς, καὶ ἐλάνθανε μὲν σε τότε οὐδέν, ἔπὶ δὲ τοῦ παρόντος ἀκόςμητος καθέστηκας, ὑπὸ τοιούτου φρονῆματος στρατο-
πεδευθεῖς. ήδεις ἡμᾶς πρὸ τῆς χθές, γαληνότατε, ἐπ' ἀπληστία χρημάτων μὴ πολιτεύσθαι νῦν ἐγὼ κατὰ τὴν ἐνεστῶσαν δέκα ἐκατοντάδας χρυσίον λιτρῶν ἐξαποσταλῆναί σοι ἐπεξήγησας παρ' ἡμῶν. φεύσασθαι ἡμῶν τοῖνυν θέλησον, γα-
ληνότατε, τοσαῦτα κεκτημένων ὡσα, ἀν τῷ μεροῦν ἀνέκτησον μαγείαν, ἀργεῖ ὡς εἰκὸς παρ' ἡμῶν μαγείρων τεχνῆ, μάχαιρα ἐν αὐτῶν αἴμασιν οὐ προσομιλεῖ. τὰ μέγιστα τῶν παρ' ἡμῖν βρωμάτων, ἐν οἷς ἡ δαψίλεια,

1 ἔνδοξον F. 2 περὶ τὰ τοιαῦτα for eis τοῖτο F. 3 ἡρξο om. C, D, E. 4 ἐπιχειρεῖς add. F.
LETTER XLI

for all this without piety is not honourable, but renders your reign dishonoured. But it is you yourself who, when you returned and became exceedingly great (though vile and malicious demons dragged you to this eminence!), began not only to be arrogant beyond all human kind, but even to exalt yourself to divinity and to insult the Church, the mother of all and nurse, by issuing a summons to my most unworthy self that a thousand pounds of gold be delivered to you by me.

Now the weight of the gold did not astound my spirit, very great as it was; but it did cause me to weep bitterly over your so speedy destruction. For I recalled to my thoughts how your excellency and I together studied the sacred and best literature. Each of us read the holy and divinely-inspired Scriptures through, and at that time nothing escaped you, although at the present time you have become unruly, beleaguered by that arrogance of yours. It was only the day before yesterday, most lenient sir, that you knew that I was living in no satiety of wealth, and yet now this very day you have demanded that a thousand pounds of gold be delivered to you by me. Be pleased to spare us, therefore, most lenient sir, for the total of my provisions will not be enough, if we desire to eat to-day, to suffice for my needs. For the art of cooking is, very properly, not practised in my house, and my cook’s knife has no dealings with blood. The chief of my foods, wherein lies

1 Julian returned to Constantinople from Gaul on Dec. 11, 361, becoming Emperor on the death of Constantius.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

χόρτων φύλλα σὺν ἀρτῷ τραχυτάτῳ ἦμων τὰ αἰσθητήρια ὑπὸ τῆς γαστριμαργίας ἐπ' ἀφροσύνη πολιτεύεσθαι.

Ἀπῆγγειλε δὲ μοι καὶ τούτο Δαύδος ὁ σὸς περὶ τὰ ἐσπουδασμένα, ὥς γυνὴ τις προσέλευσιν ἐποίησατο ἐπὶ τῆς σῆς γαληνότητος ἐπ' ἀπωλείᾳ παίδος αὐτῆς φαρμακευθέντος, καὶ ὡς κεκριται παρ' ὑμῶν φαρμακοῦς μὲν μηδαμοῦ εἶναι, ὡντας δὲ ἀναίρεσθαι, ἢ ἐκείνους μόνους περιποιεῖσθαι οἷς ἡ μάχη πρὸς τὰ θηρία. καὶ τούτο, ὀρθῶς κριθέν παρ' ὑμῶν, ἔξενον μοι πέφυνε. παντὸς γὰρ γέλωτος ἀνάμεστον τυγχάνει, πῶς τὰ μεγάλα ἀλγητῶν τραυμάτων μικρός φαρμάκος ἐπιχειρεῖς θεραπεύειν. Θεοῦ γὰρ ἐνυβρίσας, χρῆναι καὶ ὀρφανῶν μάτην πρόνοιαν ποιῆ. τὸ μὲν γὰρ μανικὸν καὶ ἐπικίνδυνον, τὸ δὲ φιλοκιντήριμον καὶ συμπάθος.

Ἐπαχθὲς ἦμῖν λέγειν πρὸς βασιλέα, ἰδιώτας ὡντας, ἐπαχθέστερον δὲ σοι φανήσεται τὸ λέγειν πρὸς Θεοῦ. οὐδεὶς γὰρ μεσίτης Θεοῦ καὶ ἀνθρώπων φανήσεται. ἀ μέντοι ἀνέγνωσ, οὐκ ἐγνως: εἰ ἔγαρ ἐγνως, οὐκ ἂν κατέγνως.

1 β. α. χ. τάτῳ C, D. 2 ἐκθαμβεῖσθαι C, D, E, MSS. Jul.
3 σὸς om. E, F. 4 ὡμῖν F.
5 ἐπιχειρεῖς θεραπεύειν] λατρεύειν ἐπιχειρεῖς F.
6 ἀ μέντοι ἀνέγνωσ, οὐκ ἐγνως: εἰ ἔγαρ ἐγνως, οὐκ ἂν κατέγνως om. C, D, E.

238
LETTER XLI

our abundance, are leaves of herbs, very coarse bread, and sour wine; consequently our faculties are not so dulled by gluttony that we devote our life to folly.

Your much-admired tribune Lausus, true companion of your pursuits, told me this also: that a certain woman paid a visit to your lenient self—the occasion being the death of her son by poisoning; and that you decreed that poisoners are not allowed to exist, but that if they do exist, they are to be destroyed—or, at least, that only those may survive who are assigned to fight with the wild beasts. This decision, so wisely decided by you, seemed strange to me. For it is utterly ludicrous that you should attempt to allay the lady’s great anguish, caused by the murder, by means of slight remedies. Indeed, after you have insulted God, it is in vain that you provide for widows and orphans. For the one is madness and fraught with danger, whereas the latter beseems a man who is compassionate and moved by sympathy.

It is a grievous thing for us, a private citizen, to speak to an emperor; but it will appear to you still more grievous to speak to God. For no mediator between God and man will be at hand. Now what you have read you have not understood; for if you had understood you would not have condemned.

1 Cf. St. Cyprian, Letter XV: legibus vestris bene atque utiliter censuistis delatores non esse.
2 The Greek word for “poisons” also means “drugs” or “remedies.” There seems to be a play on the two meanings.
3 Cf. Soz. v. 18, where the closing words of Letter XL are attributed to Julian as addressed “to the bishops,” and the closing words of Letter XLI are ascribed to these bishops in answer to Julian. Cf. also note 4 of the previous letter.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

XLII

Πρὸς Χίλωνα τὸν αὐτοῦ μαθητὴν

Σωτηρίου πράγματος αἵτιον γενήσομαι σοι, ὃ γνύσθε ἀδελφέ, εἰ ἢδέως συμβουλευθείς παρ' ἡμῶν τὰ πρακτεῖα, μάλιστα περὶ ὅν ἡμᾶς αὐτὸς παρεκάλεσας συμβουλεύσαι σοι. τὸ μὲν γὰρ κατάρξασθαι τοῦ μονήρους βίου πολλοῖς ὦσις τετοῦμηται, τὸ δὲ ἄξιως ἐπιτελέσαι ὀλίγοις τάχα πον πεπόνηται. καὶ πάντως οὐκ ἐν προθέσει μόνον τὸ τέλος ύπάρχει, ἀλλ' ἐν τῷ τέλει τὸ κέρδος τῶν πεπονημένων. οὐκοῦν οὐδὲν ὀφελοῦ τοῖς μὴ πρὸς τὸ τοῦ σκοποῦ τέλος ἐπειγομένοις, ἀχρὶ δὲ τῆς ἁρχῆς μόνης ἱστώσι τὸν τῶν μοναχῶν βίον οὐ μὴν ἀλλὰ καὶ καταγέλαστον καταλιμπάνοντι τὴν ἐαυτῶν πρόθεσιν, ἀνανδρίας καὶ ἁβουλίας παρὰ τῶν ἐξωθην ἐγκαλοῦμενοι. φησί γὰρ καὶ ὁ Κύριος περὶ τῶν τοιούτων. Τίς Βουλ-

1 In Codice Mazarinaeo ὀμιλία πρὸς etc.: τοῦ αὐτοῦ μεγάλου βασιλείου πρὸς Χείλωνα τῶν ἑαυτοῦ μαθητῆν C; in Codice Regio 2895 haec leguntur: τινὲς τῶν λόγων τούτων τοῦ ἀγίου Νείλου εἶναι λέγοντι.

2 εὐθ. C. 3 συμβουλευθῆς C. 4 αὐτοῦ om. C. 5 μόνη C.

1 This and the three following letters are considered together as having been written before Basil's episcopate. Because of an alleged similarity in style, these letters have also been considered together as regards authenticity (cf. Ceillier, iv. 435-437; Clark, 108), but several important considerations make it necessary to treat each separately.

No ancient MS. of Basil's correspondence contains this letter. It appears first at the end of Parisinus 967 (dated 1377), and on the margin of Regius 2895 we read, "Some say this is the work of the holy Nilus" (died about 430).
LETTER XLII

LETTER XLII

To Chilo, his Pupil

I shall prove the cause of your salvation, my true brother, if you will willingly be advised by us as to the course of action you should pursue, especially in the matter in which you of your own accord invited us to advise you. Many perhaps have had the temerity to enter upon the solitary life, but few, I am inclined to think, have so laboured as to discharge it worthily to the end. And of course the end is not in the mere intention, but in the end is the reward of our labours. Therefore, there is no guerdon for men who do not carry their purpose through to the goal which is their end, but carry their adoption of the monastic life only as far as the beginning; nay rather, they leave their avowed intention in a ridiculous light, and gain from the world outside the accusation of cowardice and indecision. For even the Lord says of such people: “Who, wishing to build a

Furthermore, it appears in several MSS. of the homilies, where it properly belongs; and it is as a homily that the question of its authenticity should be considered. As far as the style is concerned, it might well be Basil’s.

2 Cf. Luke 14, 28–30: τίς γὰρ ἐξ ὑμῶν, θέλων πύργον οἰκοδομῆσαι, οὐχὶ πρῶτον καθίσαι ψηφίζει τὴν δαπάνην, εἰ ἔχει τὰ πρὸς ἀπαρτισμὸν; ἵνα μὴ ποτὲ θέντος αὐτοῦ θεμέλιον, καὶ μὴ ἰσχύοντος ἐκτελέσαι, πάντες οἱ θεωροῦντες ἄρξωνται ἐμπαιζεῖν αὐτῷ, λέγοντες, "Οτι οὗτος ὁ ἄνθρωπος ἥρξατο οἰκοδομεῖν, καὶ οὐκ ἰσχύσει ἐκτελέσαι. “For which of you, having a mind to build a tower, doth not first sit down, and reckon the charges that are necessary, whether he have wherewithal to finish it: lest after he hath laid the foundation, and is not able to finish it, all that see it begin to mock him, saying: This man began to build and was not able to finish.”
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

ομενος οίκον¹ οἰκοδομήσαι οὐχὶ πρῶτον καθίσας
ψηφίζει τὴν δαπάνην, εἰ ἔχει τὰ πρὸς ἀπαρτισμὸν; μὴ ποτε θέντος αὐτοῦ θεμέλιον καὶ μὴ ἵσχύοντος² ἐκτελέσαι, ἀρξονται ἐμπαίζειν αὐτῷ οἱ παραπορευόμενοι λέγοντες, ὅτι ὁ ἀνθρωπος οὕτος θεμέλιον ἔθηκε,³ καὶ οὐκ ἵσχυσεν⁴ ἐκτελέσαι. ἢ οὐν ἀρχὴ ἔχετω τὴν προκοπὴν προθύμως ἐπὶ τῶν ἕκατον παρθένων καὶ γὰρ ἕκαστος τὴς ἀθλητῆς Παύλου, βουλόμενος ἡμᾶς⁷ μὴ ἐπαμερισμένοι τοῖς προβεβιωμένοις ἐγαθοῖς, ἀλλὰ ὁσιότεροι εἰς τὸ πρόσω ἐποκτείνων, λέγει¹⁰ Τῶν ὁπισθεν ἐπιλαμβανόμενοι, τοῖς δὲ ἐμπροσθεν ἐπεκτεινόμενος, καὶ ἑκατὸν διώκων¹¹ ἐπὶ τὸ βραβεύον τῆς ἀνω κλήσεως. τοιοῦτος γὰρ ὑπάρ-χει ὁ λόγος τῶν ἀνθρώπων βίου, μὴ ἀρκούμενος τοῖς φθάσασιν, ἀλλὰ τρεφόμενος οὐ τοῖς φθάσασι μᾶλλον, ἀλλὰ τοῖς μέλλουσι. τι γὰρ ὕφελε ἀνθρώπων ο λόγος τῆς γαστρὸς κόρος, σήμερον τῆς ἐμφύτου πείνης τὴν οἰκείαν τῆς βρώσεως παραμυθίαν μὴ εὐρισκοῦσης; οὕτως οὖν οὐδὲ ἤσχησι κέρδος τοῦ χθεσινοὶ¹² κατορθώματος, τῆς σημερινῆς ἀπολιμπανομένου δικαιοπραγίας. οἷον γὰρ εὕρω σε, φησί, τοιοῦτον σε κρινόν.

Οὐκόν μάταιοι μὲν τοῦ δικαιοῦ ὁ κότος, ἀνέγκλητος δὲ καὶ τοῦ ἄμαρτωλοῦ ὁ τρόπος, ἐπιγενομένης ἐναλλαγῆς, τῷ μὲν ἀπὸ τοῦ κρέιτ-


242
LETTER XLII

house, doth not first sit down, and reckon the charges that are necessary, whether he have wherewithal to finish it? lest, after he hath laid the foundation and is not able to finish it, the passers-by begin to mock him, saying: 'This man has laid a foundation, and was not able to finish.'" Therefore let the beginning contain within itself a zealous striving forward toward a successful accomplishment. Indeed, that most noble athlete Paul, wishing us not to rest secure in the good deeds of our past lives, but to push forward daily, says: "Forgetting the things that are behind, and stretching forth myself to those that are before, I press towards the mark, to the prize of the supernal vocation." For such is the whole life of man—not to be satisfied with what has been, but to be nurtured not so much on the past as on the future. For what does it avail a man to have had a full stomach yesterday, if his natural hunger fails to find the proper solace of food to-day? Just so the reward of the soul also is not for the achievements of yesterday if to-day's righteous conduct is lacking. For He says, "As I find thee, so shall I judge thee."

Therefore in vain is the labour of the righteous, and blameless is even the way of the sinner, if a change takes place afterwards, in the one from

---

1 Phil. 3, 13–14.
2 Cf. Ez. 7, 3: χαι κρινῶ σε ἐν ταῖς ὀδοῖς σου. "I will judge thee according to thy ways."
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

tonoς ἐπὶ¹ τὸ χεῖρον, τῷ δὲ ἀπὸ τοῦ χειρονος ἐπὶ τὸ κρείττον μεταβληθέντι. ταῦτα καὶ τοῦ Ἰεζεκιήλ ὡς ἐκ προσώπου τοῦ Κυρίου δογματικοῦ ἐστιν ἀκούσαι. Ἐάν γὰρ, φησὶν, ἐκ-κλίνας ὁ δίκαιος πλημμελήσῃ, οὐ μὴ μνησθῶ τῶν δικαιοσυνῶν ὃν ἐποίησεν ἐμπροσθεν,² ἀλλ' ἐν τῇ ἁμαρτίᾳ αὐτοῦ ἀποθανεῖται. τὸ δὲ αὐτὸ φησὶ καὶ περὶ τοῦ ἁμαρτωλοῦ. Ἐάν ἐπιστρέψας ποιήσῃ δικαιοσύνην,³ ξωὴν⁴ ξῆσται ἐν αὐτῇ. ποῦ γὰρ οἱ τοσοῦτοι Μωσῆ τοῦ θεράποντος πόνοι, τῆς ἐν στιγμῇ⁵ ἀντιλογίας παραγραφαμένης αὐτοῦ τὴν εἰς τὴν γῆν τῆς ἐπαγγελίας εἰσόδουν; ποῦ δὲ καὶ ἡ τοῦ Γιεζή συναναστροφῆ πρὸς τὸν Ἐλισαίου, φιλοχρηματίας χώρων λέπραν ἐπι-σπασαμένου; τί δὲ καὶ τοῦ πλήθους τῆς σοφίας τῷ Σολομῶντι θεῖοι, καὶ ἡ προλαβόντα τοιάυτῃ ἔννοια εἰς Θεόν, ὑστερον ἐκ τῆς ᾿γναϊκομανίας⁷ εἰς εἰδωλολατρίαν αὐτοῦ⁸ ἐκπεπτωκότος; ἀλλ' οὐδὲ τὸν μακάριον Δαβίδ ὁ μετεωρισμός ἀφηκεν ἀνέγκλητον, διὰ τὴν εἰς τὴν τοῦ Οὐρίων πλημ-μέλειαν. ἦρκει δὲ καὶ ἡ τοῦ Ἰουδᾶ ἀπὸ τοῦ κρείττονος εἰς τὸ χεῖρον μεταπτωσις πρὸς ἀσφάλ-

¹ εἰς C. ² ἐμπροσθεν om. C. ³ ὁτι add. C. ⁴ ξωῇ C. ⁵ τῆς ἐν στιγμῇ] τῆς στιγμῆς τῆς C. ⁶ ἐκ τῆς om. C. ⁷ γναϊκομανίαις C. ⁸ τοῦτοῦ C. ⁹ τῆς om. C. ¹⁰ τῆς C.

¹ Cf. Ez. 18, 24: ἐν δὲ τῷ ἀποστρέψαι δίκαιον ἐκ τῆς δικαιοσύνης αὐτοῦ καὶ ποιήσαι ἄδικαν κατὰ πάσαν τὰς ἀνομίας αὐτο-present, ἐποίησεν αὐτὸν ὡς ἐποίησεν ὧν μὴ μνησθῶσιν. ἐν τῷ παραπτώματι αὐτοῦ ὁ παρέπεσεν καὶ ἐν ταῖς ἁμαρτίαις αὐτοῦ αἰς ἡμαρτεν, ἐν αὐταῖς ἀποθανεῖται. "But if the just man turn himself away from his justice, and do

244
better to worse, and in the other from worse to better. You may hear even Ezechial¹ lay down this doctrine as it were in the name of the Lord. He says, "If the just man turn away and do iniquity, I shall not remember all his justices which he hath done before, but in his sin he shall die." In like manner does he speak of the sinner, "If he turneth himself and doeth justice, he shall surely live."² Where were all the labours of God's servant Moses, when a moment's contradiction cancelled his entrance into the land of promise? Where too was the close companionship of Giezi with Eliseus, when through covetousness he contracted leprosy?³ Of what benefit to Solomon was his abundance of wisdom and his earlier deep devotion to God, when later through his madness for women he fell into idolatry? Nay, not even the blessed David was left without blame by his exalted state, because he sinned toward the wife of Urias.⁴ But Judas' transformation from better to worse alone suffices as an example to safeguard

iniquity according to all the abominations, which the wicked man useth to work, all his justices which he hath done shall not be remembered: in the prevarication, by which he hath prevaricated, and in his sin, which he hath committed, in them he shall die."

² Cf. Ez. 18, 27–28: καὶ ἐν τῷ ἀποστρέψαι ἄνομον ἀπὸ τῆς ἁνομίας αὐτοῦ ἦς ἐποίησεν καὶ ποίησαι κρῖμα καὶ δικαιοσύνην, οὗτος τὴν φυχὴν αὐτὸῦ ἐφύλαξεν. καὶ ὅτι ἀπεστρέψεν ἐκ πασῶν ἀσεβείας αὐτοῦ ἦν ἐποίησεν, ἕως ἐξῆσαι, οὗ μὴ ἀποθάνη. "And when the wicked turneth himself away from his wickedness, which he hath wrought, and doeth judgment and justice, he shall save his soul alive. Because he considereth and turneth away himself from all his iniquities which he hath wrought, he shall surely live, and not die."

³ Cf. 2 Kings 5. ⁴ Bathsheba.
eiav toû katà Θεòn politeuoménou, òs en tos-onoutois chróniOuterous mathetheis tôXristô 1 ústeron mikró graphicl hýmnete tòv didáskałow upempolhása, éaui(410,296),(778,357) prarmateúsato. toûto ouv gnwstôn soi èstw, 2 ádelphé, òti ouûx h kalôs árkhomenos, ouûs têleios, òllî h kalôs apoti-thémenos, ouûs òkimiros para Thév.

Mê ouûn dôs úpiou touîs óphthalmois, ádelphé, mîde nustagmôn 3 soîs blêfîrois, òna sêthês ouûper dorkas èk brôchôn, kai ouûper òrônven èk pathidos. blêpe gár òti en mêsoi payidôn diaînai, kai èpánw teîchous òphelôn peripateis, òthen ouû akîndunon tô kâtapesônti tîv pîwma. mê ouûn eûthês eis ùkrontheta áskhíseos êkteinhs seautôn: málîsta mîde 4 tharhêsis seautô, òna mê eîx ùpeirías af' òphous tîs áskhíseos péshês. kriâson gár òtî kâi òlíôn prokoph. katà mikrôn ouûn klèppte tâs òdônâs touî òlou, èxafanîzôn seautôn 5 pâsan svnîðeian, mhîpote òthrous pâsan ómou èrethísaas tâs òdônâs òxhôn peiramôwn seautô èpangághs. hînîka ò ìn toû enôs pathous tîs òdônês katà krâtous perigýnê, prôs tîn èþeçan òdônê parâtazai, kai ouûs pâson touû òdônôn euкаîrws perigýnêsh. òdônês gár ònôma men èn, prâgmata ðè diâfora. tôlûn, ádelphê, èso pròton mèn ùpomonîhtikôn 6 prôs pânta peiramô- móv. peiramôis ðè potapoi òkimiázetai ò pîstôs; òthêmâi kòsmikai, ègkluîmasi, katafèuś-mai, òpêthiai, katakalâiai, ðiwghmois. eîs tânta kai tò toiaûta ðokimázetai ò pîstôs.

1 Kupîf C. 2 èstw om. C. 3 toûs òphthalmois . . . nustagmôn om. C

246
one who lives according to the Lord, for after Judas had been Christ's disciple for so long, he later sold his master for a paltry gain, and by his trafficking won for himself a halter. Therefore rest assured of this, brother, that it is not he who begins well that is perfect, but he who finishes well is approved in the sight of God.

Therefore give no sleep to thy eyes, brother, nor slumber to thy eyelids,¹ that thou mayest deliver thyself as a doe from a net, and as a bird from a snare.² For, behold, you pass through the midst of snares, and walk about on a high wall, from which the fall is not without danger to him that falls. Accordingly you should not rush straightway at full stretch to the highest pitch of asceticism; and most of all do not be self-confident, lest through inexperience you fall from the height of asceticism. For it is better to advance little by little. Therefore by slow degrees steal away from the pleasures of life and obliterate every habit, lest by provoking all the pleasures at once you bring upon yourself a multitude of trials. When you have mightily overcome one passion of pleasure, array yourself against the next pleasure, and thus in due season you will overcome them all. For there is but one word for pleasure, but different activities. Therefore, brother, first of all be patient under every trial. And what are the trials by which the faithful are tested? Loss of worldly goods, accusations, falsehoods, disobedience, slanders, persecutions. By these and similar tests are the faithful tested.


²47
"Επειτα δὲ καὶ ἡσύχιος ἐσο, μὴ προπετής ἐν λόγῳ, μὴ ἐριστικός, μὴ φιλόνεικος, μὴ κενόδοξος, μὴ ἐξηγητικός, ἀλλὰ φιλόπιστος, μὴ ἐν λόγῳ πολύς, ἕτοιμος δὲ ἅθι ἀεὶ, μὴ πρὸς διδασκαλίαν, ἀλλὰ πρὸς μάθησιν. μὴ περιεργάζου βίους κοσμικούς, οθεν οὐδέν σοι προσγένεται ὁφέλος. φησί γὰρ: "Οπως ἂν μὴ λαλήσῃ τὸ στόμα μου τὰ ἔργα τῶν ἀνθρώπων. ο γὰρ ἡδέως λαλῶν τὰ τῶν ἁμαρτωλῶν, ἑτοίμως καθό ἐαυτὸν ἐξυπνίζει τὰς ἱδονάς. μᾶλλον δὲ πολυπραγμόνει τῶν τῶν δικαίων βίων. οὕτω γὰρ ἂν εὑρήσεις ἐαυτῷ ὁφέλος.μὴ ἐσο φιλενδείκτης, περιάγων τὰς κόμμας ἢ τὰς οἰκίας, φεῦγε δὲ ταυτας ὡς ψυχῶν παγίδας. εἰ δὲ τις διὰ πολλῆς εὐλάβειαν προτρέπεται σὲ εἰς τῶν ἐαυτοῦ οἰκον, πολλῶν προφάσεων ἑνεκα, μανθανέτω ὁ τοιοῦτος ἀκολου-θεῖν τῇ πίστει τοῦ ἐκατοτύρχου, ὁς τοῦ Ἰησοῦ θεραπείας χάριν πρὸς αὐτὸν ἐπειγομένου παρητή-σατο λέγων. Κύριε, οὐκ εἰμὶ ἱκανὸς ἵνα μοι ὑπὸ τῆς στέγης εἰσέλθῃς, ἀλλὰ μόνον εἰπὲ λόγον, καὶ λαβήσεται ὁ παῖς μου. τοῦ δὲ Ἰησοῦ εἰπόντος αὐτῷ: Ἐπαγε, ὡς ἐπίστευσας, γενηθήτω σοι ἱάθη ὁ παῖς ἀπὸ τῆς ὦρας ἐκείνης. τούτῳ οὐν γνωστοῦ σοι ἔστω, ἀδελφέ, ὅτι οὐκ ἡ τοῦ Χριστοῦ παρουσία ἀλλ' ἡ πίστις τοῦ αἰτοῦτος ἥλευθέρωσε τὸν κάμνοντα. οὕτω καὶ νῦν, σοῦ εὐχομένου ἐν ὦ ἃς τόπῳ, καὶ τοῦ κάμνοντος πιστεύοντος ὅτι ταῖς σαῖς εὐχαῖς βοηθήσεται, ἀποβήσεται αὐτῷ πάντα καταδυμώς.

1 ἐσο C.  
2 προσγίνεται C.  
3 φησὶ γάρ . . . ἐαυτῷ ὁφέλος om. C.  
4 φιλεκδημητῆς C.
In the second place, be quiet of demeanour, not hasty in speech, nor contentious, quarrelsome, vainglorious, nor given to interpreting texts; but be a man of trust, of few words, and always more ready to learn than to teach. Do not curiously pry into the affairs of the worldly life from which no profit can accrue to you. For it is said, "That my mouth may not speak the works of men." 1 For he who enjoys speaking of the deeds of the sinful readily awakens the pleasures against himself. Busy yourself rather with the lives of the righteous, for in them you will find profit for yourself. Be not ostentatious, going about from village to village or from house to house, but avoid these as snares for the soul. And if anyone out of great piety invites you to enter his house, making many excuses, let such a one be told to imitate the faith of the centurion, who, when Jesus hastened to enter his house to perform a cure, besought Him not to do so, saying: "Lord, I am not worthy that Thou shouldest enter under my roof, but only say the word, and my servant shall be healed." 2 And when Jesus said to him: "Go, and as thou hast believed, so be it done to thee," 3 his servant was healed from that hour. So be thou aware of this, brother, that it was not the presence of Christ but the faith of the suppliant that freed the sick man of his sickness. So also now, if you pray, wherever you may be, and he who is sick believes that he will be aided by your prayers, all things will turn out for him according to his desire.

1 Psalm. 17, 4. 2 Matt. 8, 8. 3 Matt. 8, 13.
Πλέον δὲ τοῦ Κυρίου τοὺς οἰκείους σου μὴ ἀγαπήσεις. ὁ γὰρ ἀγαπῶν, φησί, πατέρα ἢ μητέρα ἢ ἀδελφοὺς ὑπὲρ ἐμὲ, οὐκ ἔστι μου ἄξιος. τί δὲ βούλεται ἢ τοῦ Κυρίου ἑντολή; Εἰ τις, φησίν, οὐκ αἰρεῖ τὸν σταυρὸν αὐτοῦ καὶ ἀκολουθεῖ μοι, οὐ δύναται μου εἶναι μαθητής. εἰ συναπ- έθανες τῷ Χριστῷ ἀπὸ τῶν συγγενῶν σου τῶν κατὰ σάρκα, τί πάλιν ἐν αὐτοῖς ἀναστρέφεσθαι θέλεις; εἰ δὲ ἄ απατόκες διὰ Χριστοῦ, πάλιν ταῦτα οἰκοδομεῖς διὰ τοὺς συγγενεῖς σου, παρα- βάτης σεαυτόν καθιστάς. μὴ οὖν διὰ χρέος τῶν συγγενῶν σου ἀναχωρήσης τοῦ τόπου σου· ἀναχωρῶν γὰρ ἐκ τοῦ τόπου σου, ἱσως ἀναχωρή- σεις ἐκ τοῦ τρόπου σου. μὴ ἔσο όχλοχαρής· μὴ φιλόχωρος, μὴ φιλοπολίτης. ἀλλὰ φιλέρη- μος, ἐφ' ἕαυτῷ μένων ἀεὶ ἄμεταφιτός, τὴν εὐχὴν καὶ τὴν ψαλμωδίαν ἔργον ἡγούμενος.

Μηδὲ τῶν ἀναγνωσμάτων κατολογωρήσης, μάλιστα τῆς Νέας Διαθήκης, διὰ τὸ ἐκ τῆς Παλαιᾶς Διαθήκης πολλάκις βλάβην ἐγγίνεσθαι, καὶ οὐχ ὧτι ἐγράφη βλαβερά, ἀλλ' ὧτι ἡ τῶν βλαπτομένων διάνοια ἁσθενής. πᾶς γὰρ ἄρτος τρόφιμος, ἀλλὰ τοῖς ἁσθενοῦσιν ἐπιβλαβῆς· οὕτως οὖν πᾶσα Γραφὴ θεόπνευστος καὶ ὃφελι-

1 ἀγαπήσῃς C. 2 ὑποστρέφεσθαι C.
3 ἐαυτόν C. 4 συνιστάς C.
5 ἐκ] καὶ C. 6 ἀμερίστως C.
7 μάλιστα] μάθε τὰ C.

250
And thou shalt not love thy kinsmen more than the Lord. For He says, “He that loveth father or mother or brothers more than Me, is not worthy of Me.”

And what does the Lord’s commandment mean? He says, “Whosoever doth not carry his cross and come after Me cannot be My disciple.”

If, as far as your kinsmen of the flesh are concerned, you have died with Christ, why do you wish to move among them again? And if you build up again for your relatives what you destroyed for Christ, you make yourself an apostate. Do not, therefore, withdraw from your place of living for your relatives’ sake; for if you withdraw from your place of living, you will perhaps withdraw from your way of living.

Take no pleasure in the crowd; be not fond of your country, nor fond of your fellow-countrymen; but be fond of solitude, abiding always by yourself without wavering, and regarding prayer and the singing of psalms as your work.

Do not neglect your reading; especially the New Testament, for harm often comes from reading the Old Testament, not because anything harmful is written in it, but because the minds of those who are harmed are weak. For all bread is nourishing, although to the sick it is harmful. In like manner all Scripture is divinely inspired and helpful, and

---

1 Cf. Matt. 10, 37: ὃς φιλάων πατέ, α ἡ μητέρα ὑπὲρ ἐμὲ, οὐκ ἔστι μου ἀξίων καὶ ὃς φιλάων νίνν ἡ θυγατέρα ὑπὲρ ἐμὲ, οὐκ ἔστι μου ἄξιος. “He that loveth father or mother more than Me, is not worthy of Me; and he that loveth son or daughter more than Me, is not worthy of Me.”


3 The play upon τόπος, “place,” and τρόπος, “character,” cannot be exactly reproduced.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

μοι, καὶ οὐδὲν κοινὸν δι’ αὐτῆς, εἰ μὴ τῷ λογίζομενοι κοινὸν εἶναι, ἐκεῖνον 1 κοινὸν. Πάντα δὲ δοκίμαξε: τὸ καλὸν κάτεχε: ἀπὸ παντὸς εἴδους ποιηροῦ ἀπέχον. Πάντα 2 γὰρ ἔξεστιν, ἀλλ’ οὐ πάντα συμφέρει. ἐσον ὁυ τοῖς συντυγχάνονσι σοι ἐν πάσιν ἀπρόσκοποι, προσχαρῆς, φιλάδελφος, 3 ἢδυς, ταπεινόφρων, μὴ ἐκπίπτων τοῦ σκοποῦ τῆς φιλοξενίας διὰ βρωμάτων πολυτελείας, ἀρκούμενος δὲ τοῖς παροῦσι, τῆς καθημερινῆς χρείας τοῦ μονήρους βίου μηδὲν πλέον ἀπὸ τινὸς λάβης: καὶ μάλιστα φύγε τῶν χρυσῶν ὡς ψυχῆς ἐπὶ βουλουν καὶ ἀμαρτίας πατέρα, ὑπουργὸν δὲ τοῦ διαβόλου. μὴ προφάσει τῆς εἰς τοὺς πένητας διακοιναὶς σεαυτὸν 4 ὑπόδικον φιλοχρηματίας καταστήσῃς. εἰ δὲ τις πτωχῶν ἑνεκα κριμίζει σοι χρήματα, γνῶς δὲ τινὰς εἶναι λειπομένους, αὐτῷ ἐκεῖνῳ, ὃ ὑπάρχει τὰ χρήματα, ἀποκομίσαι τοῖς ὑστερουμένοις ἀδελφοῖς συμβούλευσον, μὴ ποτε μολύνῃ σου τὴν συνείδησιν ἡ τῶν χρημάτων ὑποδοχή.

Τὰς ἡδονὰς φεύγε: τὴν ἐγκράτειαν δῶκε καὶ τὸ μὲν σώμα τοῖς πόνοις ἄσκει, τὴν δὲ ψυχὴν τοῖς

1 ἐκεῖνο C. 2 Ἀπαντά C. 3 φιλάδελφος om. C. 4 ἐαυτῷ C.

1 Cf. 2 Tim. 3, 16: πᾶσα γραφὴ θεόπνευστος καὶ ωφέλιμος πρὸς διδασκαλίαν, πρὸς ἐλεγχον, πρὸς ἐπανόρθωσιν, πρὸς παιδείαν τὴν ἐν δικαιοσύνῃ. “All scripture, inspired of God, is profitable to teach, to reprove, to correct, to instruct in justice.”

2 1 Thess. 5, 21–22.

3 Cf. 1 Cor. 6, 12: πάντα μοι ἔξεστιν, ἀλλ’ οὐ πάντα συμφέρει: πάντα μοι ἔξεστιν, ἀλλ’ οὐκ ἐγὼ ἐξουσιασθέσομαι ὑπὸ τινος. “All things are lawful to me, but all things are

252
contains nothing unclean, except that to him who thinks a thing unclean, to him it is unclean. "But prove all things; hold fast that which is good; from all appearance of evil refrain yourselves." For all things are lawful, but not all things are expedient. Therefore, to those who come in contact with you, in all things be without offence, agreeable, loving as a brother, pleasant, and humble of mind; do not forfeit the hospitality you seek by extravagance in food, but be satisfied with what is set before you, taking no more from any man than the daily needs of the solitary life require; and above all things shun gold as plotting against the soul, the father of sin, and the accomplice of the devil. Do not, under the pretence of serving the poor, lay yourself open to the charge of avarice. And if anyone brings you money for the poor, and you know of any who are in need, advise the owner to take his money and himself give it to his less fortunate brethren, lest your conscience be defiled by receiving the money.

Avoid pleasures; seek continence; discipline your body with hard work; and accustom your soul not expedient. All things are lawful to me, but I will not be brought under the power of any.”

---

1 Cf. 1 Cor. 10, 32: ἀπρόσκυποι γίνεσθε καὶ Ἰουδαῖοι καὶ Ἑλλησί καὶ τῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ τοῦ Θεοῦ. “Be without offence to the Jews, and to the Gentiles, and to the church of God.”

2 Cf. 1 Peter 3, 8: τὸ δὲ τέλος, πάντες ὀμόφροις, συμπαθεῖς, φιλάδελφοι, εὐσπλαγχνοι, φιλόφρονες. “And in fine, be ye all of one mind, having compassion one of another, being lovers of the brotherhood, merciful, modest, humble.”

3 The free offerings of the pious, on which the monks depended. Their gluttony would discourage entertainment.

4 i.e. by collecting alms “for the poor” too diligently.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

πειρασμοίς ἐθίζε. 1 τὴν σώματος καὶ ψυχῆς ἀνάλυσιν 2 ἀπαλλαγὴν παντὸς κακοῦ τιθέμενος, 3 ἐκδέχον 4 τῶν αἰωνίων ἁγαθῶν τὴν ἀπόλαυσιν, ἤς πάντες οἱ ἄγιοι μέτοχοι γεγόνασι. σὺ δὲ ἁδιαλείπτως ξυγοστατῶν ἀντιπαρατίθεσο 5 τῇ διαβολικῇ ἑννοίᾳ τὸν εὐσεβῆ λογισμόν, ὥσπερ ἐπὶ τρυτάνης, τῇ βοσῇ τῆς πλάστινγος τούτῳ παραχωρῶν. καὶ μάλιστα οταν ἐπαναστάσα ἡ πονηρὰ ἑννοια λέγῃ. Τί σοι τὸ ὄφελος τῆς ἐν τῷ τόπῳ τούτῳ διαγωγῆς; τί σοι τὸ κέρδος τῆς ἀναχωρήσεως τῆς ἀπὸ τῶν ἀνθρώπων συνήθειας; ἡ οὐκ ἔγνως τοὺς παρά τοῦ Θεοῦ τεταγμένους ἐπισκόπους τῶν τοῦ Θεοῦ ἐκκλησίων τοῖς ἀνδράσι συνήθως συνδιαζώντας καὶ τὰς πνευματικὰς ἁδιαλείπτως ἐπιτελοῦντας πανηγύρεις, ἐν αἷς μάλιστα που τοῖς παραγενομένοις γίνεται ὄφελος; ἐκεῖ γὰρ ἀποκαλύψεις παροιμιακὸς ἄνιψιματων, λύσεις ἀποστολικῶν διδασμάτων, ἐναγγελικῶν νοημάτων ἐκθέσεις, 7 θεολογίας ἀκρόσιας, ἀδελφῶν πνευματικῶν συντυχία μεγάλην τοῖς ἐντυγχάνουσιν ἐκ τῆς θέας τοῦ προσώπου τῆς ὑφέλειαν παρεχούσων. 8 σὺ δὲ τοσοῦτον ἁγαθῶν ἀλλότριον σεαυτὸν καταστήσας κάθησαι ἐνθάδε 9 ἐξηγηριωμένος ἵσως τοῖς θηρσίν. ὥρᾶς γὰρ 10 ἐνταῦθα ήρεμίαν πολλὴν, ἀπανθρωπίαν οὐκ ὀλίγην, ἀπορίαν διδασκαλίας, ἀδελφῶν ἀλλοτρίωσιν, καὶ τὸ πνεῦμα περὶ τὴν ἐντολὴν τοῦ Θεοῦ ἀργίαν ἔχου πολλὴν.

1 ἐθίζε] καρτέρει C. 2 διάλυσιν C. 3 τιθέμενο] πειθόμενο C. 4 δὲ μᾶλλον add. C. 5 ἀντιπαρατίθει C. 6 διαταγμάτων C. 7 ἐκθέσεις C.
to trials. Considering the separation of soul from body as deliverance from every evil, accept only the enjoyment of the blessings which are eternal, the enjoyment which all saints have shared. And incessantly hold the balances, and set as it were on the pair of the scales, over against every thought suggested by the devil, your pious reflection, there-with compensating for the inclination of the scale-beam. Do this especially when the evil thought rises up and says: "What does it profit you to abide in this place? What reward do you receive for retiring from the society of men? Do you not know that those who have been appointed by God as bishops of God's churches habitually live in the company of their fellow-men, and constantly celebrate the spiritual festivals, which no doubt bring great benefit to those who attend them? For at these gatherings the enigmas of the Proverbs are revealed, the teachings of the apostles are explained, the ideas of the gospels are set forth, there are lectures on theology, and conversations with spiritual brethren who by the mere sight of their faces confer great benefit upon those they meet. You, however, have made yourself so a stranger to these many blessings that you sit here reduced perhaps to the level of the wild beasts in savagery. For you see here nothing but a vast solitude, a complete absence of human society, a lack of any instruction, an estrangement from your brethren, where the spirit experiences a great sluggishness to fulfil the commandments of God."

8 συντυχίαι ... παρεξόντων] συντυχία μεγάλην τοῖς συντυχάνοισιν ἐκ τῆς προσοψῆς αὐτοῖς τοῦ Πνεύματος χάριτος τῆν ὑφέλειαν παρέχουσα C.  
9 ἐνθάδε] ἐνταῦθα C.  
10 γὰρ] δὲ C.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

"Ὅταν οὖν τοιαύταις καὶ τοσαύταις εὐλογο-
φανέσι προφάσεσιν ἐπαναστᾶσα ἡ ποιηρὰ ἐννοια
καταρρήξαι 1 σε θέλη, ἀντιπαράθεσε αὐτῇ διὰ τοῦ
εὐσεβοῦς λογισμοῦ τὴν πείραν τοῦ πράγματος,
λέγων. Ἡπειρώθαν ἡ λέγεις μοι καλὰ τὰ ἐν τῷ
κόσμῳ εἶναι, διὰ τοῦτο ἐγὼ ἐνταῦθα μετέφθησα,
ἀνάξιον ἐμαυτὸν κρίνας τῶν τοῦ κόσμου καλῶν,
παραμέμκται γὰρ τοῖς τοῦ κόσμου καλοῖς τὰ
κακά, καὶ μᾶλλον ὑπεραίρει τὰ κακὰ. 2 παραγενό-
μενος γὰρ ποτε ἐν ταῖς πνευματικαῖς πανηγύρεσιν
ἐνι μὲν ἀδελφῷ μόλις ποτὲ περιετύχων, τὸ μὲν
dοκεῖν, φοβομένω τῶν Κύριον, κρατούμενῳ δὲ
ὑπὸ τοῦ διαβόλου, καὶ ἤκουσα παρ’ αὐτοῦ λόγους
κομψοὺς καὶ μύθους πεπλασμένοις εἰς ἀπάτην
tῶν ἐντυγχανόντων. 3 πολλοὶς δὲ μετ’ αὐτοῦ 4
συνέτυχον κλέπταις, ἀρπαξὶ, τυράννοις. εἶδον
μεθυόντων σχῆμα ἁσχῆμον, τὰ αἴματά τῶν
καταποιυμένων. εἶδον δὲ καὶ κάλλος γυναικῶν,
βασανίζον μου τὴν σωφροσύνην καὶ τὸ μὲν τῆς
πορείας ἐργὸν διέφυγον τὴν δὲ ἐμαυτοῦ παρ-
θενίαν ἐμόλυνα κατὰ δίανοιαν καρδίας. καὶ
πολλῶν μὲν ἀκίκος λόγους ψυχοφελῶν, πλῆν
παρ’ οὐδὲν τῶν διδασκάλων εὑρὼν ἄξιαν τῶν
λόγων τὴν ἀρετὴν. 5 μετὰ δὲ τοῦτο πάλιν μυρίων
ἠκουσα τραγῳδιμάτων, μέλεσι τεθρυμμένοις
ἐνυδευμένων. πάλιν 6 ἀκίκος κιθάρας ἢδυ ἥχου-
σης, τῶν κρότων τῶν ἀλλομένων, τῆς φωνῆς τῶν
γελοιαστῶν, μωρίας πολλῆς καὶ εὐτραπελίας,
อนาคου ἀμυθήτου βοήν. εἶδον τὰ δάκρυα τῶν συλη-
θέντω, τὰς οἴνους τῶν ἀπαγομένων ύπὸ τῆς

1 καταρρήσσειν C.
2 καὶ μᾶλλον ὑπεραίρει τὰ κακὰ om. C.

256
So when the evil thought rises up and by all such specious pretexts desires to crush you, set over against it through pious reflection your experience of the past. Say: “You tell me that the things of the world are good; but it was for this reason that I moved my abode here—that I judged myself unworthy of the good things of the world. For there are intermingled with the good things of the world evil things also, and the evil preponderates. Indeed, when once I attended the spiritual festivals I found with difficulty one single brother who in appearance at least had fear of the Lord; but in fact he was under the mastery of the devil, and I heard him tell witty stories and tales fabricated for the deception of those whom he met. After meeting him I fell in with many thieves, robbers, and bullies. I saw the shameful sight of drunks, and the blood of the oppressed. I also beheld the beauty of women, which sorely tried my chastity; and though I escaped the deed of fornication, yet I sullied my purity in the thoughts of my heart. I heard many a discourse edifying to the soul, but in none of my teachers did I find a virtue worthy of their discourses. Next I listened to countless songs, clothed however in wanton music. Again I listened to a sweetly sounding lyre, the clatter of clog-dancers, the voice of buffoons, much folly and ribald wit, and the clamour of an enormous crowd. I witnessed the tears of those who had been despoiled, the anguish of those haled to prison.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

turannidos, 

καὶ ἐν εἰδοὺ καὶ εἰδοῦ ὡς ἡ πανήγυρις πνευματικὴ, ἀλλὰ θάλασσα ἀνεμιζομένη καὶ ταραττομένη, πάντας ὁμοῦ τοῖς αὐτῆς κύμασι καλύψαι σπουδάζοντασ.

Δέγε μοι, ὃ κακὴ ἔννοια, καὶ ὁ τῆς προσκαίρου ἡδυπαθείας τε καὶ κενοδοξίας δαίμων, τί μοι τὸ ὀφελος τῆς τοῦτων θεωρίας τε καὶ ἀκροάσεως, μηδενὶ τῶν ἁδικουμένων βοηθήσαι ἵσχύοντι, μήτε δὲ τοῖς ἀδυνάτοις ἐπαμύναι μήτε τοὺς σφαλλομένους διορθώσασθαι συγχωρουμένῳ, τάχα δὲ μέλλοντι καὶ ἐμαυτὸν προσαπολλύειν; ὄσπερ γὰρ ὀλίγον ὑδώρ καθαρὸν ὑπὸ πολλῆς ζάλης ἀνέμου καὶ κοινορτοῦ ἀφανίζεται, οὕτως ἄ νομίζουμεν καλὰ ἐν τῷ βίῳ ποιεῖν ὑπὸ τοῦ πλήθους τῶν κακῶν καλύπτεται. οὐν ἄρα πραγματίκαι όσπερ σκόλοπες τοῖς κατὰ τὸν βίον ἐν ἐνθυμίας καὶ ἵκτε ἐν ταῖς καρδίας αὐτῶν ἔμπροσθοῦν, ἵνα τῆς ψαλμωδίας ἐπισκοπῆς τὸ καθαρόν. εἰ δὲ οἴμωμαι καὶ ὁ ὀδυρμὸς τῶν ἁδικουμένων ἄνθρωπων παρὰ τῶν ὀμφύλων ἐπάγονται, ἵνα δειχθῇ τῶν πενήτων ἡ ὑπομονή. τῖς οὖν ὀφέλεια ἔμοι, ἡ δηλονότι τῆς ψυχῆς ἡ βλάβη;

Πρὸς τοῦτο οὖν ἐγὼ μεταναστεύω ἐπί τὰ ὅρη ὡς στρουθίου ἡγὼ ἐφρύσθην ἐκ τῆς

1 ἐνοῦ om. C. 2 καὶ ταραττομένῃ om. C. 3 τοῖς ἀδυνάτοις ἐπαμύναι τῶν ἁδικουόντων τὴν ὁμήν ἀνακόψαι δυναμένῳ C. 4 ἐμαυτὸν C. 5 ἐνώπιον τῶν ἀνθρώπων add. C. 6 ἐπισκοπῆς C. 7 ἐμοὶ om. C.

1 Gregory of Nyssa's letter on Pilgrimages contains a similar picture of the vices of the time as witnessed by him.
LETTER XLII

by tyranny, and the shrieks of the tortured. I looked and behold! it was no spiritual festival, but a wind-swept and storm-tossed sea, seeking to overwhelm all alike within its billows.¹

"Tell me, O evil thought, O demon of the moment's gratification and vainglory, of what benefit is it to me to behold and to hear these things, when thereby I gain no strength to aid those who are wronged, and it is granted me neither to help those who are weak nor to raise up the fallen, but perchance I may even bring ruin upon myself as well? For just as a little pool of pure water is blotted out by a strong gust of wind and dust, so the good deeds we are wont to do in life are buried out of sight by the multitude of evil deeds. For the songs are like a palisade of stakes set up by those of the worldly life in their hearts through joy and merriment, that the purity of their singing of psalms may be darkened.² And the groans and moanings of the men who are wronged by their fellow-men are introduced to make a show of the patience of the poor. What profit, then, is there in all this for me—or is it manifestly harmful for my soul?

"Therefore I migrate to the mountains like a sparrow; for like a sparrow I have been delivered

in Palestine. Because of the similarity of the pictures and because Basil is known to have visited Palestine (cf. Letter CCXXIII. 2), Maran suggests that Basil is here also describing conditions in the Holy Land.

² i.e. in moments of gaiety men set up a screen in their hearts with songs for entertainment, thereby casting a shadow over the purity of the kind of song a Christian is wont to sing, i.e. psalms.
παγίδος τῶν θηρεύοντων. καὶ γὰρ ἐν ταύτῃ τῇ ἑρήμῳ διάγῳ, ὡς κακῇ ἐνυοια, ἐν ἥ ὁ Κύριος διέτριβεν. ἐνταύθα ἡ ὄρος ἡ Μαμβριὴ ἐνταύθα ἡ ὑπαραφόρος κλίμαξ, καὶ αἱ τῶν ἁγγέλων παρεμβολαί αἰ τῷ Ἰακώβ ὀφθείσαι ἐνταύθα ἡ ἑρήμῳ ἐν ἥ ὁ λαὸς ἁγνισθεὶς ἐνομοθετήθη, καὶ οὕτως εἰς τὴν γῆν τῆς ἐπαγγελίας εἰσελθὼν εἰςε Θεόν. ἐνταύθα τὸ ὀρος τὸ Καρμήλιον ἐν ὧ Ἡλίας αὐλιδόμενος τῷ Θεῷ εὐθρήστησεν. ἐν-

ταύθα τὸ πεδίον ἐν ὧ ἀναχωρήσας "Εσδρας πάσας τὰς θεοπνεύστους βίβλους προστάγματι Θεοῦ ἐξηρεύσατο. ἐνταύθα ἡ ἑρήμῳ ἐν ἥ ὁ μακάριος Ἡσύνης ἁκριδοφαγῶν μετάνοιαν τοῖς ἀνθρώποις ἐκήρυξεν. ἐνταύθα τὸ ὀρος τῶν ἑλαίων εἰς ὧ ὁ Ἑρατῶς ἀνερχόμενος προςοχὺκετο, ἡμᾶς διδάσκων προσεύχεσθαι. ἐνταύθα ὁ Χριστὸς ὁ τῆς ἑρήμου φίλοις φησὶ γὰρ ὁ ὁποιοι εἰσὶ δύο ἡ τρεῖς συνηγ-

μένοι εἰς τὸ ἔμον ὄνομα, ἕκει εἰμὶ ἐν μέσῳ αὐτῶν. ἐνταύθα ἡ στενή καὶ τεθλιμμένη ὁδὸς ἡ ἀπάγουσα εἰς τὴν ζωὴν. ἐνταύθα διδάσκαλοι καὶ προφῆται οἱ ἐν ἑρημίαις πλανώμενοι, καὶ ὀρεσί, καὶ σπηλαίοις, καὶ ταῖς ὁπαῖς τῆς γῆς. ἐνταύθα ἀπό-

στολοί καὶ εὐαγγελισταί, καὶ ὁ τῶν μοναχῶν ἑρημοπολίτης βίος.

Ταῦτα τοίνυν ἐκουσίως καταδεδειγμαί, ἵνα λάβω ἀπερ τοῖς μάρτυρις τοῦ Χριστοῦ καὶ τοῖς ἄλλοις πᾶσιν ἁγίοις ἐπηγγελταί ἵνα ἄψυεν ὧν om. C. ἂν μέσῳ] μετ᾽ Τοίνυν] οὖν C.

1 Cf. Psal. 124, 7: ἡ ψυχὴ ἡμῶν ἃς στροφεῖ τοὺς ἐρρύσθη ἐκ τῆς παγίδος τῶν θηρεύοντων. ἡ παγίς συνετριβή, καὶ ἥμεις ἐρρύσθημεν. "Our soul hath been delivered as a sparrow out 260
LETTER XLII

out of the snare of the fowlers.\(^1\) For I am living, O evil thought, in the wilderness wherein the Lord dwelt. Here is the oak of Mambre;\(^2\) here is the ladder which leads to heaven, and the encampments of the angels, which Jacob saw; here is the wilderness where the people, purified, received the law, and then going into the land of promise beheld God. Here is Mount Carmel, where Elias abode and pleased God. Here is the plain whither Esdras withdrew, and at God’s bidding poured forth from his mouth all his divinely inspired books.\(^3\) Here is the wilderness where the blessed John ate locusts and preached repentance to men. Here is the Mount of Olives, which Christ ascended and there prayed, teaching us how to pray. Here is Christ who loved solitude; for He says, ‘Where there are two or three gathered in My name, there am I in the midst of them.’\(^4\) Here is the narrow and strait way that leadeth to life.\(^5\) Here are teachers and prophets, ‘wandering in deserts, in mountains, and in dens, and in eaves of the earth.’\(^6\) Here are apostles and evangelists and the life of monks, citizens of the desert.

“Now all this have I accepted willingly, that I may obtain what has been promised to Christ’s martyrs and all other holy men, and that I may of the snare of the fowlers. The snare is broken, and we are delivered.”

\(^1\) Cf. Gen. 13, 18; 18, 1. \(^2\) Cf. 2 Esdras 2, 14. \(^3\) Cf. Mat. 18, 20. \(^4\) Matt. 7, 14: ὁτε στενὴ ἡ πύλη, καὶ τελειμενὴ ἡ δόξα ἡ ἀπάγουσα εἰς τὴν ζωὴν, καὶ ὁλῖγοι εἰσὶν οἱ ἐναρκτοῦσαι αὐτὴν. “How narrow is the gate, and strait is the way that leadeth to life: and few there are that find it!”

\(^5\) Heb. 11, 38.

261
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

λέγω· Διὰ τούς λόγους τῶν χειλέων σου ἐγώ ἐφύλαξα ὀδοὺς σκληρᾶς. ἐγὼν γὰρ τὸν μὲν θεοφιλή Ἀβραὰμ τῇ τοῦ Θεοῦ φωνῇ πειθόμενον καὶ εἰς τὴν ἔρημον μετοικοῦντα, καὶ Ἰσαὰκ κατα-

dυναστεύομενον, καὶ Ἰακὼβ τὸν πατριάρχην ἐπιτυγγοῦσα, Ἱωσήφ τὸν σώφρονα διαπιπερακ-

όμενον, τοὺς τῆς ἐγκρατείας ἐνερτάς τρεῖς παῖδας πυρομαχοῦντας, Δανιὴλ δεύτερον εἰς λάκκον

λεόντων παραβαλλόμενον, τὸν παράρκησᾶντιν Ἱερεμίαν εἰς λάκκον βορβόρου καταδιακάζομεν· Ὡσαίαν τὸν τῶν ἀποκρύφων θεατὴν πριξόμενον·

tὸν Ἰσραὴλ αἰχμαλωτεύομεν· Ἰωάννην τὸν τῆς μοιχείας ἐλεγχον ἀποτεμνόμενον· ἀναιρουμένους τοὺς Χριστοῦ μάρτυρας. καὶ ἵνα τί μακρολογῶ; ὁποὺ γε καὶ αὐτὸς ὁ Σωτῆρ ἐσταυρώθη ὑπὲρ ἡμῶν, ἵνα τῷ ἑαυτῷ θανάτῳ ἡμᾶς ἡσυχάζῃ, καὶ

πάντας ἡμᾶς πρὸς τὴν ὑπομονὴν ἀλείψῃ καὶ ἐλκύσῃ. πρὸς τούτου εἰπεγομαί, καὶ πρὸς τὸν Ἐπαύρα, καὶ τὸ Πνεῦμα τὸ ἄγιον. γνήσιοι εὑρέθησαι ἀγωνίζομαι, ἀνάξιον ἐμαυτόν κρίνας τῶν τοῦ κόσμου καλῶν—πλὴν ἅλλ' οὐδὲ ἐγὼ διὰ τῶν κόσμων, ἅλλ' ὁ κόσμος δι' ἐμέ.

Ταῦτα οὖν ἐν ἑαυτῷ ἐπιλογιζόμενος, καὶ τελῶν αὐτά σπουδαίως κατὰ τὸ εἰρημένον σοι, ἀγώ-

νισαι ὑπὲρ τῆς ἀληθείας ἑως θανάτου. καὶ γὰρ ὁ Χριστὸς ὑπήκοος γέγονε μέχρι θανάτου. ἅλλα καὶ ὁ ἀπόστολος φησι· Βλέπετε μὴ ποτε ἐσται ἐν τινὶ ὑμῶν καρδία πονηρά, εἰς τὸ ἀποστῆσαι ἀπὸ Θεοῦ ἐως τοῦ· ἅλλα ἅλληλους παρακαλεῖτε.
truthfully say, 'For the sake of the words of thy lips I have kept hard ways.'

For I know that Abraham, beloved of God, obeyed His voice and went to dwell in the wilderness; Isaac was oppressed; Jacob the patriarch lived in a strange land; the chaste Joseph was sold; the three children discovered self-control and fought with fire; Daniel was twice thrown into the lions' den; the outspoken Jeremias was condemned to a pit of mire; Isaias beheld secret things and was cut asunder with a saw; Israel was led into captivity; John denounced adultery and lost his head, and Christ's martyrs have been slain. Why do I speak at length, when the Saviour Himself was crucified for our sakes, that by His death He might make us to live, and that He might anoint us all and draw us to endurance? To Him do I hasten, and to the Father, and to the Holy Spirit. I struggle to be found true, having judged myself unworthy of the world's goods, save that I also am not because of the world, but the world because of me."

Considering these things, therefore, in your heart, and fulfilling them with zeal as you have been bidden, struggle for the truth until death. For Christ also became obedient unto death.\(^2\) Nay, the apostle\(^3\) also says: "Take heed lest perhaps there be in any of you an evil heart, to depart from the living God; but exhort one another, and edify one

---

1 Psal. 17, 4.
2 Cf. Phil. 2, 8: ἐταπελυσάμεν ἑαυτὸν, γενόμενος ὑπήκοος μέχρι θανάτου, θανάτου δὲ σταυροῦ. "He humbled himself, becoming obedient unto death, even to the death of the cross."
3 Cf. Heb. 3, 12-13; 1 Thess. 5, 11.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

καὶ εἰς τὸν ἑνα οἰκοδομεῖτε, ἀφίς οὖ τὸ σήμερον λέγεται. τὸ γὰρ σήμερον σημαίνει ὅλου τῶν χρόνων τῆς ζωῆς ἡμῶν. οὕτως οὖν πολιτευόμενος, ἀδελφὲ, καὶ σεαυτὸν σώσεις, καὶ ἡμᾶς εὐφρανεῖς, καὶ τὸν Θεὸν δοξάσεις εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας τῶν αἰώνων. ἀμήν.

XLIII

Νουθεσία πρὸς τοὺς νέους

Μάθε σὺ ὁ μονάζων καὶ πιστὸς ἄνθρωπος, καὶ τῆς εὐσεβείας ἐργάτης, καὶ διδάχθητι εὐαγγελικὴν πολιτείαν, σῶματος δουλαγωγίαν, φρόνημα ταπεινών, ἐννοίας καθαρότηταν, ὀργῆς ἀφαιρήμον. ἀγγαρεύομενος, προστίθει διὰ τὸν Κύριον: ἀποστερούμενος, μὴ δικαίου; μισούμενος, ἀγάπα· διωκόμενος, ἀνέχου: βλασφημούμενος, παρακάλει· νεκρωθῆτι τῇ ἀμαρτίᾳ, σταυρώθητι τῷ Θεῷ· ὁλὴν τὴν μέριμναν μετάθεις ἐπὶ τὸν Κύριον, ἱνα εὐρεθῆς ὅπου ἀγγέλων μυριάδες, πρωτοτόκων πανηγύρεις, ἀποστόλων θρόνοι, προφητῶν προεδρίαι, σκῆπτρα πατριαρχῶν, μαρτύρων στέφανοι, δικαίων ἑπανοί. ἐκεῖνοι σεαυτὸν τοὺς δικαίους ἐπιθύμησον συναριθμηθῆναι, ἐν Χριστῷ Ἰησοῦ τῷ Κυρίῳ ἡμῶν. αὐτῷ ἡ δόξα εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας. ἀμήν.

1 oικοδομοῦντες C.
2 λέγεται. τὸ γὰρ σήμερον] ὅ C.
3 έαυτὸν C.
4 τέλος θεῷ ἀγίῳ τῶν ἐπιστολῶν τοῦ μεγάλου βασιλείου add. C.

1 Cf. the preceding letter, note 1. This address is rather a sermon than a letter. In fact it does not appear in any of the MSS. of the letters thus far collated. In the old order of the letters (Paris edition, 1618) it is number two, appear-

264
LETTER XLIII

another, whilst it is called to-day." For "to-day" signifies the whole period of our life. Accordingly if you live thus, brother, you will not only save yourself, but you will also please us, and glorify God from everlasting to everlasting. Amen.

LETTER XLIII

ADMONITION TO THE YOUNG

Learn, thou who livest the solitary life and art faithful, and art a worker of piety, and be taught the life of the gospel, which is enslavement of body, humility of mind, purity of thought, and suppression of wrath. When forced into the service, consent for the Lord's sake; when defrauded, appeal not to the law; when hated, love; when persecuted, endure; when blasphemed, deprecate. Be dead to sin, be crucified for God; transfer all your cares to the Lord, that you may be found where are the myriads of angels, the assemblies of the first-born, the thrones of the apostles, the seats of the prophets, the sceptres of the patriarchs, the crowns of the martyrs, and the praises of the just. Seek to be numbered among those righteous men, in Jesus Christ our Lord. To Him be the glory for ever. Amen.

265
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

XLIV

Πρὸς μοναχὸν ἐκπεσόντα

Χαίρειν οὔ λέγομεν, ὅτι οὐκ ἔστι χαίρειν τοῖς ἁσεβέσιν. ἔτι γὰρ ἀπιστία με περιέχει, καὶ οὐκ ἐπέρχεται μοι εἰς τὴν καρδίαν τὸ τηλικοῦτον ἁτόπημα καὶ τὸ ἐπιχείρημα τὸ μέγα ὁ ἔπραξα, εἰ γε κατὰ τὸ φαινόμενον ἥδη πᾶσιν οὕτως ἔχει. θαυμάζω γὰρ πῶς ἡ τοσαύτη σοφία κατεπόθη, πῶς ἡ τοσαύτη ἀκρίβεια διελύθη, πόθεν ἡ τοσαύτη τύφλωσις περιεχύθη, πῶς μηδὲν τὸ σύνολον ἐνιούσας τοιαύτην καὶ τοσαύτην ἄπωλειαν ψυχῶν εἰργάσω. εἰ γὰρ ἀληθὲς τοῦτο, παραδέδωκας καὶ τὴν σαυτὸν ψυχὴν τῷ βυθῷ, καὶ πάντων τῶν ἀκοῦοντων τὴν ἁσεβείαν ταύτην τὸν τόνον παρέλυσας. τὴν πίστιν ἥθετησας, τοῦ ἀγώνος τοῦ καλοῦ ἡστόχησας. διὸ ἄλγῳ ἐπὶ σοὶ. πωδὸς γὰρ ἱερεύς ἀκοῦων οὐ θρηνήσει; ποῖος ἐκκλησιαστικὸς οὐ κόπτεται; ποῖος λαῖκος οὐ σκυθρωπάξει; ποῖος ἁσκητὴς οὐ πενθεί; τάχα καὶ ὁ ἥλιος ἐσκότασεν ἐπὶ τῷ σῷ πτῶματι, καὶ αἱ δυνάμεις τῶν οὐρανῶν ἐσαλεύθησαν ἐπὶ τῇ σῇ ἀπωλείᾳ. ἔδακρυσαν καὶ οἱ ἀναίρητοι λίθοι ἐπὶ τῇ σῇ μανίᾳ, ἐκλαυσαν δὲ καὶ οἱ ἔχθροι διὰ τὴν ὑπερβολὴν τῆς ἀνομίας σου.

1 Addit Regius 1908, sed manu recentiore, Ἀλέξιον. πρὸς διάκονον ἐκπεσόντα Cod. Colbert. 457.
2 τὴν πίστιν ἥθετησας om. C, D.

1 Cf. Letter XLII, note 1. As in the case of Letter XLII, no ancient MS. of the correspondence contains this work. The family Ac alone recognizes it. Like Letter XLII it 266
LETTER XLIV

LETTER XLIV

To a Fallen Monk

We say not, "Be it well with thee," inasmuch as it cannot truly be well with those who are impious. For incredulity still holds me, and my mind cannot conceive of so great an iniquity and crime as you have committed, if indeed the truth of the matter is as it by this time appears to all the world. I wonder how such wisdom as yours was swallowed up; how such strictness became slack, how such blindness came to envelop you, how you were so utterly thoughtless as to work all this lamentable destruction of souls. For, if all is true, you have not only given your own soul over to the pit, but you have slackened the zeal of all who hear of this impiety. You have set aside the faith, you have missed the glorious fight. Therefore do I grieve for you. For what priest will not lament when he hears this? What ecclesiastic does not beat his breast? What layman is not downcast? What ascetic does not mourn? Mayhap, even the sun was darkened at your fall, and the stars of heaven tottered at your destruction. Even the unfeeling stones shed tears at your madness, and even your enemies wept because of your exceeding transgression.

seems to have been edited for the first time at Venice in 1535, and inserted regularly in the later editions of St. Basil's correspondence. A very few but important MSS. (some of the Parisini) of the homilies contain the present letter. Yet it is not considered as belonging even to the tradition of the homilies, since it is not regularly reproduced therein, as are Letters XLV and XLVI.

2 Cf. note 2, p. 269.
"Ω πολλής πωρώσεως, δ' δεινής ὁμότητος. οὐ Θεοῦ ἑφοβήθης, οὐκ ἀνθρώπους ἡδέσθης, οὐ φίλους ἐνετράπης· ἀλλ' ὁμοῦ πάντα ἐναυάγησας, ὁμοῦ πάντα ἑσυλήθης. διὸ πάλιν ἄλγῳ ἐπὶ σοι, ἄθλιε. ο ὁ τῆς βασιλείας πάσι τὸν τόνον ἀπαγ- γέλλων τῆς βασιλείας ἐξέπεσεν. ο τῆς διδασκ- αλίας τὸν φῶβον πᾶσιν ἐμποιῶν οὐκ ἔσχες φῶβον Θεοῦ ἀπέναντι τῶν ὀφθαλμῶν σου. ο ἀγιωσύνην κηρύσσων ἐναγης εὐρίσκῃ, ο ἐπὶ ἀκτημοσύνη σεμνυνόμενος συλοχρηματῶν ἐφευρ- ἴσκῃ. ο τὴν τοῦ Θεοῦ κόλασιν ἐπιδεικνύμενος διὰ τῆς υφηγήσεως αὐτὸς κόλασιν σειστὸ προεξέν- ησας. πῶς σε θρηνήσω; πῶς ἄλγησω ἐπὶ σοι; πῶς ἐξέπεσεν ὁ ἐωσφόρος ὁ πρωὶ ἀνατέλλων καὶ συνετρίβη ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς; παντὸς ἄκοουντος ἡχήσει τὰ ἀμφότερα ὅτα. πῶς ο Ναζηραίος ὁ ἐκλάμπων ὑπὲρ χρυσίον ἐσκότασεν ὑπὲρ ἄσβολην; νῦς Σιων ο τίμιος πῶς ἐγένετο σκεῦος ἀχρηστον; οὐ ἡ μνήμη τῶν θείων Γραφῶν ὑπὸ πάντων ἐλαλεῖτο, σήμερον ἀπώλετο τὸ μνημόσυνον αὐτοῦ μετ' ἥχου. ὁ δέξιος δέξιος ἀπώλετο. ὁ πολύνος πολῦν- πλοκον ἀμαρτίαν εἰργάσατο. οἱ γὰρ ὁφελημένοι ὑπὸ τῆς σῆς διδασκαλίας ἐβλάβησαν ὑπὸ τῆς σῆς ἀπωλείας. οί τὰς ἄκοας παρατιθέντες ἐπὶ τῇ σῇ

1 Cf. Lam. 4, 7 and 8. 'Ἐκαθαριώθησαν Ναζηραίοι αὐτῆς ὑπὲρ χιόνα, ἐλαμψαν ὑπὲρ γάλα, ἐπυρώθησαν ὑπὲρ λίθους, σαπφείρον τὸ ἀπόσπασμα αὐτῶν. 'Ἐσκότασαν ὑπὲρ ἁσβόλην το ἐίδος αὐτῶν, οὐκ ἐπεγνώσθησαν ἐν ταῖς ἐξοδοῖς: ἐπάγη δέρμα αὐτῶν ἐπὶ τὰ ὀστέα αὐτῶν, ἐξηράνθησαν, ἐγενήθησαν ὃσπερ ξύλον. "'Ζαιν. Her Nazarites were whiter than snow, purer than milk, more ruddy than the old ivory, fairer than the sapphire. Heth. Their face is now made blacker than coals, and they are not known in the streets : their skin hath stuck to their
LETTER XLIV

Alas for your hardness of heart, your terrible cruelty! You feared not God, you were not ashamed before men, you paid no heed to your friends; but all alike you shipwrecked, of all alike you deprived yourself. Therefore again do I grieve for you, wretched man! You who proclaim to all your zeal for the kingdom fell from the kingdom. You who instil fear of the doctrine in all men had no fear of God before your eyes. You who preach sanctity are found polluted. You who glory in poverty are caught stealing money. You who through your guidance set forth God's punishment have procured punishment for yourself. How shall I lament for you? How shall I grieve for you? How did the early-rising Lucifer fall and meet destruction upon earth? The two ears of everyone who hears thereof will ring. How did the Nazarite who was brighter than gold become blacker than coals? How did the honoured son of Sion become an unclean vessel? Of him whose memory of the Holy Scriptures was noised about by all, the remembrance has this day perished as soon as the ringing ceases. The man of quick intelligence has quickly perished. The man of a manifold mind has committed a manifold sin. For they who have been aided by your teaching have been injured by your destruction. Those who gave ear to your discourses have stopped bones, it is withered, and is become like wood." Basil undoubtedly has this portion of the Scriptures in mind here, although he makes very loose use of it.

2 Cf. Hosea 8, 8. κατεπόθη Ἰσραήλ, νῦν ἐγένετο ἐν τοῖς Θεοσιν ὧς σκένος άχρηστον. "Israel is swallowed up: now is he become among the nations like an unclean vessel."

3 i.e., as soon as the words about the fall of this man cease to ring in our ears, we have forgotten him.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

ομιλία ἐφραζαν τὰ ὦτα ἐπὶ τῇ σῇ ἀπωλείᾳ. ἐγὼ δὲ θρηνών καὶ σκυθρωπάζων,1 καὶ παρειμένοις πάντοθεν, καὶ σποδόν ὦσει ἄρτον ἐσθίων, καὶ σάκκον ἐπὶ τῇ πληγῇ μου ἐπιρρήψας, τοιαῦτά σοι ἐγκώμια διεξέρχομαι μᾶλλον δὲ ἐπιταφίους λόγους συντάσσων, ἀπαράκλητος καὶ ἀθεράπευτος διατελῶ. ὅτι παράκλησις κέκρυπται ἀπὸ τῶν ὀφθαλμῶν μου, καὶ οὐκ ἔστι μάλαγμα ἐπιθείναι, οὔτε ἔλαιον, οὔτε καταδέσμους· ἔστι γὰρ ἡ πληγὴ μου ὄδυνηρι. πόθεν ἰδιθήσομαι;

Εἴ τις οὖν ἐτί ἐλπίς ὑπολείπεται σοι σωτηρίας, εἰ τις βραχεία μυνήμη περὶ τὸν Θεοῦ, εἰ τις πόθος τῶν μελλόντων ἁγαθῶν, εἰ τις φόβος τῶν τεθησαυρισμένων κολύσεων τοῖς ἀμετανοήτοις, ἀνάνηψε ταχέως, ἔπάρον τοὺς ὀφθαλμοὺς σου εἰς τοὺς ὀφρανούς, ἐλθέ εἰς συναίσθησιν, παύσαι ἀπὸ τῆς πονηρίας σου, ἀπόσεισαι τὴν περιχυθεῖσάν σοι μέθην, ἔπαυσα τῷ καταβαλόντι σε. ἴσχυσον ἐκ γῆς ἐπαναστήναι. μυνήσθητι τοῦ ἁγαθοῦ ποιμένος, ὦτι καταδιώκων ἐξελείται σε. καὶ ἡ2 δύο σκέλη, ἡ λοβὸς ωτίον, ἀποπήδησον ἀπὸ τῶν τραυματίσαντός σε. μνήσθητι τῶν ὀικτιρμῶν τοῦ Θεοῦ, ὦτι θεραπεύει ἔλαιο καὶ σὲ νωπό. μὴ ἀπελπίσης τὴν σωτηρίαν. ἀνάλαβε τὴν μνήμην τῶν γεγραμμένων, ὦτι ὁ πίπτων ἀνίσταται, καὶ ὁ ἀποστρέφων ἐπιστρέφει· ὁ πεπληγὼς θεραπεύεται, ὁ θηριάλωτος περιγίνεται, ὁ ἔξομο-

1 καὶ παριστάμενοι σκυθρωπός add. C, D.
2 εἰ C, D.

1 Cf. Amos 3, 12. τάδε λέγει Κύριος· Ὑπὸ τῶν ἑκατάσχη ὧν ποιήσει ἐκ στόματος τοῦ λέοντος δύο σκέλη ἡ λοβὸν ὡτίον,
their ears at your destruction. As for me, lamenting and downcast, utterly undone, eating ashes for bread, and having cast sackcloth over my wound, I recount your praises in this fashion; or rather, as I compose a funeral address for you, I remain disconsolate and neglected; for consolation has been hidden from my eyes, and I have no salve, no oil, no bandage to apply; for my wound is painful. Wherewith shall I be healed?

Now if any hope of salvation still remains in you, any slight recollection of God, any desire for the good things to come, any fear of the punishments treasured up for the unrepentant, come back to sobriety at once, lift your eyes to heaven, come to your senses, cease your wickedness, shake off the drunkenness that has drenched you, rise up against that which has overthrown you. Have the strength to rise from the ground. Remember the Good Shepherd, that He will follow after you and drive you into safety. Though it be but "two legs, or the tip of the ear," spring back from him who wounded you. Be mindful of God's compassion, that it heals with oil and wine. Do not despair of salvation. Call to mind what is written, that he that falleth shall rise again, and he that turneth away shall turn again; the wounded is healed, he that is caught by wild beasts escapes, he who con-

_"Thus saith the Lord: As if a shepherd should get out of the lion's mouth two legs, or the tip of the ear: so shall the children of Israel be taken out that dwell in Samaria."_  

2 Cf. Jer. 8, 4. ὁτι τὰῦτε λέγει Κύριος: Ἔφη ὁ πίπτων οὐκ ἀνίσταται; ἢ ὁ ἀναστρέφων οὐκ ἀναστρέφει; "Thus saith the Lord: Shall not he that falleth rise again? and he that is turned away, shall he not turn again?"
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

λογούμενος οὐκ ἀποβάλλεται. οὐ θέλει γὰρ ὁ Κύριος τὸν θάνατον τοῦ ἀμαρτωλοῦ, ὥς τὸ ἐπιστρέφαι καὶ ζῆν αὐτὸν. μὴ ὡς εἰς βάθος κακῶν ἐμπεσῶν καταφρονήσης.

Καίρος ἀνοχής ἐστὶ, καίρος μακροθυμίας, καίρος ἀίσεως, καίρος διορθώσεως. ὁλίσθησας; ἐξ- εγείρον. ἡμαρτε; ἡσύχασον. μὴ στῆς ἐν ὁδῷ ἀμαρτωλῶν, ἀλλὰ ἀποτίθησον. ὅταν γὰρ ἐπιστραφεῖς στενάξῃς, τότε σωθήσῃ. ἐστι γὰρ ἐκ πόνων υγεία, καὶ ἐξ ἱδρώτων σωτηρία. ἢρα σὺν μὴ ποτε, συνθήκας βουλόμενος τινῶν φυλάττειν, παραβῆς τὰς πρὸς τὸν Ἐθένν συνθήκας, ἃς ὀμολόγησας ἐπὶ πολλῶν μαρτύρων. μὴ οὖν διὰ τινὰς λογισμοὺς ἀνθρωπίνους οἰκνήσῃς ἐλθεῖν πρὸς με. ἐγὼ γὰρ ἀναλαβὼν τὸν νεκρὸν μου θρηνήσω, ἐγὼ θεραπεύσω, ἐγὼ πικρῶς κλαύσομαι ἐπὶ τὸ σύντριμμα τῆς θυγατρὸς τοῦ γένους μου. πάντες σε δέχονται, πάντες σοι συμποιήσουσί. μὴ ἀναπέσῃς: μην θέθητι ἡμερῶν ἀρχαίων. ἐστὶ σωτηρία, ἐστὶ διόρθωσις. θάρσει, μὴ ἀπελπίσης. οὐκ ἐστί νόμος καταδικάζων τῶν χωρίς οἰκτηρῶν

1 τοῦ om. C, D.

1 Cf. Ez. 18, 32. διὸτι οὐ θέλω τῶν θάνατον τοῦ ἀποθνῄσκοντος λέγει Κύριος· καὶ ἐπιστρέψατε καὶ ζήσατε. "For I desire not the death of him that dieth, saith the Lord God; return ye and live."

2 Cf. Prov. 18, 3. ὅταν ἔλθῃ ἁσβῆς εἰς βάθος κακῶν, καταφρονεῖ, ἐπέρχεται δὲ αὐτῷ ἁτιμία καὶ ὠνείδος. "The wicked man, when he is come unto the depth of sins, contemneth: but ignominy and reproach follow him."

3 Cf. Psal. 1, 1. μακάριος ἀνήρ ὅς οὐκ ἐπορεύθη ἐν βουλή ἁσβῶν καὶ ἐν ὁδῷ ἀμαρταλῶν οὐκ ἔστη, καὶ ἐπὶ καθέδραν λοιμῶν οὐκ ἐκάθισεν. "Blessed is the man who hath not walked in
fesses is not rejected. For the Lord desireth not the death of the sinner, but that he return and live. Do not, as one who has fallen into the depth of sin, be contemptuous.

There is still time for forbearance, time for long-suffering, time for healing, time for reform. Have you slipped? Rise up. Have you sinned? Cease. Do not stand in the way of sinners, but leap aside. For when you turn back and weep, then you will be saved. For out of labour cometh health, and out of sweat, salvation. Beware, therefore, lest, in your desire to keep agreements with others, you transgress your agreements with God, which you have confessed before many witnesses. Therefore do not for any worldly considerations hesitate to come to me. For I shall take up my dead and weep, I shall care for him, “I will weep bitterly” “for the devastation of the daughter of my people.” All are ready to receive you, all will aid you in your troubles. Do not lose heart; remember the days of old. There is salvation, there is reform. Take courage, do not despair. There is no law which condemns to death without compassion, but there is the counsel of the ungodly, nor stood in the way of sinners, nor sat in the chair of pestilence.”

4 Cf. 1 Tim. 6, 12. ἀγωνίζοντας καλὴν αἰώνα τῆς πίστεως· ἐπιλαβοῦς τῆς αἰωνίου ἐκκλησίας, εἰς ἐν καὶ ἐκλήθης, καὶ ἀμισύνης τήν καλὴν δομολογίαν ἐνώτιον πολλῶν μαρτύρων. “Fight the good fight of faith: lay hold on eternal life, whereunto thou art called, and hast confessed a good confession before many witnesses.”

5 Cf. Isa. 22, 4. διὰ τοῦτο εἶπα, Ἀφετέ με, πικρῶς κλαύσομαι· μὴ καταχάσῃς παρακαλεῖν με ἐπὶ τὸ συντρίμμια τῆς θυγατρὸς τοῦ γένους μου. “Therefore have I said: Depart from me, I will weep bitterly: labour not to comfort me for the devastation of the daughter of my people.”
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

θάνατον, ἀλλὰ χάρις ὑπερτιθεμένη τὴν κόλασιν, ἐκδεχομένη τὴν διόρθωσιν. οὔπω ἐκλείσθησαν αἱ θύραι· ἀκούει ὁ νυμφίος· οὐ κυριεύει ἁμαρτία. ἀναπάλαισον πάλιν· μὴ κατοκνήσης· καὶ σεαυτὸν οἴκτείρησον καὶ πάντας ἡμᾶς ἐν Χριστῷ Ἰησοῦ τῷ Κυρίῳ ἡμῶν, ὥς δόξα καὶ τὸ κράτος νῦν καὶ ἀεὶ εἰς τόὺς αἰώνας τῶν αἰώνων· ἀμήν.

XLV

Πρὸς μονάζοντα ἐκπεσόντα

Διττὸς μοι φόβος ἐνέσκηψε τοῖς τῆς διανοίας κόλποις ἐκ τῆς περὶ σὲ ὑποθέσεως. ἕ γὰρ τις ἀσυμπαθὴς τρόπος προκαταρκώμενος εἰς μισανθρωπίας ἐγκλημάτων μιθαπτεῖ, ἢ αὐθινοῦ συμπαθεῖν ἐθέλοντα καὶ πρὸς τὰ πάθη καταμαλακίζεσθαι, κακῶς μετατίθησι. διόπερ καὶ διαχαράττειν μέλλων τούτῳ μοι τὸ γράμμα, τὴν μὲν χεῖρα ναρκώσαν τοῖς λογισμοῖς ἐνεύρωσα, τὸ δὲ πρόσωπον, ἦπορημένον ἐκ τῆς ἑπὶ σοὶ κατηφείας, ἀλλοιώσαι οὐκ ἵσχυσα, τοσαύτης μοι ἑπὶ σοὶ

1 μισαδελφίας Ε.
2 καταμαλακίζεσθαι μὴ μαλακίζεσθαι Ε.
3 διατίθησι Τ, Θ.

1 Cf. Letter XLII, note 1. Letters XLV and XLVI may be considered together as regards authenticity, but they can in no way be associated with any of the three preceding. Unlike the preceding letters, they have an almost unanimous tradition in the MSS. of the letters (XLVI is missing in Parisinus 1020 S), and a strong tradition in the MSS. of the
LETTER XLV

grace which remits the punishment and accepts the reform. Not yet closed are the gates; the bridegroom hears; sin does not prevail. Renew the contest: delay not; and have pity on yourself and on us all in Christ Jesus our Lord, to whom be the glory and the power, now and for ever, world without end. Amen.

LETTER XLV

To a Fallen Monk ¹

A twofold fear has fallen upon me, reaching to the innermost recesses of my heart, because of you. For either a certain unsympathetic predisposition of mind lays me open to a charge of inhumanity, or else, when I wish to be sympathetic and indulgent with your infirmities, these change me for the worse.² Hence, even as I set out to write this letter, though by reasoning I can nerve my benumbed hand, yet my countenance, distressed by the dejection I feel for your sake, I have not the strength to alter, so great is the feeling of shame that overwhelms me

homilies. Letter XLVI was translated into Latin as a homily by Rufinus, which, however, merely indicates the antiquity of its tradition in the MSS. of the homilies, but not any superiority therein over its tradition in the MSS. of the letters. Both letters contain a style and a Biblical colouring similar to that of Basil’s homilies, and unlike that of the preceding letters. In fact Letter XLV has many similarities with Homily VI of the Hexaemeron. Accordingly, Letters XLV and XLVI are considered genuine.

² i.e. these infirmities of yours compel me to assume a hostile attitude.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

κεχυμένης ¹ αἰσχύνης, ὡς καὶ τὴν τοῦ στόματος ² σύμπτυξιν παραχρῆμα τίπτειν, τῶν χειλέων μου εἰς κλαυθμὸν ἐκτρεπομένων. οἴμοι, τί γράψω, ἣ τί λογίσμαι ἐν τριόδῳ ἀπειλημμένοις;

Ἐὰν ἔλθω εἰς μνήμην τῆς προτέρας σοι ματαιάς ³ ἀναστροφῆς, ὅτε σε ⁴ περιέβρει πλοῦτος καὶ τὸ χαμερπὲς ⁵ δοξάριον, φρίττω: ἤνικα ἐκπετό σοι κολάκων πλῆθος ⁶ καὶ τρυφῆς ἀπόλαυσις πρόσκαιρος μετὰ προφανοῦς κινδύνου καὶ ἀδίκων πόρων· καὶ τῇ μὲν ἄρχοντικοι φόβοι διερρήπιζον σου τὴν τῆς ⁷ σωτηρίας ὑπόνοιαν, πῇ δὲ δημοσίων θόρυβοι διεσάλευόν σου τὴν ἔστιαν, ἢ τε συνοχὴ τῶν κακῶν ἀπεσφαίριζέ σου τὸν οὐν πρὸς τὸν δυνάμενον σοι βοηθεῖν· ἤνικα κατὰ μικρὸν ἐμελέτας περιβλέπεσθαι ⁸ τὸν Σωτῆρα, φέροντα μὲν πρὸς ὅφελειαν τοὺς φόβους, ῥυόμενον δὲ σε καὶ σκέποντα, παίζοντα κατ’ αὐτὸν ἐν ταῖς ἀδείαις· ἤνικα ἐγυμνάζου πρὸς μεταβολὴν σεμνοῦ τρόπου, σκυβαλίζων μὲν σου τὴν πολυκίνδυνον περιουσίαν οἰκὸν τε θεραπείαν καὶ συνοικὸν ὁμίλιαν ἄπαρομομένος. ὅλος δὲ μετάρσιος, ὦσπερ ξένος καὶ ἀλήτης, ἄγροις καὶ πόλεις ἐξαμείβων, κατέδραμες ἐπὶ τὰ Ἰεροσόλυμα, ἑνθα σοι καὶ αὐτὸς συνδιατρίβων ἐμακάριζον τῶν ἀθλητικῶν πόνων, ὅτε ἐβδοματικῷ κύκλῳ νῆστις διατελῶν Θεῷ προσεφιλοσόφεις, ὡμοῦ καὶ τὰς τῶν ἀνθρώπων συντυχίας λόγω τροπῆς ὑποφεύγων, ἤσυχίαν δὲ καὶ μονοτροπίαν ἑαυτῷ ἐφαρμόσας, τοὺς πολι-

¹ ἐπὶ σοι κεχυμένης] ἐπικεχυμένης B, C, D.
² στόματος] σῶματος E.
³ ματαιάς σοι προτέρας E.
⁴ σοι C, D.
⁵ χαμαρρεπὲς B.
⁶ πλῆθος A, D.
⁷ τῆς] πρὸς B.
LETTER XLV

on your account—so great, indeed, that the portals of my mouth straightway fall apart, and my lips are turned to sobbing. Alas! What shall I write? How shall I reason out my course, halted as I am at a meeting of three ways?

If I call to mind your past life of vanity, when wealth flowed in streams about you, and the paltry glory of groundlings, I tremble. In those days you were followed by a crowd of flatterers, and by a temporary enjoyment of luxury attended by manifest danger and unjust gains; at one time fears of magistrates dispelled your thoughts of salvation; at another, upheavals in public affairs disturbed your hearth, and a succession of misfortunes caused your mind to rebound toward Him who has the power to help you. Then little by little you meditated how you might see the Saviour, who brings fears for your good, but yet rescues you and protects you, though in your moments of security you mock Him. Then you began to train yourself for the adoption of the pious life, rejection with disgust your perilous affluence, and denying yourself the comfort of a home and the society of a wife. Then, wholly lifted up, passing like a stranger and wanderer from farm to farm and from city to city, you made your way to Jerusalem. Here I myself lived and rejoiced with you for your ascetic labours, when unremittingly you fasted on alternate weeks and speculated about God, at the same time shunning the society of men on the pretext that you desired a change, though in fact, by avoiding the turmoils of civil life, you procured for yourself quiet and soli-

8 σοι add. E, F. 9 τὸν ἀθλητικὸν πόνον Ε.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

tikoûs thorûboûs èxeîklinas. 1 σάκκῳ δὲ τραχεὶ 2
tὸ σῶμα σου 3 διανύττων, καὶ ξονὴ σκληρᾷ τὴν
ὁσφύν σου περισφίγγων, καρτερικῶς τὰ ὅστὰ σου
diéthlizes. λαγόνιας δὲ ταῖς ἐνδείαις κοιλαίνων
μέχρι τῶν νωτιαίων μερῶν ὑπεχαύνωσας· καὶ
φασκίας μὲν ἀπαλῆς τὴν χρῆσιν ἄτηρνήσω,
ἐνδοθεν δὲ τὰς λαπάρας, σικύνας δίκην, ὑφελκύ-
σας 4 τοῖς νεφριτικοῖς χωρίοις προσκολλᾶσθαι 5
ἐβιαίζου· ὄλην δὲ τὴν τῆς σαρκοῦς πιμελήν ἐκκενώ-
σας, τοῖς τῶν ὑπογαστρίων όχετοὺς γενναίους
ἐξῆρανας, γαστέρα τε αὐτὴν ταῖς ἁσιτιάς συμ-
πτύξας, τὰ πλευριτικά μέρη, ὥσπερ τινὰ στέγης
ἐξοχίην, τοῖς τοῦ ὀμφαλοῦ μέλεσιν 6 ἐπεσκίαζες,
καὶ συνεσταλμένῳ ὅλῳ τῷ ὀργάνῳ, κατὰ τὰς
νυκτερινὰς όρας ἀνθρωμολογούμενος τῷ Θεῷ, τοῖς
τῶν δακρύων όχετοῖς τὴν γενείαν ἐμβροχὸν
καθωμάλιζες. καὶ τὶ με δεὶ καταλέγειν ἔκαστα;
μνήσθητι ὅσα ἅγίων στόματα φιλήματι κατ-
ησπάσω, ὅσα ἱερὰ σῶματα περιεπτύξω, ὅσοι σου
τὰς χείρας ὃς ἀχράντους περείθαλπον, ὅσοι
δοῦλοι Θεοῦ, ὥσπερ λάτρεις, ὑπέδραμον τοῖς
γόνασί σου περιπλεκόμενοι.

Καὶ τούτων τὸ τέλος τί· μοιχικῆς φήμης δια-
βολῆ, βέλους ἄξυτερον διπταμένη, τιτρώσκει
ἡμῶν τὰς ἁκοῖς, ἀκμαιότερος κέντρῳ τὰ σπλάγχνα
ἡμῶν διαινύττουσα. τίς ἢ τοῦ γοίητος 7 τοσαύτῃ
ἔντεχνος ποικιλία εἰς τοσοῦτον 8 σε περιήγαγεν
ὁλέθριον σκέλισμα; ποιὰ πολύπλοκα τοῦ δια-
βόλου δίκτυα περισφίγξαντά σε, τὰς τῆς ἄρετῆς
ἐνεργείας ἀκινήτους ἀπήλεγξε; 9 ποῦ μοι τὰ

1 èxeîklinas A, B, F, 2 τραχεία A, B, 3 σου om. A, B, C, D, 4 ἐφελκύσας E.
LETTER XLV

tude. Irritating your body with rough sackcloth, and binding tightly about your loins a hard girdle, with steadfast endurance you afflicted your bones. You made your sides hollow by your deprivations, so that they hung flabby even round to the back; and you declined the use of a soft waist-band, but drawing your flanks in tightly, like a gourd, you forced them tight against the region of the kidneys. You rid your flesh of all its fat, nobly drained the channels of your abdomen dry, and by compressing your stomach itself with fastings, you caused your outstanding ribs, like the eaves of a house, to cast a shadow about the region of your navel. Thus, with your whole body contracted, you spent the hours of night making your confessions to God, and with the streams of your tears smoothed out the curls of your drenched beard. Why need I go into details? Remember all the saints whose lips you greeted with a kiss, all the holy persons that you embraced, all the people who fervently clasped your hands as undefiled, all the servants of God who, like hirelings, ran up and clung to your knees.

And what is the end of all this? An evil rumour of adultery, flying swifter than an arrow, wounds our ears, aye, with a sharper sting pierces our vitals. What sorcerer's art was so subtle as to drive you into so deadly a snare? What tortuous meshes of the devil got their coils about you, and exposed the true character of that unswerving practice of virtue of yours? What, pray, has become of my stories of

1 ἕαςκια, Latin fæsicia, a band swathed about breast or waist.

5 κολλᾶσθαι A, F, προς in ras. 6 μέρεσιν A, C, F.
7 τοῦ γῆτος om. F. 8 τότο C, D. 9 ἀπῆλεγξαν C, D.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

dιηγήματα τῶν σῶν πόνων; οίχεται. ἅρα γὰρ ἀπιστήσαι ἄξιον; καὶ πώς οὕτι ἐκ τῶν ἑναργῶν καὶ τὰ τέως ἀφανῆ εἰς πίστιν δεξόμεθα; εἰ τάς τῷ Θεῷ προσφυγοῦσας ἡ ψυχὰς φρεκτοῖς ὁρκοῖς κατέκλεισας· ὁπότε παρατετηρημένως τοῦ ναὶ καὶ τοῦ οὔ τὸ περιττὸν τῷ διαβόλῳ προσ- 

'Ομοῦ τοίνυν καὶ παραρκίας ὀλεθρίου γέγονάς ἐγγυός, καὶ φαυλίσας τῆς ἁσκήσεως τῶν χαρακτήρα μέχρι τῶν ἀποστόλων καὶ αὐτοῦ τοῦ Κυρίου ἀνέπεμψας τὸ αἴσχος. κατήσχυνας τὸ τῆς ἁγνείας καύχημα, ἐμωμήσω τῆς σωφροσύνης τὸ ἐπάγγελμα· ἐγενόμεθα αἰχμαλώτων τραγῳδία, Ἰουδαίοις καὶ Ἐλλησι δραματουργεῖται τὰ ἡμέτερα. διέτεμες φρόνημα μοναχῶν τοὺς ἀκριβεστέρους εἰς φόβον καὶ δείλιναν ἡγαγες, θαυμάζοντας ἐτὶ τοῦ διαβόλου τὴν δύναμιν, τοὺς ἀδιαφόρους εἰς ἀκολασίας ξῆλον μετέθηκας. ἔλυσας, ὥσον ἐπὶ σοί, τὸ τοῦ Χριστοῦ καύχημα, Θαρρέιτε, λέγοντος, ἐγὼ νενίκηκα τὸν κόσμον καὶ τὸν τούτον ἁρχοντα, ἐκέρασας τῇ πατρίδι κρατήρα δυσφημίας. οὖντως εἰς ἐργον ἡγαγες τὸ

1 προσφευγοῦσας F. 2 παρατετηρημένως C, D.
3 περισσοῦν δὲ C, D, E.
4 προσνέμων C, D, F; προσνέμειν A.
5 τούτου] τοῦ κόσμου F.

280
your labours? They are gone. For must we not disbelieve them? And how can we help giving credence, on the strength of things now manifest, to things which have hitherto been unseen—nay, though you have bound by frightful oaths souls which have sought refuge with God, inasmuch as whatever is above yea and nay is scrupulously attributed to the devil?¹

You have therefore at once become liable for a deadly perjury, and by casting disparagement upon the character of asceticism you have carried your disgrace back even to the Apostles and the Lord Himself. You have put our boast of purity to shame, you have mocked the vow of chastity; we have become a tragedy of captives, and our lives are placed on the stage for Jews and Greeks.² You have cut the pride of all monks asunder; those of strictest discipline you have driven into fear and cowardice, since they marvel still at the devil's power, while the indifferent you have converted to rivalry in incontinence. In so far as in you lay, you have nullified Christ's boast, when He says, "Have confidence, I have overcome the world"³—that is, the ruler of this world. You have mixed a cup of infamy for your country. You have truly fulfilled the

¹ Cf. Matt. 5, 37. ἐστῶ δὲ ὁ λόγος ὑμῶν, ναι ναί, ὅποιον τὸ δὲ περίσσον τούτων ἐκ τοῦ ποιημένου ἐστίν. "But let your speech be yea, yea: no, no: and that which is over and above these is of evil."
² I.e. we monks have become a show, in which we play the role of captives, our wretchedness held up for the amusement and ridicule of Jews and Pagans. Basil uses the term "Greeks" for the adherents of the old pagan religion.
³ John 16, 33.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

τῆς 1 Παροιμίας. Ὁς ἔλαφος τοξευθεῖς εἰς 2 τὸ ἡπαρ.

Ἀλλὰ τί νῦν; οὐ πέπτωκεν ὁ τῆς ἵσχύος πῦργος, ἀδελφέ, οὐκ ἐμομήθη τὰ τῆς ἐπιστροφῆς φάρμακα: οὐκ ἀπεκλεῖσθη τὸν καταφευγτηρίον ἡ πόλις. μὴ τῷ βάθει τῶν κακῶν εἰναπομείνης. μὴ χρήσης σεαυτόν τῷ ἀνθρωποκτόνῳ. οἶδεν ἄνορθοὺς κατερραγμένους ὁ Κύριος. φεύγε 3 μὴ μακράν, ἀλλὰ πρὸς ἡμᾶς ἀνάδραμε. ἀνάλαβε πάλιν νεανίκους πόνους, δευτέροις κατορθώμασι διαλύων τὴν χαμαίζηλον καὶ γλοιώδη 4 ἡδονήν. ἀνάνευσον εἰς τὰ τῦν τέλους ἡμέραν, οὕτω προσεγγίσασαν τῇ ζωῇ ἡμῶν καὶ γνώθι πῶς λοιπὸν Ἰουνδαίων καὶ Ελληνῶν παῖδες συνελαύνονται πρὸς θεοσέβειαν καὶ μὴ ἀπαξαπλῶς ἀπαρνήσῃ 5 τῶν τοῦ κόσμου Σωτῆρα, μὴ σε ἡ φρικωδεστάτη ἐκείνη καταλάβῃ ἀπόφασις, ὅτι ὦκ οίδα ἡμᾶς, τίνες ἐστέ.

XLVI

Πρὸς παρθένου ἐκπεσοῦσαν

Νῦν καιρὸς ἐκβοήσαι τὸ προφητικὸν ἐκείνο, καὶ εἰπεῖν. Τίς δώσει τῇ κεφαλῇ μου ύδωρ, καὶ

---

1 τὸ τῆς] τὰς Α, Ε, Φ. 2 εἰς om. C, D. 3 φεύγε Ε, Φ. 4 γλυώδη Α, Ε, Φ (in marg. γελοιώδη); γελοιώδη Κ. 5 ἀρνήσῃ Ε.

---

1 Cf. Prov. 7, 22–23. ὁ δὲ ἐπηκολούθησεν αὐτῇ κεφαλεῖς, ὥσπερ δὲ βοῦς ἐπὶ σφαγῆν ἄγεται, καὶ ἥσπερ κύων ἐπὶ δεσμοὺς, ἡ 282
words of the Proverb: "Like a stag pierced to the liver."  
But what now? The tower of our strength has not fallen, brother; the remedies of amendment have not been mocked; the city of refuge has not been closed. Do not abide in the depths of iniquity; do not give yourself over to the slayer of men. The Lord knows how to raise up those who have been dashed down. Flee to no distant place, but hasten back to us. Take up the labours of youth again, and by succeeding in a second trial end that indulgence, which wallows in sticky mire. Look up toward the last day, that has approached so near our lives; realise how the children of Jews and Greeks are now driven to the worship of God; and do not, once for all, deny the Saviour of the world, lest that most terrible sentence be passed upon you: "I know you not, who you are."  

LETTER XLVI

To a Fallen Virgin

Now is the time to quote the words of the prophet, and say: "Who will give water to my

3 Cf. Letter XLV, note 1.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

tois ophthalmois mou pingin dakryon, kai klausomai tous tetraumati smeious\(^1\) thugatros lasso mou; ei gar kai toutos batheia periexei syggi, kai keintai apax kekaromenei to dein\(\iota\) kai to kairio tis plhgyis afhirmenoi kai autois ydη tou padois tin aiuthien, all' oux emas ge parineai adakrunti tosooton\(^2\) ptoima xрh. ei gar Iereamias tous en polemov tа swmata\(^3\) pepelhgetas murion thrinov axious ekriu, тι ἀν тις εἰποὶ πρὸς τηλικαυτην ψυχων\(^4\) sumforan; Oi tromahtiasi sou, ϕησιν, ou tromahtiasi rоmphiass, kai oi nekrois sou ou nekrois polemov. ἀλλα το κέντρον του οντος θανατοῦ, την χαλεπην ἀμαρτιαν ὀδυρομαι, καὶ τὰ πεπερωμένα τοῦ πονηροῦ βέλη, ψυχας ὀμοῦ μετὰ σωμάτων βαρβαρικῶς καταφλέξαντα.

\(^{5}\) Η μεγάλα ἀν\(^5\) στενάξειαν οἱ τοῦ Θεοῦ νόμοι, τηλικοῦτον ἄγος ἐπὶ γῆς ἐπιβλέποντες,\(^6\) οἱ γε\(^7\) ἀπαγορεύουτες αἰεί καὶ βοώντες, πάλαι μὲν. Οὐκ ἐπιθυμησίαις τῆς γηναικας τοῦ πλησιον σου, διὰ δὲ τῶν ἁγίων εὐαγγελίων ὅτι: Πᾶς ὁ ἐμβλέπων\(^8\) γηναικί\(^9\) πρὸς τὸ ἐπιθυμῆσαι αὐτῆς,\(^10\) ἤδη ἐμοίχευσεν αὐτὴν ἐν τῇ καρδίᾳ αὐτοῦ. νῦν δὲ ἐφοροῦσιν αὐτὴν ἀδεὼς μοιχευομένην τοῦ Δεσπότου τὴν νύμφην, ἦς ἡ κεφαλὴ ὁ Χριστός.\(^11\) στενάξειε\(^12\) δ' ἀν καὶ αὐτὰ τῶν ἁγίων τὰ πνεύματα.\(^13\) Φινεές

1 tois tetraumati smeious\(\iota\) to symptrima E.
2 tosooton tolikoouton E; toioouton C, D.
3 to soma E. \(^4\) psyxh\(\iota\) B, D.
5 an\(\iota\) gen E. \(^6\) blepontes A, C, D, E.
7 oj ge\(\iota\) oj ka E. \(^8\) emblephas E; blepos A.
8 gynaike A, C, D. \(^10\) autois A, C, D, E.
11 hs . . . o Kristos om. C, D, E.
12 \(\iota\) an kai auta toin agion ta pneuma.
13 Finois

284
head, and a fountain of tears to my eyes, and I will weep for the slain of the daughter of my people:” 1 Although, he means, these are enwrapped in deep silence, and lie stunned once for all by the dreadful event, and are now bereft by the fatal blow even of all perception of their fate, yet we at all events must not pass over such a fall without a tear. For if Jeremias considered those worthy of countless lamentations who received bodily wounds in battle, what can one say when face to face with a disaster like this to a soul? It is said: “Thy wounded are not wounded by the sword, thy dead are not dead in battle.” 2 Nay, it is the sting of what is truly death—the grievous sin—which I mourn, the flaming darts of the Evil One, which have ruthlessly consumed souls and bodies alike.

Surely the laws of God would loudly groan, if they could see such pollution on earth, those laws 3 which have ever proclaimed the prohibition, in olden times: “Thou shalt not covet thy neighbour’s wife,” and through the holy gospels: 4 “Whosoever shall look on a woman to lust after her, hath already committed adultery with her in his heart.” Now these laws behold the Lord’s bride, whose head is Christ, freely giving herself in adultery. Aye, the very souls of the saints would groan: Phinehas the zealous,

1 Jer. 9. 1. Basil, however, omits the words “day and night” after “weep.” 2 Cf. Isa. 22. 2. ἐνεπλήσθη ἡ πόλις βοῶτων, οἱ τραυματίαι σοι οὐ τραυματίαι ἐν μαχαίραις, οὐδὲ οἱ νεκροὶ σου νεκροὶ πολέμως. “Full of clamour, a populous city, a joyous city: thy slain are not slain by the sword, nor dead in battle.” 3 Deut. 5. 21. 4 Matt. 5. 28.

12 στενάξειαν C, D, E. 13 πνεύματα] τάγματα C, D.
μὲν ὁ ζηλωτὴς, ὅτι μὴ καὶ νῦν ἔξεστιν αὐτῷ τὸν σειρομάστην μετὰ χειρὰς λαβόντι, σωματικῶς ἐκδικήσαι τὸ μῦσος. 1 ὁ δὲ βαπτιστὴς Ἰωάννης, ὅτι μὴ δύναται καταλιπτῶν τὰς ἄνω διατριβὰς, καθάπερ τὸτε τὴν ἑρμοῦ, ἔπι τὸν ἔλεγξον τῆς παρανομίας δραμεῖν, καὶ εἰ παθεῖν τι δέοι τὴν κεφαλὴν ἀποθέσθαι μᾶλλον ἢ τὴν παρρησίαν τάχα δὲ μᾶλλον, 2 εἴπερ καὶ ἡμῖν, κατὰ τὸν μακάριον Ἀβελ, καὶ αὐτὸς ἀποθανὼν ἔτι λαλεῖ, καὶ νῦν βοᾷ καὶ κέκραγε μεῖζον ὁ Ἰωάννης 3 ἡ περὶ τῆς Ἡρωδιάδος τότε. Οὕκ ἔξεστι σοι ἐχεῖν αὐτήν. καὶ γὰρ, εἰ τὸ 4 σόμα Ἰωάννου, κατὰ τὸ ἄναγκαιον τῇ φύσει, τὸν θειὸν ὄρον ἐδέξατο καὶ 5 ἡ γλῶσσα 6 συγά, ἀλλ’ ὁ λόγος τοῦ Θεοῦ ὦ δέδεται. ὁ γὰρ, ἐπειδὴ συνδούλων γάμος ἡθε- τείτο, μέχρι θανάτου τῆς παρρησίας προαγαγῶν, τί ἂν πάθοι τηλικαύτην ἐφορῶν ὑβρίν περὶ τὸν ἄγνοι τοῦ Κυρίου νυμφώνα;

Ἀλλὰ σὺ τῆς θείας ἐκείνης συναφείας 7 τῶν ζυγῶν ἀποφρίγασα, 8 καὶ τὸν μὲν ἀχραντὸν τοῦ ἀληθινοῦ βασιλέως ἀποδράσα νυμφώνα, πρὸς δὲ τὴν ἄτιμον ταύτην καὶ ἁσβῆ φθορὰν ἀδικρῶς πεσοῦσα, ἐπεὶ 9 οὐκ ἔχεις πῶς τὴν πικρὰν ταύτην κατηγορίαν ἐκφύγῃς, 10 οὐδὲ τίς ἐστι 11 σοι τρόπος οὐδὲ 12 μηχανὴ τὸ δεινὸν τούτο συγ-

---

1 μύσος C,
2 τάχα δὲ μᾶλλον] μᾶλλον δὲ A, B, C, D.
3 ὁ Ἰωάννης om. A, B, C, D.
4 καὶ γάρ, εἰ τὸ] τὸ μὲν γάρ C, D.
5 καὶ] καν C, D. 6 δὲ add. C, D.
7 συναφείας] κοινωνίας A, B, C, D.
8 ἀποφρίγασα C, D. 9 ἐπειδὴ E.
9 ἀποφύγῃς E.
that he cannot in this case also take his spear in hand, and with bodily punishment avenge the outrage; and John the Baptist, that he cannot leave his heavenly abode, as once he left the wilderness, and hasten to rebuke the transgression, and, if he needs must suffer, to lose his head rather than his freedom of speech; or rather, perhaps, if John, like the blessed Abel,\(^1\) still continues to speak to us even in death, he may even now be crying out and shouting with louder voice than he once did concerning Herodias: “It is not lawful for thee to have her;”\(^2\) and if John’s body, according to the law of nature, has accepted the divine limitation, and his tongue is silent, yet “the word of God is not bound.”\(^3\) If, when the marriage of a fellow-servant was set at naught, John pushed his frankness of speech even to the point of causing his own death, how would he feel could he see such an outrage as this, which affects the holy marriage-chamber of the Lord? But you have thrown aside the yoke of that divine union; you have fled from the unsullied chamber of the true king, and have fallen shamefully into this dishonourable and impious seduction; and now that you can in no way escape this bitter accusation, and have no way or means to conceal

\(^1\) Cf. Heb. 11. 4. πίστει πλείονα θυσίαν Ἄβελ παρὰ Καίλιν προσήνεγκε τῷ Θεῷ δι’ ἡς ἐμαρτυρήθη εἶναι δίκαιος, μαρτυροῦντος ἐπὶ τοῖς δύροις αὐτοῦ τοῦ Θεοῦ καὶ δι’ αὐτῆς ἀποθανὼν ἔτι λαλεῖται. “By faith Abel offered to God a sacrifice exceeding that of Cain, by which he obtained a testimony that he was just, God giving testimony to his gifts, and by it he being dead yet speaketh.”

\(^2\) Matt. 14. 4.

\(^3\) 2 Tim. 2. 9.

11 ἔστι om. E. 12 τρόπος οὐδὲ om. E.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

καλύψαι, ὀμόσε τῇ τόλμῃ χωρεῖσ. καὶ ἐπειδήπερ ἁσεβής, ἐμπεσὼν εἰς βάθος κακῶν, λοιπὸν καταφρονεί, αὐτᾶς ἀπαρνῆ τὰς πρὸς τὸν ἀληθινὸν νυμφίον συνήκας, οὔτε εἶναι παρθένος, οὔτε ὑποσχέσθαι ποτὲ βοῶσα, ἥ πολλὰ μὲν ἐδέξω, πολλὰ δὲ ἐπεδείξω παρθενίας συνήκαμα.

Μνήσθητι τῆς καλῆς ὀμολογίας, ἢν ὀμολογήσας ἐνώπιον Θεοῦ καὶ ἀγγέλων καὶ ἀνθρώπων. μνήσθητι τῆς σεμνῆς συνοδίας, καὶ ἱεροῦ παρθένου χοροῦ, καὶ συναγωγῆς Κυρίου, καὶ Ἐκκλησίας ὁσίων· καὶ γηραλέας ἐν Χριστῷ μάμμης νεαζούσης ἑτὶ 1 καὶ ἀκμαζούσης τὴν ἀρετὴν, καὶ μητρὸς ἐν Κυρίῳ πρὸς ἐκείνην ἀμιλλωμένης, καὶ ἐξένους τισὶ καὶ ἀθέσθη σῶνοι καταλύειν φιλονεικούσης τὰ τῆς συνηθείας. 2 καὶ ἀδελφῆς ὀμοίως τὰ μὲν ἐκείνας 3 μιμομένης, τὰ δὲ καὶ ὑπερβαίνειν φιλοτιμουμένης, καὶ τοῖς παρθενικοῖς πλεονεκτήμασιν ὑπερακοντιζούσης τὰ προγονικά κατορθώματα, καὶ σε τὴν ἀδελφήν, ὡς ἕκτο, πρὸς τὴν τῶν ἴσων ἀμιλλαν καὶ λόγω καὶ βίῳ φιλοπόνως 4 ἐκκαλουμένης. μνήσθητι τούτων, καὶ ἀγγελικῆς περὶ τὸν Θεὸν μετ' ἐκείνων χωρεῖας, καὶ πνευματικῆς ἐν σαρκὶ ζωῆς, καὶ οὐρανοῦ ἐπὶ γῆς πολιτεύματος· μνήσθητι ἡμερῶν ἀθορύβων, καὶ νυκτῶν πεφωτισμένων, καὶ φόδων 5 πνευματικῶν, καὶ ψαλμῳδίας εὐήχου, καὶ προσευχῶν ἀγίων, καὶ ἀγνῆς καὶ ἀμάντου 6 κοίτης, καὶ παρθενικῆς προὸδου, καὶ ἐγκρατοὺς τραπεζῆς, καὶ

1 ἑτὶ ἡ τότε A, B, C, D.
2 τὸ κράτος add. A, B, C, D.
3 ἐκεῖνας A, B, C, D. 4 φιλοτιμῶς E.
5 φόδων A, C, D, E; ὀδῶν B et editi.

288
this horror, you rush headlong into insolence. And inasmuch as a sinner, on falling into the depth of iniquity, becomes thenceforth contemptuous, you even deny your covenant with the true spouse, and cry aloud that you neither are nor ever promised to be a virgin, although you have accepted many pledges of virginity and have offered many.

Recall that “good confession” which you confessed in the sight of God and angels and men.1 Remember the solemn assembly, the sacred chorus of virgins, the congregation of the Lord, and the Church of saints. Think of your grandmother, old in Christ, but still young and strong in virtue; of your mother vying with her in the Lord, and struggling by strange and unwonted toils to break with her accustomed life; and of your sister, who likewise imitates them both, and yet strives earnestly to surpass them, and indeed by the advantage of her virginity surpasses the successes of her forbears; she by both word and life earnestly summons you, her sister (as she used to think), to a rivalry of like effort. Remember these; remember the chorus of angels, with the saints, about God; remember the spiritual life in the flesh, and the heavenly life on earth; remember the days of calm, the nights of enlightenment, the spiritual songs, the tuneful psalms, the holy prayers, the pure and un-tarnished bed, the procession of virgins, the temperate

1 Cf. 1 Tim. 6. 12. ἀγανίζου τῷ καλῷ ἀγάνα τῆς πίστεως ἐπιλαβοῦ τῆς αἰενίου ζωῆς, εἰς ἑν καὶ ἐκλήθης, καὶ ἀμολογησάς τὴν καλὴν ὁμολογίαν ἐνώπιον πολλῶν μαρτύρων. “Fight the good fight of faith: lay hold on eternal life, wherewith thou art called, and hast confessed a good confession before many witnesses.”

6 καὶ ἀμιάντου om. A, B, C, D.
The benedictions pronounced by the priests upon nuns.
LETTER XLVI

board, and yourself offering the good prayer that your virginity be kept uncorrupted.

What has become of that dignified bearing of yours, that decorous character, that simple dress befitting a virgin, that beautiful blush of modesty, and that comely pallor, which blooms through temperance and vigils and has a radiance more charming than any ruddiness of complexion? How often, when you prayed that you might preserve your virginity spotless, did you perhaps shed tears? How often did you write to the holy men, asking that prayers be offered by them on your behalf, not that you might obtain marriage among men—or rather, that dishonourable corruption—but that you might never fall away from the Lord Jesus? How often have you received gifts from your bridegroom? Why need I even speak of the honours which you received through Him from His ministers? Or of the life you lived among the virgins? Of the processions you made with them? Of the greetings you received from the virgins? Of the words of commendation for your virginity? Of the virginal blessings?¹ Of the letters written to you as a virgin? But now, when a slight breeze of the spirit of the air has reached you, the spirit which "now worketh on the children of unbelief,"² you have renounced all these things, and have exchanged that honoured and highly prized possession for a brief moment of pleasure, a pleasure which tickles your palate³ for

---

¹ Cf. Eph. 2. 2. κατὰ τὸν ἀρχόντα τῆς ἐξουσίας τοῦ ἀέρος, τοῦ πνεύματος τοῦ νῦν ἐνεργοῦντος ἐν τοῖς νοὸις τῆς ἀπειθείας. "According to the prince of the power of the air, of the spirit that now worketh on the children of unbelief."

² Literally, "oils your throat."
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

σὸν φάρμαγα, ὑστερον δὲ πικρότερον χολῆς εὑρήσεις.

'Επὶ τούτοις τίς ούκ ἂν πενθήσας εὑποι. Πῶς ἐγένετο πόρνη πόλις πιστὴ Σιών; πῶς δὲ οὐκ ἂν αὐτὸς ο Κύριος ἀποφθέγξατο πρὸς τινα τῶν νῦν ἐν πνεύματι Ἰερεμίον περιπατοῦντων. Εἶδες ἃ ἐποίησέ μοι ἡ παρθένος τοῦ Ἰσραήλ; ἐγὼ ἐμνηστευόμενος αὐτὴν ἐμαυτῷ ἐν πίστει καὶ ἀφθαρσία, ἐν δικαιοσύνη, καὶ ἐν κρίματι, καὶ ἐν ἑλέει καὶ οἴκτηρισι, καθὼς καὶ διὰ Ὁσηὲ τοῦ προφήτου αὐτῆ ἐπηγειελάμην. αὐτὴ δὲ ἦγαπήκει ἀλλοτρίους, καὶ ξῶντος ἐμοῦ τοῦ ἀνδρός, μοιχαλὶς χρηματίζει, καὶ οὐ φοβείται γενομένη ἀνδρὶ ἐτέρῳ. τί δὲ ἅρα ὁ νυμφαγωγός, ὁ θεῖος καὶ μακάριος Παῦλος, ὁ τε ἄρχαίος ἐκείνος, καὶ ὁ νέος οὐτὸς ὑφ' ὧ μεσίτη καὶ διδασκάλῳ τὸν πατρῴον ὁικὸν καταλιποῦσα τῷ Κυρίῳ συνήφθης; ἅρα οὐκ ἂν εὕποι τῷ τοσοῦτῳ κακῷ περιπαθῆς ἐκάτερος; Φόβος γὰρ ὃν ἐφοβούμην ἥλθε μοι, καὶ ὃν ἐδεδοίκειν συνήντησέ


1 Cf. Isa. 1. 21. πῶς ἐγένετο πόρνη πόλις πιστὴ Σειών, πλήρης κρίσεως; ἐν ἡ δικαιοσύνη ἐκοιμήθη ἐν αὐτῇ, νῦν δὲ φονεύτα. "How is the faithful city, Sion, that was full of judgment, become a harlot? justice dwelt in it, but now murderers."

2 These quoted words are a fusion and adaptation of three different sources: Jer. 18. 13. διὰ τούτο τάδε λέγει Κύριος: 'Ερωτήσατε δὴ ἐν ἐθνεῖς, Τίς ἠκούσεν τοιαύτα φρικτὰ & ἐποίησεν σφόδρα παρθένος Ἰσραήλ; 'Therefore thus saith the Lord: Ask among the nations: Who hath heard such horrible things as the virgin of Israel hath done to excess?" Hosea 2. 19. καὶ μνηστευόμοι σε ἐμαυτῷ εἰς τὸν αἰῶνα, καὶ μνηστευόμοι 292
the moment, but which you will soon find more bitter than gall.

Who would not grieve at this, and say, "How is the faithful city, Sion, become a harlot?" 1 How can the Lord 2 Himself help saying to those who are now walking in the spirit of Jeremias: "Hast thou seen what the virgin of Israel has done to Me? I espoused her to Me in trust, in purity, in justice, in judgment, in mercy, and in commiseration, just as I promised to her through Osee the prophet. But she has loved strangers; and though I, her husband, still live, she is called an adulteress, and fears not to become the wife of another." 3 What then of him who gave the bride to her husband, the holy and blessed Paul—I mean both the Paul of old and this Paul of to-day, under whose mediation and instruction you left your father's home and were married to the Lord? 3 Would not each one, moved to exceeding sorrow by this great misfortune, say: "For the fear which I feared hath come upon me; and that which I was afraid of hath befallen me; 4 for I have

1 Basil refers to two persons named Paul: (1) a priest named Paul, who confirmed the nun when she took her vows, and (2) St Paul. All the other passages quoted in the assumed rebuke of Paul the priest are from St. Paul's Epistles.
Cf. 2 Cor. 11. 11. 3. φοβοῦμαι δὲ μὴ πως, ὡς ὁ υἱὸς Εὗαν ἐξηπάτησεν ἐν τῇ πανοργίᾳ αὐτοῦ, οὕτω φθάρῃ τὰ νοήματα ὑμῶν ἀπὸ τῆς ἀπλότητος τῆς εἰς τὸν Χριστὸν. "But I fear lest, as the serpent seduced Eve by his subtilty, so your minds should be corrupted, and fall from the simplicity that is in Christ."

But I fear lest, as the serpent seduced Eve by his subtilty, so your minds should be corrupted, and fall from the simplicity that is in Christ."
espoused you to one husband, that I may present you as a chaste virgin to Christ;" 1 and, "I always feared lest, as the serpent seduced Eve by his subtility, so your mind should be corrupted." 2 Wherefore I always tried to compose the tumult of your passions by countless spells, and with countless safeguards to protect the bride of the Lord; to describe the life of the unmarried, saying: "The unmarried woman thinketh on the things of the Lord, that her life may be holy in body and spirit." 3 And I was wont to set forth the dignity of virginity, and, calling you "the temple of the Lord," 4 I would as it were give wings to your zeal, thus lifting you up to Jesus; and by inspiring you with dread of the terrible thing, I tried to help you not to fall, saying: "If any man violate the temple of God, him shall God destroy." 5 Moreover, I added what assurance my prayers could offer, if in any way you might wholly, "body and soul and spirit, be preserved blameless in the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ." 6 And all this toil I have spent in vain upon you, and

3 Cf. 1 Cor. 7. 34. ἡ ἄγαμος μεριμνᾷ τὰ τοῦ Κυρίου, ὑνὰ ἡ ἁγία καὶ σώματι καὶ πνεύματι. "And the unmarried woman and the virgin (sic Douay) thinketh on the things of the Lord, that she may be holy both in body and in spirit."

4 I Cor. 3. 16. οὐκ οἴδατε ὅτι ναὸς Θεοῦ ἐστε, καὶ τὸ πνεῦμα τοῦ Θεοῦ οἶκει ἐν ὑμῖν; "Know you not, that you are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you?"

5 I Cor. 3. 17.

6 Cf. 1 Thess. 5. 23. αὐτὸς δὲ ὁ Θεὸς τῆς εἰρήνης ἀγίασαι ὑμᾶς ὀλοτελεῖς. καὶ ὅλοκληρον ὑμῶν τὸ πνεῦμα καὶ η ψυχῆ καὶ τὸ σώμα ἀμέμπτως ἐν τῇ παρουσίᾳ τοῦ Κυρίου ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ τηκμηθεὶς. "And may the God of peace Himself sanctify you in all things; that your whole spirit, and soul, and body, may be preserved blameless in the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ."
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

tōn γλυκέων ἐκείνων πόνων τὸ πέρας· καὶ στένειν ¹ ἀνάγκη πάλιν ἐφ' ἦ ² ἐδει με χαίρειν. ἰδοὺ γὰρ ἡπάτησαι μὲν ὑπὸ τοῦ ὀφεως, τῆς Εὐας πικρότερον. ἐφθαρται δὲ σοι οὐ τὰ νοήματα μόνον, ἀλλὰ γὰρ σὺν ἐκείνοις καὶ αὐτὸ τὸ σῶμα· καὶ τὸ φρικώδες ἐκεῖνο, ὃ καὶ εἰπεῖν ὁκνῶ, καὶ σιωπᾶν ³ οὐ δύναμαι ἐστὶ γὰρ ὡς πῦρ καιόμενον καὶ φλεγόμενον ⁴ εἰν τοῖς οστέοις μου, καὶ παρεῖμαι πάντοθεν, καὶ οὐ δύναμαι φέρειν), ἀρασα τὰ μέλη τοῦ Χριστοῦ πεποίηκας μέλη πόρυνης.

Τούτο μόνον ἐν πάσι κακὸν ἅσυγκριτον· τούτο καινὸν ἐν βίῳ τὸ τόλμημα. Ὁτι διέλθητε, φησί, νήσους Χεττιέμ, καὶ ἴδετε· καὶ εἰς Κηδὰρ ἀποστείλατε, καὶ νοήσατε σφόδρα, εἰ γέγονε τοιαῦτα, εἰ ἀλλάξονται ἐθνὴ θεοὺς αὐτῶν, καὶ αὐτοὶ οὐκ εἰσὶ θεοὶ. ἢ δὲ παρθένος ἦλλαξατο τὴν δόξαν αὐτῆς, καὶ ἢ δόξα ⁵ εἰ τῇ αἰσχύνῃ αὐτῆς. ἐξέστη ὁ οὐρανὸς ἐπὶ τούτω, καὶ ἐφρίξεν ἐν γῇ ἐπὶ πλεῖον σφόδρα. λέγει καὶ νῦν ὁ Κύριος, ὅτι δύο καὶ ποιηρὰ ἐποίησεν ἡ παρθένος· ἐμὲ ἐγκατέλιπε τὸν ἀληθινὸν τὸν ἄγιον ⁶ ψυχῶν ἄγίων νυμφίου, καὶ ἀπέδρα πρὸς ἁσβῆ καὶ παράνομον ψυχῆς ὁμοῦ καὶ σώματος φθορέα. ἀπέστη ἄπο Θεοῦ σωτῆρος αὐτῆς, καὶ παρέστησε τὰ μέλη αὐτῆς δοῦλα τῇ


296
LETTER XLVI

bitter to me has been the end of those sweet labours; and I must lament in turn over her in whom I should have rejoiced. For lo! you have been seduced by the serpent, a more bitter seduction than Eve’s. And not only “your mind” has been “corrupted,” ¹ but with it your very body also; and, most horrible of all—a crime which I hesitate to name, and yet cannot pass over in silence (for it is as a burning and flaming fire in my bones, and my strength is altogether gone, and I cannot bear up under it)—you “took the members of Christ, and made them the members of a harlot.” ²

This alone of all evils cannot be equalled. This is a new piece of audacity in life. “Pass over,” it is said, “to the isles of Chittim, and see; and send into Cedar, consider diligently if there hath been done anything like this, if a nation hath changed their gods, and indeed they are not gods.” ³ “But the virgin ‘has changed her glory,’ and her glory is in her shame. Heaven was amazed at this, and the earth shuddered more violently than ever before, now saith the Lord, because the virgin ‘has done two evils;’ she ‘has forsaken Me,’ the true and holy spouse of holy souls, and has taken refuge with an impious and lawless destroyer of soul and body alike. She has withdrawn from God her saviour, and has ‘yielded her members to serve uncleanness and

¹ Cf. 2 Cor. 11. 3, quoted above (p. 294).
² Cf. 1 Cor. 6. 15. οὐκ ὁδηγεῖτε ὃτι τὰ σῶματα ὑμῶν μέλη Χριστοῦ ἔστιν; ἡρας οὖν τὰ μέλη τοῦ Χριστοῦ ποιήσω πόρνης μέλη; μὴ γένοιτο. “Know you not that your bodies are the members of Christ? Shall I then take the members of Christ, and make them the members of an harlot? God forbid.”
³ Cf. Jer. 2. 10-11.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

ἀκαθαρσία καὶ τὴ ἀνομία. ἔμοι δὲ ἐπελάθετο, καὶ ὁπίσω τοῦ ἔραστοῦ αὐτῆς ἐπορεύετο, ἡς οὐκ ὁφελεθήσεται.

Συνέφερεν αὐτῷ εἰ μύλος ὁ νικὸς περίκειτο περὶ τὸν τράχηλον αὐτοῦ, καὶ ἔρριπτο εἰς τὴν θάλασσαν, ἥ ὅτι ἐσκανδάλισε τὴν παρθένον Κυρίου τισ. δοῦλος αὐθάδης εἰς τοσοῦτον ἐμάνη, ὡς δεσποτικῆ κοίτη ἐαυτὸν ἐπιρρήσατε; ἡ ποῖος ληστὴς ἐπὶ τοσοῦτον ἀπονοίας προῆχθη, ὥς αὐτῶν ἐφάγασθαί τῶν τοῦ Θεοῦ ἀναθημάτων, οὐ σκευῶν ἄψυχων, ἀλλὰ σωμάτων ζωντων καὶ ψυχῆν ἐνοικοὺς ἐχόντων κατ’ εἰκόνα Θεοῦ πεποιημένην; τίς ἀπ’ αἰώνων ἤκουσται ἐν μέση πόλει καὶ σταθερὰ μεσημβρία εἰκόνι βασιλικῆς χοιρων μορφᾶς ἀκαθάρτως ἐπιγράψατο τομήσας; ἀθετήσας τις γὰρ αὐθρόπον, χωρὶς οἰκτιρμῶν, ἐπὶ δυσὶν ἡ τρισὶ μάρτυριν, ἀποδυνάμενην πόσω, δοκεῖτε, χείρονος ἄξιωθήσεται τιμωρίας ὁ τὸν

1 εἰς τὸν ἄνωθεν ἂν, B, C, D.
2 εἰς οὐκ ὁφελεθήσεται om. A, B, C, D, E.
3 Κυρίου om. E.
4 ἡ om. A, B, C, D.
5 ἐπὶ εἰς E.
6 ἤκουσεν E.; ἤκουσθη A, B, C, D.
7 τομήσαται E.

1 A fusion and adaptation of the following: Jer. 2. 12-13. ἔξοστῇ ὁ νῦν ἐπὶ τοῦτῳ καὶ ἐφρίζῃ ἐπὶ πλεῖον σφόδρα, λέγει Κύριος. ὅτι δύο καὶ ποιημένη ἐποίησεν ῥαδὸς μου. ἔμε ἐγκατέλεισίν, πηγῆν ὑδατός ἡμῖν, καὶ ὀρυξαν ἐαυτοίς λάκκους συντετριμμένους οἱ οὐ δυνήσονται ὑδρ συνέχειν. The Douay Version is based on a slightly different Greek text. “Be astonished, 0 ye heavens, at this, and ye gates thereof, be very desolate, saith the Lord. For My people have done two evils. They have forsaken Me, the fountain of living water, and have dugged to themselves cisterns, broken cisterns, that can hold no water.” Rom. 6. 19. ἀνθρώπινον λέγω διὰ τὴν ἀσθένειαν τῆς σαρκὸς 298
LETTER XLVI

iniquity.' She 'forgot Me, and went after her lover,' from whom she will receive no good.'

"It were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and he cast into the sea," than that anyone should have "scandalized" the virgin of the Lord. Was ever an insolent slave so mad as to cast himself upon his master's bed? What robber ever reached such a degree of folly as to seize the very offerings of God, not lifeless vessels, but living bodies, containing an indwelling soul made after the image of God? Who, since time began, has been known to have dared, in the heart of the city and at high noon, to draw pictures of filthy swine upon a statue of a king? He who sets at naught a human marriage dies without compassion if there be but two or three witnesses; "how much more do you think he desERVeth worse punishments,

\[\text{\small \textsuperscript{1} Cf. Luke 17. 2. \textsuperscript{2} Cf. Hosea 2. 13.}\]
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

Τίδον τοῦ Θεοῦ καταπατήσας, καὶ τὴν αὐτῆς καθομολογηθείσαν νῦμφην νοθεύσας, καὶ τὸ πνεῦμα τῆς παρθενίας καθυβρίσας; 1 ἀλλ' ἐβούλετο, φησίν, ἐκείνη καὶ οὐκ ἂκουσαν ἐβιασάμην αὐτῆς. 2 καὶ γὰρ ἡ δέσποινα ἡ ἄσωτος ἡ Ἀιγυπτία 3 αὐτὴ τῷ καλῷ Ἰωσήφ ἐπεμάνη, ἀλλ' οὐκ ἐνίκησε τὴν ἀρετὴν τοῦ σώφρονος ἡ μανία τῆς ἀκολαστοῦ, οὐδὲ χερσὶν αὐτῆς βιαζομένης πρὸς τὴν παρανομίαν ἐκεῖνος ἐβιάσθη. ἀλλ' ἐκέκριτο ἐκείνη τοῦτο, φησίν, καὶ οὐκέτι ἤν παρθένος· καὶ εἰ ἐγὼ μὴ ἐξουλόμην, πρὸς ἄλλον ἀν ἐφθάρσα. 4 καὶ γὰρ τὸν Τίνο τοῦ ἀνθρώπου, φησίν, ἐδει παραδοθῆναι, ἀλλ' οὐκέ δι' οὗ παρεδόθη· καὶ τὰ σκάνδαλα ἐλθεῖν ἀνάγκη, ἀλλ' οὐκέ δι' οὗ ἔρχεται. 5

Ἐπὶ τούτων, Μὴ ὁ πίπτων οὐκ ἀνίσταται; ἢ ὁ ἀποστρέφων οὐκ ἐπιστρέφει; διὰ τὶ 6 ἁπεστρεψεν ἡ παρθένος ἀποστροφὴν ἀναίδη, καίτοιν για ἂκούσασα Χριστοῦ 7 τοῦ νυμφίου διὰ Ἰερεμίου λέγοντος. Καὶ εἶπα μετὰ τὸ πορνεύσα τὴν ταύτα πάντα· πρὸς με ἀνάστρεψαν καὶ οὐκ


1 Cf. Heb. 10. 29. ποσῷ δοκεῖτε χείρονος ἁξιωθῆσαι τιμωρίας ο τῶν υἱῶν τοῦ Θεοῦ καταπατήσας, καὶ τὸ αἷμα τῆς διαθήκης κοινῶν ἡγησάμενος ἐν ἐς ἡγίασθη, καὶ τὸ πνεῦμα τῆς χάριτος ἐνυβρίσας; "How much more do you think he deserves worse punishments, who hath trodden underfoot the Son of God, and hath esteemed the blood of the testament unclean, by which he was sanctified, and hath offered an affront to the Spirit of grace?"
LETTER XLVI

who hath trodden underfoot the Son of God,'" and hath defiled his confessed bride, and hath insulted the spirit of virginity? 1 "But she desired it," he says; "and I did not violate her against her will." Why! that abandoned Egyptian woman of herself went mad with love for the beautiful Joseph, but the madness of the wanton woman did not prevail over the virtue of the chaste man; nay, not even when she laid violent hands upon him was he forced into iniquity. "But," he replies, "in the case of the Egyptian woman, this matter had been decided, and she was no longer a virgin; and had it not been I who wished it, she would have been ravished by another." And yet we are told, "It was ordained that the Son of man be betrayed, but woe to that man by whom he was betrayed"; 2 and, "It must needs be that scandals come; but woe to that man by whom the scandal cometh." 3

Furthermore, "Shall not he that falleth rise again? and he that is turned away, shall he not turn again?" 4 Why did the virgin turn away, a shameless turning, even though she heard Christ her spouse declare through Jeremias: "And when she had committed all these fornications, I said:

2 Cf. Mark 14. 21. ὁ μὲν νῦς τοῦ ἀνθρώπου ὑπάγει, καθὼς γέγραπται περὶ αὐτοῦ: οὐαὶ δὲ τῷ ἀνθρώπῳ ἐκείνῳ, δι’ οὐ ὁ νῦς τοῦ ἀνθρώπου παραδίδοται. "And the Son of man indeed goeth, as it is written of him: but woe to that man by whom the Son of man shall be betrayed."

3 Cf. Matt. 18. 7. οὐαὶ τῷ κόσμῳ ἀπὸ τῶν σκανδάλων· ἀνάγκη γὰρ ἑστιν ἐλθεῖν τὰ σκάνδαλα. πλὴν οὐαὶ τῷ ἀνθρώπῳ ἐκείνῳ, δι’ οὖ τὸ σκάνδαλον ἔρχεται. "Woe to the world because of scandals. For it must needs be that scandals come: but nevertheless woe to that man by whom the scandal cometh."

4 Jer. 8. 4.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

ἀνέστρεψε. Μὴ ῥητίνῃ οὐκ ἔστιν ἐν Γαλαάδ; ἡ ἰατρὸς οὐκ ἔστιν ἐκεῖ; διὰ τὸ οὐκ ἄνεβη ἱάσις 
θυματρὸς λαοῦ μου; ἡ καὶ πολλὰ μὲν ἀν ἐνῷ ῥοϊς ἐν τῇ θείᾳ Γραφῇ τοῦ κακοῦ ἀλεξίματα, πολλὰ 
ὁτε ἐξ ἀπωλείας εἰς σωτηρίαν φάρμακα· τὰ περὶ 
θανάτου καὶ ἀναστάσεως μυστήρια, τὰ περὶ 
κρίσεως φοβερᾶς καὶ αἰώνιον κολάσεως ῥήματα, 
τὰ περὶ μετανοίας καὶ ἀφέσεως ἀμαρτημάτων ὁ 
δόγματα, τὰ μυρία ἐκεῖνα τῆς ἐπιστροφῆς ὁ 
ὑποδείγματα, τὴν δραχμὴν, τὸ πρὸβατόν, τὸν 
νῖον τὸν καταφαγόντα τὸν βίον μετὰ τῶν περνῶν, 
τὸν ἀπολωλότα καὶ εὐρεθέντα, τὸν νεκρὸν καὶ 
πάλιν ἀναξίσαντα. τοῦτοις χρησώμεθα τοῦ 
κακοῦ ἀλεξίμασι, διὰ τούτων τὴν ψυχὴν ἕαυτῶν 
ιασώμεθα.

Δάβε δὲ εἰς ἐννοιαν τῇ ἐσχάτῃ ἡμέραν (οὐ 
γὰρ δὴ μόνη σὺ τὸν αἰώνα βιώσεις), καὶ συνοχῆν, 
καὶ πνευμὸν, καὶ θανάτου ὄραν, καὶ ἀπόφασιν 
Θεοῦ κατεπείγουσαν, καὶ ἀγγέλους ἐπισπεύδουντας, 
καὶ ψυχὴν ἐν τούτοις δεινῶς θορυβουμένην καὶ 
ἀμαρτωλῶς συνειδότι πικρῶς μαστιγομένην, καὶ 
πρὸς τὰ τῇδε ἐλεεινῶς ἐπιστρέφουσαν, καὶ ἀπαρι 
αίτητον τῆς μακρᾶς ἑκέινης ἀποδημίας ἀνάγκην, 
διάγραψον μοι τῇ διανοίᾳ τῆς τελευταίαν τοῦ 
κοινὸν βίου καταστροφῆν, ὅταν ἐλθῇ ὁ Θίως τοῦ 
Θεοῦ ἐν τῇ δόξῃ αὐτοῦ μετὰ τῶν ἀγγέλων αὐτοῦ. 
ἡμεῖς γὰρ καὶ οὐ παρασιωτῆσται ὅταν ἐλθῇ 
κρίναι ἔστας καὶ νεκροὺς, καὶ ἀποδοῦναι ἐκάστῳ

LETTER XLVI

Return to me; and she did not return? 1 "Is there no balm in Gilead? or is there no physician there? Why then is not the wound of the daughter of my people closed?" 2 Many indeed are the safeguards against evil which you may find in the divine Scriptures, and many the remedies which out of destruction bring salvation: the mysteries of death and resurrection, the words of terrible judgment and everlasting punishment, the doctrines of repentance and remission of sin, those countless examples of reform,—the piece of money, the sheep, the son who wasted his substance with harlots, was lost and found, was dead and alive again. 3 Let us make use of these safeguards against evil; through these remedies let us heal our souls.

But bear in mind your last day (for not you alone will live for ever), the anguish, the struggle for breath, the hour of death, the sentence of God urging us to hasten, angels pressing us on, the soul terribly dismayed by all these things, bitterly racked by conscious guilt, and piteously turning, now back to this life, now to the inevitable necessity of that long journey. Picture to yourself, I pray, the very end of human life, when the Son of God shall come in His glory with His angels. For He "shall come, and shall not keep silence," 4 when He comes to judge the living and the dead, and to dispense to

1 The Douay version reads, "done all these things," instead of "committed all these fornications," the Septuagint reading. Cf. Jer. 3. 7.
2 Jer. 8. 22.
4 Cf. Psal. 50. 3. ὁ θεὸς ἐμφανῶς ἔξει, ὁ θεὸς ἡμῶν, καὶ οὐ παρασιωτῆσται. "God shall come manifestly: our God shall come, and shall not keep silence."
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

κατὰ τὴν πρᾶξιν αὐτοῦ ὅταν ἡ σάλπιγξ ἐκείνη μέγα τι καὶ φοβηρὸν ἡχήσασα, τοὺς ἀπ' αἰῶνος ἐξυπνίση καθεύδοντας, καὶ ἐκπορευόσθοντας ὁ ἄγαθὰ ποιήσαντες εἰς ἀνάστασιν ξῳῆς, οἱ δὲ τὰ φαύλα πράξαντες εἰς ἀνάστασιν κρίσεως. μνήσιθε τῆς τοῦ Δανιὴλ θεοπτίας, ὅτε τὰ ἵψα ὑπ' ὁψίν ἑγεῖ τὴν κρίσιν. Ἐθεώρουν, φησίν, ἕως ὅτου θρόνοι ἐτέθησαν, καὶ παλαιὸς ἡμερῶν ἐκάθητο, καὶ τὸ ἐνδύμα αὐτοῦ λευκὸν ἔχων, καὶ ἡ θρίξ τῆς κεφαλῆς αὐτοῦ ὡς ἔριον καθαρον, οἱ τροχοὶ αὐτοῦ, πῦρ φλέγον. ποταμὸς πυρὸς εἴλκεν ἐμπροσθεν αὐτοῦ. χίλιαι χιλιάδες ἑλειτούργουν αὐτῷ, καὶ μύριαι μυριάδες παρειστήκεισαν αὐτῷ. κριτήριον ἐκάθισε, καὶ βίβλοι ἀνεφχθησαν, τὰ καλά, τὰ φαύλα, τὰ φανερὰ, τὰ κεκρυμμένα, τὰ πράγματα, τὰ ῥήματα, τὰ ἑνθυμήματα, τὰ πάντα ἅθρόως εἰς ἔξακουστὸν τοῖς πάσι καὶ ἀγγέλοις καὶ ἀνθρώποις σαφῶς ἀνακαλύπτουσαι. πρὸς ταῦτα ποταποὺς εἶναι ἀνάγκη τοὺς κακῶς βεβιωκότας; τοῦ ἄρα ἡ ψυχὴ ἐκείνη καταδύσεται, ἡ ἐν ὡψει τοσοῦτων θεατῶν ἐξαίφνης ὀφθείσα αἰσχύνης ἀνώπλεως; τοῖς δὲ σώματι τὰς ἀπεράντους ἐκείνας καὶ ἀνυποίστους ὑποστήσεται μάστιγας, ὅπου πῦρ ἀσβεστοῦ καὶ σκώλης ἀθάνατα κολάξων, καὶ πυθμὴν ἄδον σκοτεινὸς καὶ φρικώδης, καὶ οἰμογαῖ πικραὶ, καὶ ὀλολυγμὸς ἐξαίσιος, καὶ κλαυθμὸς καὶ βρυγμὸς ὀδόντων, καὶ πέρας οὐκ ἔχει τὰ

1 ἀναστήσονται Ε. 2 σοι add. E. 3 έθεώρουν, φησίν] ὅτι φησίν έθεώρουν E. 4 έκαθήσετο Α, Β, Ω, Ο. 5 Sic MSS. 6 Sic MSS. 7 τὰ πάντα om. Α, Β.
each according to his deed; when that trumpet, resounding with a loud and terrible call, shall awaken those who have been sleeping for ages. "And they that have done good things shall come forth unto the resurrection of life; but they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of judgment."  

Recall the divine vision of Daniel, how he brings the judgment before our eyes. He says: "I beheld till thrones were placed, and the Ancient of Days sat: his garment was white as snow, and the hair of his head like clean wool: . . . the wheels of it like a burning fire. A swift stream of fire issued forth from before him: thousands of thousands ministered to him, and ten thousand times ten thousand stood before him: the judgment was set, and the books were opened," revealing clearly so as to be known of all, both angels and men, all things at once, whether good or evil, open or concealed, our deeds, words, and thoughts. When they confront these things, how must those feel who have lived wickedly? Where, pray, will that soul hide itself which is suddenly exposed, filled with shame, to the eyes of so many spectators? What strength will it have to endure those endless and intolerable scourgings in the regions where is the fire unquenched, the worm that administers everlasting punishment, the dark and horrible abyss of Hades, the bitter moans, the violent lamentation, the wailing and gnashing of teeth, and the horrors without end? From these

1 John 5. 29.  
2 Dan. 7. 9-10.  

8 φανερῶς E.  
9 κλαθμὸς E.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

deiα; τούτων οὐκ ἐστιν ἀπαλλαγη μετὰ θάνατον, οὐδὲ τις ἐπίνοια, οὐδὲ μηχανη τοῦ διεκδύναι 1 τὰ πικρὰ κολαστηρία.

Ταύτα φεύγειν έξεστιν υἱ. ἔως έξεστιν, εαυτοὺς ἀπὸ τοῦ πτώματος ἀναλάβωμεν, μηδε ἀπελπίσωμεν εαυτῶν, 2 ἐὰν ἀναλύσωμεν ἀπὸ τῶν κακῶν. Ἡσυχὸς Ἑρωδίας ἦλθεν εἰς τὸν κόσμον ἀμαρτώλους σώσαι. ἐδεῦτε, προσκυνήσωμεν καὶ προσπέσωμεν αὐτῷ, 3 καὶ κλαύσωμεν ἐναντίον αὐτοῦ. ἦμαις ἐπὶ μετάνοιαι καλῶν ὁ Λόγος βοᾷ καὶ κέκραγε. Δεῦτε πρὸς με πάντες οἱ κοπιῶντες καὶ πειράταισε νοι, κἀγὼ ἀναπαύσω ὑμᾶς. 4 ἐστιν οὖν 5 ὅδος σωτηρίας, εὰν θέλωμεν. κατέπιεν ὁ θάνατος ἰσχύσας, ἀλλ' εὖ ἵσθι ὅτι πάλιν ἀφείλεν ὁ Θεὸς πᾶν δάκρυν ἀπὸ παντὸς προσώπων τῶν μετανοοῦντων. Πιστὸς Κύριος ἐν πάσι τοῖς λόγοις αὐτοῦ. οὐ κευδεται εἰπών. 'Εὰν ὅσιν αἱ ἀμαρτίαι ὑμῶν ὡς φοινικοῦν, ὡς χιόνα λευκανῷ. εὰν δὲ ὅσιν ὡς κόκκινων, ὡςεὶ ἔριον λευκανῷ. ἐτοιμός ἐστιν ὁ μέγας τῶν ψυχῶν ἰατρός ἱάσασθαι σου τὸ πάθος, ὅσοι οὐδὲ μονωτάτης, ἀλλὰ πάντων τῶν δεδουλωμένων τῇ ἀμαρτίᾳ ἐστὶν ἐτοιμος ἐλευθερωθής. 6 ἐκείνου ῥήματα ἐστιν, ἐκεῖνο τὸ γλυκύ καὶ σωτηρίου στόμα εἶπεν. Οὐ χρείαν ἔχουσιν οἱ ἰσχύστεις ἱατροῦ, ἀλλὰ οἱ κακῶς ἔχοντες. οὐκ ἦλθον καλέσαι δικαιούς, ἀλλὰ ἀμαρτώλους εἰς μετάνοιαι. τῆς οὖν ἐστὶ

1 ἐκδύναι C. 2 εαυτοὺς E. 3 αὐτῷ om. C, D.
4 Δεῦτε πρὸς με ... ἀναπαύσω υμᾶς om. A, B, C, D, E.
5 οὖν om. MSS.
6 ὁς οὖν ... ἐτοιμος ἐλευθερωθής om. A, B, C, D, E.

1 Cf. Psal. 95. 6. Basil says "'Him" instead of "the Lord that made us," the actual reading of the Scriptures.

306
woes there is no release after death, nor any device or means of escaping these bitter punishments.

But now it is possible for us to avoid them. While it is still possible, let us raise ourselves from the fall, and not despair of ourselves, if only we become free from sin. Jesus Christ came into the world to save sinners. "Come, let us adore and fall down and weep before Him." 1 The Word calls us to repentance, crying aloud: "Come to me, all you that labour and are burdened, and I will refresh you." 2 There is, then, a way to salvation, if we will. Death in his might swallows us up; but rest assured that God hath again wiped away tears from the face of every penitent. 3 "The Lord is faithful in all His words." 4 He does not lie when He says: "If your sins be as scarlet, they shall be made as white as snow: and if they be red as crimson, they shall be white as wool." 5 The great Physician of souls is ready to cure your ill; for He is the ready liberator, not of you alone, but of all who have been enslaved by sin. His are the words, His sweet and saving lips have said: "They that are in health need not a physician, but they that are ill. I am not come to call the just, but sinners to repentance." 6 What excuse have you or anyone else,

2 Matt. 11. 28.
3 Cf. Isa. 25. 8. κατέπιεν ὁ θάνατος ἰσχύσας, καὶ πάλιν ἄφειλεν Κύριος ὁ θεὸς πάν ἐάκρυον ἀπὸ παντίσ προσώπου τοῦ ὑνείδος τοῦ λαοῦ ἄφειλεν ἀπὸ πάσης τῆς γῆς, τὸ γὰρ στόμα Κυρίου ἐλάλησεν. Here again the Douay version does not follow the text as we have it. "He shall cast death down headlong for ever; and the Lord God shall wipe away tears from every face, and the reproach of His people He shall take away from off the whole earth: for the Lord hath spoken it."
4 Psal. 145. 17. 5 Isa. 1. 18. 6 Matt. 9. 12-13.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

σοι πρόφασις, ή τινι ἄλλῳ, ταῦτα αὐτοῦ βοῶντος 1; βούλεται Κύριος καθαρίσαι σε ἀπὸ τοῦ πόνου τῆς πλήγης, καὶ δείξαι σοι φῶς ἀπὸ σκότους. σὲ ζητεῖ ὁ ποιμὴν ὁ καλὸς, ὁ καταλιπὼν τὰ μὴ πεπλανημένα. εάν ἐπιδόῃς σεαυτήν, οὐκ ὄκνησε, οὐδ' ἀπαξιώσει σε ὁ φιλάνθρωπος ἐπὶ τῶν ὦμων βαστάσαι 2 τῶν ἱδίων, χαίρων ὅτι εὑρεν αὐτὸν τὸ πρόβατον τὸ ἀπολωλός.

'Εστηκεν ὁ Πατήρ καὶ ἀναμένει τὴν σήν ἀπὸ τῆς πλάνης ἐπάνωδον. μόνον ἀνάλυσον, καὶ ἔτι σου μακρὰν ούσις προσδραμὼν ἐπιπεσεῖται ἐπὶ τῶν τράχηλον σου, 3 καὶ φιλικοὶ ἀσπασμοῖς περιπτύ-ξεται τὴν ὑπὸ τῆς μετανοίας ἕδη κεκαθαρμένην. καὶ στολὴν ἐνδύσει, τὴν πρόστην, ψυχὴν ἀπεκδυ-σαμένην τὸν πάλαιον ἄνθρωπον σὺν ταῖς αὐτοῦ πράξεσιν καὶ περιθήσει δακτύλιον χερσίν ἀπο-πλυναμέναις τοῦ 4 θανάτου τὸ αἷμα, καὶ ὑποδήσει πόδας ἀποστρέψαντας 5 ἀπὸ ὄδοι κακῆς πρὸς τὸν δρόμον τοῦ εὑραγιλίου τῆς εἰρήνης. καὶ εὐφροσύνης καὶ χαρᾶς ἡμέραν 6 καταγγελεῖ τοῖς ἱδίοις καὶ ἀγγέλοις καὶ ἄνθρωποις, καὶ παντὶ τρόπῳ τὴν σήν ἐφορτάσει σωτηρίαν. Ἄμην γὰρ λέγω, φησίν, ύμῖν, ὅτι χαρὰ γίνεται ἐν οὐρανῷ ἐνώπιον τοῦ Θεοῦ ἐπὶ ἐνὶ ἄμαρτωλῷ 7 μετανοοῦντι. κἂν ἐγκαλέσῃ τις τῶν ἐστάναι δοκοῦντων, ὥτι ταχὺ προσελήφθης, αὐτὸς ὁ ἀγαθὸς Πατήρ 8 ὑπὲρ

1 τὸς οὖν . . . αὐτοῦ βοῶντος; om. C, D, E.
2 βαστάσαι A, B. 3 σον om. A, B. 4 τὸ E.
3 ὑποστρέψαντας C, D. 5 ἡμέρας D.
6 ἀνθρώπῳ E. 7 ἄγαθος B.

1 Cf. Luke 15. 7. The exact quotation is: λέγω ὑμῖν, ὅτι οὕτω χαρὰ ἐσται ἐν τῷ οὐρανῷ ἐπὶ ἐνὶ ἄμαρτωλῷ μετανοοῦντι,
LETTER XLVI

when He Himself utters these words? The Lord wishes to purge you of the pain of the wound, and to show you the light after darkness. The good Shepherd, who has left those which have not strayed, seeks you. If you give yourself over to Him, He will not delay, nor in His kindness will He disdain to carry you on His own shoulders, rejoicing that He has found His sheep which was lost.

The Father stands awaiting your return from your wandering. Only come back, and while you are still afar off, He will run and throw Himself upon your neck; in embraces of love He will enfold you, already purified by your repentance. He will first put a robe upon you, a soul which has put off the old man and all his works; He will place a ring on the hands which have been cleansed of the blood of death; and He will bind sandals to the feet which have turned away from the road of evil to the path of the Gospel of peace. And He will proclaim a day of happiness and joy for His own, both angels and men, and in every way will celebrate your salvation. For He says, "Amen I say to you, that there is joy in heaven before God upon one sinner that doth penance." And if some one of those who think they stand finds fault because you have been quickly received, the good Father Himself

\[ \text{ Cf. Luke 15. 32. The exact quotation is: } \varepsilon\upsilon\varphi\varphi\alpha\nu\vartheta\nu\varepsilon \; \delta \; \kappa\alpha\iota \chi\alpha\rho\iota\mu\iota \varepsilon \; \delta \; \vartheta \varepsilon\upsilon\zeta\varepsilon\gamma\iota\varsigma\varsigma \; \sigma\alpha\nu \; \alpha\upsilon\tau\omicron\varsigma \nu \varsigma \; \nu\kappa\omicron\varsigma \; \varsigma \nu \varsigma \; \kappa\alpha\iota \varsigma \alpha\omicron \nu \kappa\omicron \omicron \varsigma \; \kappa\alpha\iota \varsigma \nu \varsigma \; \text{"But it was fit that we should make merry and be glad, for this thy brother was dead and is come to life again; he was lost, and is found."} \]
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

σοῦ ἀπολογήσεται λέγων, Εὐφρανθήναι δει καὶ χαρῆναι, ὅτι αὐτὴ ἡ θυγάτηρ μου νεκρὰ ἦν καὶ ἀνέξησε, καὶ ἀπολολύνει καὶ εὑρέθη.

XLVII

Γρηγορίῳ ἑταίρῳ

Τῆς δώσει μοι πέρυμας ὡσεὶ περιστερᾶς, ἡ πῶς ἀνακαινισθῇ μου τὸ γῆρας, ὡστε με δυνηθῆναι διαβῆναι πρὸς τὴν ὑμετέραν ἁγάπην, καὶ τὸν τε πόθον ὃν ἔχω ἐφ᾿ ὑμῖν ἀναπαύσαι καὶ τὰ λυπηρὰ τῆς ψυχῆς διηγήσασθαι, καὶ δι᾿ ὑμῶν εὑρέσθαι τινὰ παραμυθίαν τῶν θλίψεων; ἐπὶ γὰρ τῇ κοιμῆσει τοῦ μακαρίου Εὐσεβίου τοῦ ἐπισκόπου φόβος ἡμᾶς κατέλαβεν ὦ μικρός, µὴ ποτε οὐ ποτε ἐφεδρεύοντες τῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ τῆς μητροπόλεως ἡμῶν καὶ Βουλόμενοι αὐτὴν αἱρετικῶν ἐξαιρῶν πληρῶ-

1 Γρηγορίῳ ἑταίρῳ περὶ τῆς κοιμήσεως Εὐσεβίου τοῦ ἐπισκόπου· καὶ ὅτι ἔχει πρὸ ὀφθαλμῶν τὸν εἰς τὴν ἐπισκοπὴν ἐπιτήδειον Ε, etiam in Codicibus Vat. et Med.

1 Written in the summer of 370. Letters XLVII to CCXCI inclusive form the second main division of Basil's letters according to the Benedictine arrangement, i.e. those written during his episcopate. This letter is written, not by Basil, but about Basil. According to the Benedictine editors (cf. also Tillemont, Note 32), the elder Gregory is here writing through his son to Eusebius of Samosata.

In 370 Eusebius, Archbishop of Caesarea, died, and Basil, who had really filled the archiepiscopacy for some years, was of all possible competitors for the vacant see the ablest. Basil himself was very eager for it, and, desiring the active
LETTER XLVII

will speak in your defence, saying, "It was fit that we should make merry and be glad, for this My daughter was dead, and is come to life again; she was lost, and is found."

LETTER XLVII

To friend Gregory

"Who will give me wings like a dove," or how can my old age be renewed, that I may have the strength to go to your affection, and both relieve the longing I have for you and recount the sorrows that grieve my soul, and thus through you find a solace for my afflictions? For when our blessed bishop Eusebius fell asleep, we were seized with no little fear lest the enemies that hitherto have lain in wait for the church of our metropolis, and have desired to fill it with the tares of heresy, may support of the younger Gregory, his friend, summoned him to Caesarea on the plea of his own severe illness. The younger Gregory questioned Basil's motives in the whole affair, and refused to go. Cf. Letter LX (XXI) of Gregory Nazianzenus. Cf. also Introd. p. xxx. Had it not been for the prompt and practical intervention of Gregory the elder, and the appeal of this letter to Eusebius of Samosata, the archbishopric might have fallen into unworthy or inferior hands.

This letter appears as Number 42 in the letters of Gregory of Nazianzus.

2 Psal. 55. 6.

3 On the death of Dianius in 362, this Eusebius had been elected bishop of Caesarea, also through the counsels and influence of the elder Gregory. It was Eusebius who ordained Basil to the presbyterate, and at first chafed because of the activity and success of his more able subordinate.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

σαι, καιροῦ νῦν 1 λαβόμενοι, τὴν πολλὴ καμάτων κατασπαρείσαν ἐν ταῖς ψυχαῖς τῶν ἀνθρώπων εὐσέβειαν ταῖς παρ᾽ ἐαυτῶν ποιηραίς διδασκαλίαις ἐκρίζωσωσι, καὶ ταύτης τὴν ἐνότητα κατατέμωσιν, ὁπέρ καὶ ἐπὶ πολλῶν ἐκκλησίων πεποιήκασιν. ἔπειδὴ δὲ καὶ γράμματα πρῶς ἴματε ἀφίκετο τοῦ κλήρου, παρακαλοῦντα μὴ παροφθήναι ἐν καιρῷ τοιοῦτῳ, περιβλεψάμενος ἐν κύκλῳ ἐμνήσθην τῆς ὑμετέρας ἀγάπης, καὶ τῆς ὀρθῆς πίστεως, καὶ τοῦ ξήλου ὅν ἔχετε ἢ μὴ ὑπὲρ τῶν ἐκκλησίων τοῦ Θεοῦ. 

Καὶ τούτου ἐνεκεν ἀπέστειλα τὸν ἀγαπητὸν Ἐυστάθιον τὸν συνιδακόνον, παρακαλέσαι ὑμῶν τὴν σεμινοπρέπειαν καὶ δυσωπήσαι πᾶσι τοῖς ὑπὲρ τῶν ἐκκλησίων καμάτως καὶ τὸν παρόντα ἐπιθεῖναι, κἀμοῦ τε τὸ γῆρας τῇ συντυχίᾳ ἀναπαῦσαι, καὶ τῇ ὀρθῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ τὴν περιβοῦσαν εὐσέβειαν διορθώσασθαι, δόντας αὐτῇ μεθ᾽ ἴμων (εἰ ἄρα καταξιωθεῖμεν συναντιλαβέσθαι ὑμῖν τοῦ ἀγαθοῦ ἔργου) ποιμένα κατὰ τὸ βούλημα τοῦ Κυρίου, δυνάμενον διευθύναι τὸν λαὸν αὐτοῦ. ἔχομεν γὰρ πρὸ ὀφθαλμῶν ἄνδρα ὃν οὐδὲ αὐτοὶ ἀγνοεῖτε· οὗ εἰ καταξιωθεῖμεν ἐπιτυχεῖν, οἶδα ὅτι μεγάλην παράρρησιαν πρὸς τὸν Θεὸν κτησόμεθα, καὶ τῷ ἐπικαλεσαμένῳ ἦμᾶς λαῷ μεγίστην ἐνεργείαν καταθησόμεθα. ἀλλὰ παρακαλῶ καὶ πάλιν καὶ πολλάκις, πάντα ὄκνον ὑπερθεμένους ἀπαντήσαι καὶ προλαβεῖν τὰ ἐκ τοῦ χειμῶνος δυσχερὴν.

1 νῦν om. A, B.
seize the present opportunity, and by their wicked doctrines may uproot the true faith which has been implanted with much labour in the souls of men, and destroy our present unity, as they have done in many a church. And when we receive letters from the clergy, urging us not to overlook them in such a crisis, as I looked about me on all sides, I remembered your love, your true faith, and the zeal which you have always had for the churches of God.

Therefore I have despatched my beloved fellow-deacon Eustathius¹ to beg and importune your reverence to add this new labour to all your past endeavours in behalf of the churches, and not only to refresh my old age by your presence, but also to restore the heralded piety of the true church, by aiding us—if indeed we are accounted worthy to participate with you in the good work—to give our church a pastor according to the Lord's wish, one able to direct his people. For we have in mind a man whom you also know well; and if we are thought worthy to obtain him, I am sure that we shall acquire great courage before God, and shall lay up the greatest store of benefit with the people who have invoked our aid. Nay, I beg you once again, and many times, to cast aside all reluctance and visit me, and to forestall the hardships of winter.

¹ Basil had a deacon Eustathius (cf. Letter CXXXVI); but this proves little for the authenticity of this letter, because Eustathius was a very common name. Furthermore, a monk Eustathius is mentioned in the will of Gregory of Nazianzus.
XLVIII

Εὐσεβίῳ ἐπισκόπῳ Σαμοσάτων ¹

Μόλις ἦμιν ὑπῆρξεν ἐπιτυχεῖν διακόνου γραμμάτων πρὸς τὴν σὴν θεοσέβειαν, ἐπεὶ οἱ γε παρ᾽ ἦμιν οὔτω κατέπτηξαν ² τὸν χειμώνα, ὡς μηδὲ τὸ μικρότατον ³ προκύπτειν τῶν δωμάτων ⁴ ἀνέχεσθαι. καὶ γὰρ τοσοῦτο πλήθει χιόνων κατενίφημεν, ὡς αὐτὸς οἶκος καταχωσθὲντας ⁵ δύο μῆνας ἦδη ταῖς καταδύσεσιν ἐμφωλεύειν. συγγυώσῃ οὖν πάντως ἦμιν, τὸ τε ἄτολμον τῶν Καππαδοκικῶν ἠθῶν ⁶ καὶ τὸ τῶν σωμάτων δυσκύνητον ἐπιστάμενον, εἰ μὴ θάττον ἐπεστείλαμεν, μηδὲ εἰς ἤνωσιν ἡγάγομεν τῇ τιμίωτητί σου τὰ ἀπὸ τῆς Ἀντιοχείας, ἃ πάντως μὲν γνωρίζειν σοι ἐξωλόν ἑστὶ καὶ ψυχρῶν, πάλαι μεμαθηκότι, ὡς τὸ εἰκός. πλὴν ἀλλ᾽ οὔδεν ἡγούμενοι πράγμα καὶ τὰ ἐγνωσμένα σημαίνειν, ἀπεστείλαμεν τὰς διὰ τοῦ ἀναγνώστου κομισθείσας ἐπιστολάς. καὶ ταῦτα μὲν εἰς τοσοῦτον.

'Ἡ δὲ Κωνσταντινούπολις ⁷ ἔχει τῶν Δημόφιλον πολὺν ἦδη χρόνον, ⁸ ὡς καὶ αὐτὸς οὔτω ἀπαγγελοῦσι ⁹ καὶ προκεκηρυκταὶ πάντως τῇ ὀσιώτητι

¹ Εὐσεβίῳ ἐπισκόπῳ Ε, F; τῷ αὐτῷ περὶ Δημοφίλου Α, B; τῷ αὐτῷ ἀπολογία διὰ τὸ βαρὺ τοῦ χειμῶνος καὶ περὶ Δημοφίλου ἐπισκόπου μετανοεῖν φημιζομένου C, D.
² κατέστησαν C.
³ σμικρότατον C, D, E, F.
⁴ δωμάτων E.
⁵ καταχωσθὲνται A, B, C, D; καταχωσθέντο (σ fr. as rasura) F.
⁶ Καππαδοκίαν ἠθος C, D.
⁷ Ἱδὲ Κωνσταντινούπολις Kωνσταντινούπολις δὲ C, D.
⁸ πολὺν ἦδη χρόνον] πολὺς ἦδη χρόνος C, D.
LETTER XLVIII

LETTER XLVIII

To Eusebius, Bishop of Samosata

We have had great difficulty in obtaining a carrier for our letter to your reverence, because in our land people so shudder at the winter that they cannot bring themselves even to put their heads out of their chambers for a moment. Indeed, we have been overwhelmed with such a mass of snow, that for two months now we have been lurking in our burrows, buried with our very houses. So, being yourself aware of the characteristic timidity and immobility of the Cappadocians, you will surely forgive us for not writing sooner and bringing the affairs of Antioch to the attention of your excellency. To be sure, these things are too "stale and cold" to be made known to you now, since you probably have long since been informed of them. However, since we do not count it a task to tell you even of things you know, we have sent you the letters in the care of our reader. But enough on this subject.

Constantinople has had Demophilus now for some time, as they themselves will also report to you, and as your holiness has surely been notified already.

1 Written in the spring of 371; cf. Loofs and Schäfer, II. c. Cf. Letters XXXI, XXXIV.

2 The Cappadocians were notorious for their bad character. Together with the Cretans and Cilicians, they were accounted the πρα κάππα κάκιστα, "three worst kappas."

3 Dem. Meid. 112.

4 Demophilus was elected bishop in 370, to fill the see left vacant by the death of Eudoxius.

9 ἀπαγγέλλωσι F.
Collected Letters of Saint Basil

σου. καὶ τι περὶ αὐτοῦ πλάσμα ὀρθότητος καὶ εὐλαβείας παρὰ πάντων συμφώνως τῶν ἀφικνουμένων θρυλλεῖται,1 ώς καὶ τὰ διεστῶτα τῆς πόλεως μέρη εἰς ταύτον συνελθεῖν, καὶ τῶν πλησιοχώρων τινάς ἐπισκόπων τὴν ἐνῶσιν καταδέχασθαι. οἱ δὲ ἡμετεροὶ οὕδεν ἥμεινοις ἐφάνησαν τῶν ἐλπίδων· ἐπιστάντες γὰρ εὐθὺς κατὰ πόδας τῆς ἡμετέρας 2 ἔξοδον, πολλὰ μὲν εἴπον 3 λυπηρά, πολλὰ δὲ ἐποίησαν, καὶ τέλος ἀνεχώρησαν, Βεβαιώσαντες ἥμιν τὸ σχίσμα. 4 εἰ μὲν οὖν 5 τι γενήσεται βέλτιον, καὶ εἰ παύσονται τῆς κακίας, ἀδηλον παντὶ πλὴν ἢ τῷ Θεῷ. τὰ μὲν οὖν παρόντα τοιαῦτα.

Ἡ δὲ λοιπῆ ἐκκλησία εὐσταθεῖ τῇ τοῦ Θεοῦ χάριτι, καὶ εὐχέται ὁμοῦ τῷ ἢρι ίδειν σε πάλιν ἐπὶ τῆς ἡμετέρας, καὶ ἀνανεώθηναι διὰ τῆς ἁγαθῆς σου διδασκαλίας. κάμος δὲ τὸ σῶμα οὕδεν ἥμεινοι τῆς συνηθείας ἔχει.

XLIX

Ἀρκαδίῳ ἐπισκόπῳ

Ηὐχαρίστησα τῷ ἀγίῳ Θεῷ, γράμμασιν ἐντυχὼν τῆς 6 εὐλαβείας ὑμῶν, καὶ εὐχόμαι αὐτόστι τῇ ἐλπίδος, ἢν ἔχετε ἐφ’ ἡμῖν, ἀξίως εἶναι, καὶ ὑμᾶς 7 τοὺ ἐπὶ τῇ τιμῆ ἡμῶν, ἢν ἐπὶ τῷ ὄνοματι

1 θρυλλεῖται A, B, E, F. 2 ἡμετέρας Ε. 3 εἶπαν F. 4 σχίσμα Ε. 5 οὖν om. C, D. 6 τῆς C, D, E; τὴν edd. 7 ἡμᾶς C.

316
LETTER XLIX

A certain simulation of orthodoxy and piety on his part is uniformly noised abroad by all who come from there. The result is that even the parts of the city that had been divided by schism have come together, and even some of the neighbouring bishops have accepted the union. And our own people have proved themselves no better than our expectation; for, visiting us immediately after your departure, they said and did much that was grievous, and finally withdrew, affirming to me their schism.¹ Now whether the situation will become better and they will put an end to their wickedness "is clear to none but God."² So much, then, regarding our present circumstances. The rest of the church by God's grace stands firm, and prays that we may see you again in my diocese with the arrival of spring, and that we may be renewed by your sound teaching. As for myself, I enjoy no better health than usual.

LETTER XLIX

To Bishop Arcadius³

After I had read the letter of your reverence, I gave thanks to holy God, and I pray that I may be worthy of the hope which you place in me, and that you may obtain full recompense for the honour

¹ Letters XCVIII, CXLI, and CCLXXXII also tell of the troubles set in Basil's path after he became bishop.
² Part of a senarius line, but its source is unknown.
³ Written at the beginning of Basil's episcopate. Basil thanks Arcadius for special confidence which he has placed in him, and promises Arcadius relics for his new church, if any can be found.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

tou Κυρίου Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ τιμᾶτε ἡμᾶς, μισθὸν τέλειον κομίσασθαι. ὑπερήψθημεν δέ, ὅτι καὶ μέριμναν πρέπουσαν Χριστιανοῦ ἀναλαβόντες, εἰς δόξαν τοῦ ὄνόματος τοῦ Χριστοῦ οἶκον ἡγείρατε, καὶ ἡγαπήσατε τῷ ὀντί, κατὰ τὸ γεγραμμένου, Ἠὐπρέπειαν οἶκον Κυρίου, εὐπρεπίσαντες έαυτοίς τὴν ὀυράνιον μονὴν τὴν ἵτοιμασμένην ἐν τῇ ἀναπαύσει τοῖς ἀγαπῶσι τὸ ὄνομα τοῦ Χριστοῦ. εἰν δὲ δυνηθῶμεν περινοῆσαι λείψανα μαρτύρων, εὐχόμεθα καὶ αὐτοὶ συμβαλέσθαι ὑμῶν τῇ σπουδῇ, εἰ γὰρ εἰς μνημόσυνον αἰώνιον ἔσται δίκαιος, κοινοί καὶ ἐσώμεθα, δηλονότε, τῇ ἀγαθῇ μνήμης τῆς δοθησομένης υμῶν παρὰ τοῦ ἀγίου.

L

'Iνοκεντίῳ ἐπισκόπῳ 1

Καὶ τίνι ἄλλῳ ἔπρεπε καὶ δειλοῖς θάρσος ἐμποιεῖν καὶ καθεύδοντας διυπνίζειν ἢ τῇ σῇ τοῦ ἡμετέρου Δεσπότου θεοσεβεία, ὅς τὴν ἐν πάσι σεαυτῷ τελείότητα καὶ ἐν τούτῳ ἐγνώρισας, τῷ καταδέξασθαι καὶ ἡμῖν τοῖς ταπεινοῖς συγκαταβηναί, ὡς ἀληθινὸς μαθητὴς τοῦ εἰπόντος ὧτι Ἐκεῖ εἰμὶ ἐν μέσῳ υμῶν, οὐχ ὡς ὁ ἀνακελμένος, ἄλλ' ὅς ὁ διακονῶν; κατηξίωσας γὰρ καὶ αὐτῶς διακονήσαι ἡμῖν τὴν σὴν πνευματικὴν εὐφροσύνην, καὶ τοῖς τιμίοις έαυτοῦ γράμμασιν ἀναλαβεῖν

1 ινοκεντίῳ ἐπισκόπῳ Ράμης C, D, E.

1 Psal. 26. 8. 2 Psal. 112. 6.
LETTER L

which you pay us in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ. We were very much pleased to hear that you, assuming a charge befitting a Christian, had raised a house to the glory of the name of Christ, and truly loved, as it is written, “the beauty of the house of the Lord.”¹ preparing for yourself that heavenly mansion which is provided in His peace for those who love the name of Christ. If we can discover any relics of martyrs, we beg leave to join you in your endeavour. For if “the just shall be had in everlasting remembrance,”² we shall certainly share in the blessed memory which will accrue to you from the saint.

LETTER L

To Bishop Innocentius³

Whom would it better befit to instil courage into cowards and to arouse the sleeping than you, our godly lord, who have shown your perfect excellence in this also, that you have consented to come down to lowly men like us, as a true disciple of Him who said, “I am in the midst of you,” not as he that sits at table, but “as he that serveth”?⁴ For you have deigned yourself to serve us a portion of your spiritual joy, to refresh our souls by your precious

³ Written at the beginning of the episcopate. The identity of this bishop is uncertain. The common addition to the title of “of Rome” is an error, since Damasus, not Innocent, was Bishop of Rome at this time. J. Wittig (Studien zur Geschichte des Papstes Innocenz I und der Papstwahlen des 5 Jahrhunderts: Theol. Quartalschrift 84, 1902, 388-439), says that this letter belongs to St. John Chrysostom, and is addressed to Pope Innocent I.

⁴ Luke 22. 27.
The identity of this bishop is unknown.
LETTER LI

letter, and to embrace us, like infant children, with your own greatness.

Therefore pray—we beg your good soul—that we may be worthy both to receive the assistance proffered by your strength, and to obtain lips and wisdom to dare make answer to you, who are guided by the Holy Spirit; and hearing that you are His friend and true glorifier, we confess a deep gratification for your firm and unwavering love of God. Praying that our lot may be found among the true worshippers, where we are persuaded your Excellency also is, as well as with that great and true bishop who has filled the whole world with admiration for himself, we offer our petitions to the Lord.

LETTER LI

To Bishop Bosporius

Can you not imagine how my soul was pained on hearing of the calumny heaped upon me by certain ones who have no fear of the Judge who will "destroy all that speak a lie"? During almost the entire night, after receiving your words of love, I lay sleepless; so did grief take hold of my

2 Written at the beginning of the episcopacy (about 370). Bosporius was Bishop of Colonia in Cappadocia Secunda, and a close friend of Basil and Gregory Nazianzenus. The occasion of this letter was a slanderous report that Basil had anathematized Dianius, a friend and bishop, who had subscribed to the creed of Ariminum.

3 Psal. 5. 6.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

tῆς καρδιᾶς ἡ λύπη. ὁντως γὰρ, κατὰ τὸν Σολομόντα, Συνοφαντία ἀνδρὰ ταπεινοῦ· καὶ οὐδείς οὗτος ἀνάλγητος, ὡς μὴ παθεῖν τὴν ψυχὴν καὶ κατακαμφθῆναι εἰς γῆν, στόμασιν πρὸς ¹ ψευδολογίαν εὐκόλοις παραπεσών. ² ἀλλὰ γὰρ ἀνάγκη πάντα στέγειν, πάντα ὑπομένειν, τὴν ὑπὲρ ἑαυτῶν ἐκδίκησιν ἐπιτρέψαντες ³ τῷ Κυρίῳ, ὡς οὐ περιώθεται ⁴ ἡμᾶς· διὸτι ὁ συνοφαντῶν πένητα παροξύνει τὸν ποιήσαντα αὐτόν. οἱ μέντοι τὸ καίνον τοῦτο δράμα τῆς καθ᾽ ἡμῶν βλασφημίας συνθέαντες ἔδικασιν παυτελῶς ἀπίστειν τῷ Κυρίῳ, ὡς καὶ περὶ ἄργον ρήματος δώσειν ἡμᾶς λόγον ἐν τῇ ἡμέρα τῆς κρίσεως ἀπεφήματο.

Ἐγὼ δὲ, εἰπὲ μοι, τὸν μακαριώτατον Διάνιον ἀνεθεμάτισα· τὸν γὰρ ἡμῶν κατήγγειλαν. ⁵ ποῦ ἡ πότε; τίνων παρόντων; ἐπὶ ποιὰ προφάσει; ⁶ ψεύδοις ρήμασιν ἡ ἐγγράφοις; ἐτέροις ἀκολουθῶν, ἡ αὐτὸς κατάρχων καὶ αὐθεντῶν τοῦ τολμήματος; ὁ τῆς ἀναιδείας τῶν πάντα φθεγγομένων ῥαδῶς; ὁ τῆς καταφρονήσεως τῶν τοῦ Ἐθεὼν κριμάτων; πλὴν εἰ μὴ ἄρα τῷ πλάσματι αὐτῶν ⁷ καὶ τοῦτο προστραγῳδήσουσιν, ⁸ ὅτι ἐγενόμην καὶ ἐκφρῶν ποτὲ, ὡςτε ἀγνοεῖν αὐτὸς τὰ ἑαυτῷ ρήματα. ἐπὶ γὰρ τῶν λογισμῶν ὑπάρχων τῶν ἐμαυτοῦ, οὐδέν οἶδα ποιήσας τοιούτων, οὐδὲ προελόμενος τὴν ἀρχήν. ἀλλ᾽ ἐκεῖνο μᾶλλον

1 eis A, C, D. 2 περιπεσών C, D. 3 ἐπιτρέψαντας A; ἐπιρέψαντας C, D, E; ἐπιτρέψαντας fr. ἐπιρέψαντας F. 4 οὐ περιώθεται ... ἀπίστειν τῷ Κυρίῳ om. C, D. 5 κατήγγεικαν C, D. 6 ποιά προφάσει fr. ποιας προφάσεως alia m. F. 7 ἑαυτῶν E, F. 8 προστραγῳδήσωσις A.
innermost heart. For in truth, as Solomon\(^1\) says, "Calumny humbleth a man," and no one is so insensible to pain that his soul is not bowed down to the earth with suffering, when he falls in with lips that are prone to falsehood. But I must be proof against all things, endure all things, committing my vindication to the Lord, who will not overlook us; for "He that oppresseth the poor, upbraideth his Maker." \(^2\) They, however, who fabricated this new tale of blasphemy against me seem to disbelieve entirely in the Lord, who declared \(^3\) that we must give an account on the day of judgment even for our idle speech.

Tell me, did I anathematize the most blessed Dianius? For this is the charge they made against us. Where or when? In whose presence? On what pretext? Was it in bare words or in writing? Was I merely quoting others, or myself originating and directing the bold deed? Oh, the shamelessness of those who are ever ready to say anything! Oh, the disdain for God's judgments! Unless indeed they add to their fabrications this clap-trap also, that I was once so out of mind that I did not know what I said. For while in my right senses, I am sure that I did nothing of the kind, or even had such an intention in the first place. On

\(^1\) Cf. Eccles. 7. 7. ὅτι ἡ συκοφαντία περιφέρει σοφῶν καὶ ἀπόλλυσι τὴν καρδίαν εὐγενείας αὐτοῦ. "Oppression troubleth the wise, and shall destroy the strength of his heart."

\(^2\) Prov. 14. 31.

\(^3\) Cf. Matt. 12. 36. λέγω δὲ ὑμῖν, ὅτι πῶν ῥῆμα ἄργον, ὃ ἐὰν λαλήσωσιν οἱ ἀνθρώποι, ἀποδώσουσι περὶ αὐτοῦ λόγων ἐν ἡμέρᾳ κρίσεως. "But I say unto you, that every idle word that men shall speak, they shall render an account for it in the day of judgment."
ἐμαυτῷ συνεπίσταμαι, ὅτι ἐκ πρώτης ἠλικίας συνετράφην τῷ περὶ αὐτὸν φίλτρῳ, καὶ ἀπεβλεπόν πρὸς τὸν ἄνδρα ὡς μὲν γεραρδὸς ἰδεῖν, ὡς δὲ μεγαλοπρεπῆς, ὥσον δὲ ἔχων τὸ ἀεροπρεπὲς ἐν τῷ εἰδεί. ἐπεὶ δὲ μοι λοιπὸν καὶ ὁ λόγος παρῆν, τότε δὴ καὶ ἀπὸ τῶν τῆς ψυχῆς ἀγαθῶν αὐτῶν ἐπεγίνωσκον καὶ ἔχαιρον αὐτοῦ τῇ συνουσίᾳ, τὸ ἀπλοῦν καὶ γενναῖον καὶ ἐλευθέριον τῶν τρόπων καταμανθάνων, καὶ ὁσα ἀλλὰ τοῦ ἄνδρος ἰδια, ἡ τῆς ψυχῆς ἠμερότης, τὸ μεγαλοφνεῖς τε ὁμοῦ καὶ πράον, τὸ ἐυπρεπὲς, τὸ ἀόργητον, τὸ φαιδρὸν καὶ ἐυπρόσιτον τῇ σεμνότητι κεκραμένον. ὡστε αὐτὸν ἐναρίθμιον εἶχον τοὺς περιφανεστάτους κατ' ἀρετὴν.

Περὶ 4 μέντοι τὰ τελευταῖα τοῦ βίου (οὐ γὰρ ἀποκρύψομαι τάληθες) ἐλυπήθην 5 ἐπ' αὐτῷ λύπην οὖκ ἀνεκτὴν μετὰ πολλῶν τῶν ἐν τῇ πατρίδι φοβουμένων τὸν Κύριον, ἐπὶ τῇ ὑπογραφῆ τῆς πίστεως τής ὑπὸ τῶν περὶ Γεώργιον 6 ἀπὸ τῆς Κωνσταντινουπόλεως κομισθείσης. εἰτα, οἶος ἐκείνος πραότητι τρόπου καὶ ἐπιεικεία πάντας πληροφορεῖν ἐν σπλάγχνοις πατρικοῖς ἀνεχόμενος, ἢδη καταπεσὼν εἰς τὴν ἀρρωστίαν, ὡς ἢ καὶ μετῆλθεν ἀπὸ τοῦ βίου, προσκαλεσάμενος ἦμᾶς ἔφη: ὑπὸ μάρτυρι τῷ Κυρίῳ ἐν ἀπλότητι

the other hand, I am conscious of this, that from my earliest youth I was brought up with a love for Dianius, and I used to look up to the man as majestic in appearance, magnificent, and possessing great sanctity of aspect. And when I reached the age of reason, then indeed I recognized him for what he was from his spiritual virtues; and I rejoiced in his company, coming to learn the simplicity, nobility, and generosity of his character, and all the other qualities peculiar to the man—his gentleness of soul, his lofty spirit combined with mildness, his decorum, his control of temper, and his cheerfulness and affability mingled with dignity. For all this I counted him among the most illustrious in virtue.

However, at the end of his life (for I will not conceal the truth), I, together with many God-fearing people of our fatherland, 1 suffered intolerable grief on his account, for he subscribed to the creed brought from Constantinople by George and his associates. 2 Later, so willing was he in his fatherly heart, by reason of the mildness and reasonableness of his character, to reassure all men, when he had already fallen into the sickness which caused his death, he summoned us and said, that with the Lord as his witness he had agreed to the pact from

1 Apparently Caesarea is meant here by πατρίς. Cf. Letter VIII.

2 The Homoean creed of Ariminum revised at Nica and accepted in 360 at the Acacian Synod of Constantinople. Cf. Introd. p. xxix. "George is presumably the George, Bishop of Laodicea, who at Seleucia opposed the Aacacians, but appears afterwards to have become reconciled to that party, and to have joined them in persecuting the Catholics of Constantinople."—Jackson. Cf. Letter CCLI.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

καρδίας συντεθείσθαι μὲν τῷ ἀπὸ τῆς Κων-
σταντινουπόλεως γραμματείᾳ; μηδὲν δὲ ἐπ'
ἀδετήσει τῆς κατὰ Νικαίαν ύπὸ τῶν ἁγίων πατέ-
ρων ἐκπεθαίσης πίστεως προελέσθαι, μηδὲ ἄλλως
ἐχειν ἐν τῇ καρδίᾳ ἡ ὡς παρέλαβεν εξ ἀρχῆς;
ἀλλὰ καὶ εὐχεσθαι μὴ χωρισθῆναι τῆς μερίδος
τῶν μακαρίων ἐκείνων ἐπισκόπων τῶν τριακο-
sίων δεκαοκτῶν, τοῦτο ἐυσέβες κήρυγμα δι-
αγγειλάντων τῇ οἰκουμένῃ ὡστε ἡμᾶς, ἐπὶ τῇ
πληροφορίᾳ ταύτη, λύσαντας πάσαν τῶν καρ-
dιῶν τὴν διάκρισιν, ὡς καὶ αὐτὸς ἐπὶ στασαί,5
προσελθεῖν τῇ κοινωνίᾳ, καὶ λυπομένους παύ-
sασθαι.

Τὰ μὲν ὅση ἡμέτερα πρὸς τὸν ἄνδρα τοιαύτα,
εἴ δὲ τις λέγοι τινὰ βλασφημίαν ἀθέμιτον6 εἰς
αὐτὸν ἡμῶν συνεγνωκέναι, μὴ κατὰ γνωνίαν
θρυλλεῖτω δουλοπρεπῶς, ἀλλ' εἰς τὸ φανερὸν
ἀντικαταστάς διελεγχέτω μετὰ παρρησίας.

LII

Κανονικαῖς.7

"Οσον ἡμῖνας ἡμᾶς πρότερον φήμη λυπηρά
τὰς ἀκοὰς ἡμῶν περιχήσασα, τοσοῦτον εὐφρανεῖν
ἡμᾶς ὁ θεοφιλέστατος ἐπίσκοπος ὁ ἄδελφός ἡμῶν
Βοσπόριος, τὰ χρηστότερα περὶ 8 τῆς εὐλαβείας

1 γραμματίᾳ A. 2 τῶν om. C, D.
3 δέκα καὶ ὀκτὼ C, D, F. 4 ἐπὶ . . . ταύτη om. C, D.
5 ὡς καὶ . . . ἐπὶ στασαί om. A, B, C.
6 ἀθέμιτον om. C, D.
7 Κανονικαῖς περὶ τοῦ ὀμοούσιον εἶναι τῶν ύπὸν τῷ πατρί E, F.
8 περὶ om. A, B, C, D.

326
Constantinople in the simplicity of his heart, but that in no way had he been inclined to reject the faith as set forth by the holy fathers at Nicaea, nor was he at heart any different from what he had been in the beginning when he had accepted it; nay, he added, he even prayed not to be separated from the party of those blessed bishops, the three hundred and eighteen, who announced that pious doctrine to the world. We, accordingly, on this reassurance, freed our heart of all condemnation, and, as you yourself know, entered into fellowship with him, and ceased to be offended.

Such were our relations with Dianius. And if anyone says that he is privy to any lawless blasphemy on our part against Dianius, let him not prattle in a corner like a slave, but let him take his stand in the open and refute me freely.

LETTER LII

To the Canonicae.  

The great vexation caused me by a painful report which resounded in my ears is balanced by the great pleasure which the bishop, dearly beloved of God, my brother Bosporius, gave us when he related

1 For the Council of Nicaea, cf. Introd. p. xxv.
2 Written at the beginning of the episcopate, about 370. Canonicae were women of the early Church enrolled to devote themselves to works of charity. Although not under vows, they lived apart from men, usually in coenobium. Cf. Letter CCLXXXVIII, where Basil is supposed to refuse to consider marriage with them as legitimate. There were also Canonici; but marriage was commonly permitted to them.
3 Cf. Letter LI.
Für selbstverständlich: COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

ύμων διηγησάμενος. ἐφ' γάρ, τῇ τοῦ Θεοῦ χάριτι, πάντα ἐκείνα τὰ θρυλληθέντα ἀνθρώπων εἶναι κατασκευάσματα οὐκ ἀκριβῶς τὴν καθ' ύμᾶς ἐπισταμένων ἀλήθειαν. προσεπτεῖε ¹ δὲ ὅτι καὶ διαβολάς εὑρε παρ' ύμῖν καθ' ἡμῶν ἀνοσίας, καὶ τοιαύτας οίς ἂν εἴποιεν οἱ μὴ ἐκδεχόμενοι καὶ περὶ ἁργοῦ ἰχμάτων δώσειν λόγου τῷ κριτῇ ἐν ἡμέρᾳ τῆς ἀνταποδοσεως αὐτοῦ τῇ δικαίᾳ. ² ὡστε ἡχαρίστησα τῷ Κυρίῳ αὐτὸς τε ἱαθεὶς τὴν ἐφ' ύμῖν βλάβην, ἢν, ὡς ἐσικεῖ, ἐκ συνοφαντίας ἀνθρώπων ἡμὴν παραδεξάμενος, ύμᾶς τε ἀκούσας ἀποτεθείσθαι τὰς ψευδεῖς περὶ ἡμῶν ὑπολήψεις, ἐξ ὧν ἡκούσατε τοῦ άδελφοῦ ἡμῶν διαβεβαιωσαμένου. ³

"Οσ ἐν οἷς τὸ ⁴ καθ' ἐαυτὸν ύμῶν παρέστησε, συναπέδειξε πάντως καὶ τὸ ἡμέτερον. ἐν γὰρ ἐν ἁμφοτέροις ἡμῖν τὸ τῆς πίστεως φρόνημα, ἐπειδῆ καὶ τῶν αὐτῶν πατέρων κληρονόμων τῶν κατὰ τὴν Νικαίαν ποτὲ τὸ μέγα τῆς εὐσεβείας ἐξαγγειλάντων κήρυγμα· οὐ τὰ μὲν ἄλλα παντάπασιν ⁵ ἐστιν ἀσυνοφαντήτα, τὴν δὲ τοῦ ὀμοουσίου φωνῆν, κακῶς παρὰ τινοι ἐκληθθείσαν, εἰςὶ τινες οἱ μήπω παραδεξάμενοι· οὐς καὶ μέμψαιτο ἀν τῆς δικαίως, καὶ πάλιν μέντοι συγγνώμης αὐτοὺς ἄξιώσειν. τὸ μὲν γὰρ πατράσι μὴ ἀκολουθεῖν καὶ τὴν ἐκείνων φωνὴν κυριώτεραν τίθεσθαι τῆς ἑαυτῶν γνώμης, ἐγκλήματος ἄξιον ὡς ⁶ αὐθαίρειας γέμον, τὸ δὲ πάλιν ύφ' ἐτέρων διαβληθείσαν

¹ προσεπτεῖε Α, Β, Φ. ² τῆς δικαιας Α, Β, Κ, Δ, Φ. ³ βεβαιωσαμένου Α, Β, Κ, Δ. ⁴ τὰ Ε, Φ. ⁵ πανταπασιν] πάντα μαθείν Κ, Δ. ⁶ καὶ Ε.

328
happier things about your religious life. For he said—thanks be to God—that all those stories which were noised abroad were fabrications of men not accurately aware of the truth concerning you. He said further that he found current amongst you unholy calumnies against us, such calumnies as might come from men who do not expect on the day of righteous retribution to render an account to the Judge even for their idle speech.\(^1\) I therefore gave thanks to the Lord, both that I myself have been healed of the injurious charges against you—which, as it seems, I had accepted from slanderous men—and that you, as I hear, have laid aside those false notions about me, on the strength of the assurance you have received from my brother.

The opinions which Bosphorus has on his own account set forth accord completely with my own. For we both have the same conception of the faith, inasmuch as we are heirs of the same Fathers, those who at Nicaea once gave out that great proclamation of our religion. This has in all other respects been wholly free from slanderous detraction; but the term "sameness of substance" ("homoousion"),\(^2\) which has been grudgingly received by some, has as yet not been accepted at all by others. These one might justly blame, but, on the other hand, one might consider them deserving of pardon. For while their refusal to follow the Fathers, and to count their declaration less authoritative than their own opinion, calls for censure as teeming with arrogance, yet, on the other hand, their regarding with suspicion a doctrine with which others have

\(^2\) Cf. Introd. p. xxv.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

αὐτὴν ὑποπτοῦ ἔχειν, τούτῳ¹ πως δοκεῖ τοῦ ἐγκλήματος αὐτοὺς μετρίως ἐλευθεροῦν. καὶ γὰρ τῷ ὄντι οἷ ἐπὶ Παύλῳ τῷ Σαμοσατεί συνελθόντες διέβαλον τὴν λέξιν ὡς οὐκ εὐσήμων.² ἐφασαν γὰρ ἐκείνοι τὴν τοῦ ὄμοουσίου φωνὴν παριστάν ἐννοιαν οὐσίας τε καὶ τῶν ἀπ’ αὐτῆς, ὡστε καταμερισθεῖσαν τὴν οὐσίαν παρέχειν τοῦ ὄμοουσίου τὴν προσηγορίαν τοῖς εἰς ἀ δηρέθη. τοῦτο δὲ ἐπὶ χαλκοῦ μὲν καὶ τῶν ἀπ’ αὐτῶν νομισμάτων ἔχει³ τινὰ λόγου τὸ διανόημα. ἐπὶ δὲ Θεοῦ Πατρὸς καὶ Θεοῦ Τίου οὐκ οὐσία πρεσβυτέρα οὐδ’ ὑπερκειμένη ἀμφοῖν θεωρεῖται: ἅσβεβείας γὰρ ἐπέκεινα τοῦτο καὶ νοῆσαι καὶ φθέγξασθαι. τί γὰρ ἢν γένοιτο τοῦ ἀγεννητοῦ πρεσβύτερου; ἀναρεῖται δὲ ἐκ τῆς βλασφημίας ταύτης καὶ ἢ εἰς τὸν Πατέρα καὶ Τίον πίστις: ἀδελφὰ γὰρ ἀλλήλοις τὰ εἰς ἐνὸς ύφεστώτα.

Καὶ ἐπειδὴ ἐξ οὐκ ὄντων εἰς τὸ εἶναι παρῆχθαι τὸν Τίον ἐτὶ τότε ἕστον οἱ λέγοντες, ἵνα καὶ ταύτην ἐκτέμωσι τὴν ἁσβεβείαν τὸ ὄμοουσίον προσειρήκασιν. ἄχρονος γὰρ καὶ ἀδιάστατος ἢ του Τίου πρὸς τὸν Πατέρα συνάφεια. δὴ λοι μὲ καὶ τὰ προλαβόντα ρήματα ταύτην εἶναι τῶν ἀνδρῶν τὴν διάνοιαν. εἰπόντες γὰρ φῶς ἐκ φωτός, καὶ ἐκ τῆς οὐσίας τοῦ Πατρὸς τὸν Τίον γεγενησθαι.⁴

¹ δὲ add. B, F; οὕ add. A, C, D.
² εὐσήμων MSS.; εὐηχὸν ("well-sounding"; i.e., "as not being a happy term") editi.
³ ἔχειν C, D.
⁴ γεγενησθαι D.

330
LETTER LII

found fault does somehow seem to free them from a portion of the blame. For in truth those who convened to pass upon the case of Paul of Samosata\(^1\) found fault with the word as not being clear. They declared that the word "homoousion" suggests the idea both of substance and its derivatives, so that the substance which has been divided gives the attribute of "likeness of substance" to the parts into which it has been divided. This idea, when applied, for example, to bronze and to the coins made from it, has a certain amount of reason in it; but when "substance" is used with reference to God the Father and God the Son, it is not considered as anterior, nor yet as underlying both; for either to think or to express any such idea is worse than sacrilege. For what could be older than the Unbegotten? By this blasphemy, faith in both Father and Son is destroyed; for things which derive their existence from the same thing are brothers to one another.\(^2\)

And since even then there were those who said that the Son was brought into being out of the non-existent, to cut off this impiety also, the term "likeness of substance" ("homoousion") was added. For the union of the Son with the Father has to do with neither time nor space. And indeed the preceding words show this to have been the intention of these men. For after saying that the Son was light from light, and was born, though not created, from the substance of the Father, they then

---

\(^1\) The two Antiochene synods of A.D. 264 and 269, to enforce whose decisions against Paul of Samosata recourse was had to the pagan Aurelian.

\(^2\) A *reductio ad absurdum*. The doctrine of "'Likeness of Substance" was devised to get rid of this very thing.
οὐχὶ δὲ πεποιῆσθαι, ἐπήγαγον τοῦτοι τὸ ὀμούσιον, παραδεικνύντες ὅτι ὀντερ ἄν τις ἀποδῷ φωτὸς λόγον ἐπὶ Πατρός, οὕτως ἀρμόσει καὶ ἐπὶ Τίον. φῶς γὰρ ἀληθινὸν πρὸς φῶς ἀληθινόν, κατ' αὐτὴν τοῦ φωτὸς τὴν ἐννοιαν, οὐδεμιᾶν ἔξει παραλλαγῆν. ἐπεὶ οὖν ἐστὶν ἀναρχον φῶς ὁ Πατήρ, γεννητὸν δὲ φῶς ὁ Τίος, φῶς δὲ καὶ φῶς ἐκάτερος, ὀμούσιον εἰπαν δικαίως, ὡς τὸ τῆς φύσεως ὀμότιμον παραστίσωσιν. οὐ γὰρ τὰ ἀδελφὰ ἀλλήλοις ὀμούσια λέγεται, ὀπερ τινὲς ὑπειλήφασιν ἀλλ' ὅταν καὶ τὸ αὐτίον καὶ τὸ ἐκ τοῦ αὐτίου τὴν ὑπαρξίν ἔχου τῆς αὐτῆς ὑπάρχῃ φύσεως, ὀμούσια λέγεται.

Αὕτη δὲ ἡ φωνὴ καὶ τὸ τοῦ Σαβελλίου κακῶν ἐπανορθοῦται, ἀναρεῖ γὰρ τὴν ταυτότητα τῆς ὑποστάσεως καὶ εἰςάγει τελείαν τῶν προσώπων τὴν ἐννοιαν. οὐ γὰρ αὐτὸ τι ἐστὶν ἐαυτῷ ὀμούσιον, ἀλλ' ἐπερον ἐπέρω, ὡστε καλῶς ἔχει καὶ εὐσεβῶς, τῶν τε ὑποστάσεων τὴν ἰδιότητα διορίζουσα καὶ τῆς φύσεως τὸ ἀπαράλλακτον παριστῶσα.

"Ὅταν δὲ ἐκ τῆς οὐσίας τοῦ Πατρός τοῦ Τίον εἰναι διδασκόμεθα, καὶ γεννηθέντα, ἀλλ' οὐχὶ ποιηθέντα, μὴ καταπίπτοσιν ἐπὶ τὰς σωματικὰς τῶν παθῶν ἐννοιας. οὐ γὰρ ἐμερίσθη ἡ οὐσία ἀπὸ Πατρὸς εἰς Τίον, οὔτε ῥυεῖσα ἐγέννησεν, οὔτε προβάλλουσα, ὡς τὰ φυτὰ τοὺς καρποὺς, ἀλλ' ἄρρητος καὶ ἀνεπισκότους λογισμοῖς ἀνθρώπων τῆς

1 ἀρμώσει F. 2 ἐκάτερον E. 3 εἴποιεν ἄν E.

1 Cf. p. 95, note 3.
2 Cf. Luke 21. 30. Ὅταν προβάλλωσιν ἡδη, διὶ ῥυεῖσαι ἐγέννησεν τὸ θέρος ἐστὶν. "When they now shoot forth their fruit, you know that summer is nigh."
brought in also the doctrine of "likeness of substance," thus intimating that whatever idea of light is attributed to the Father, this will equally apply to the Son also. For true light in relation to true light, by the very conception we have of light, will have no variation. Since, therefore, the Father is light without beginning, and the Son is begotten light, yet one is light and the other is light, they rightly declared them "alike in substance," that they might set forth the equal dignity of their nature. For things which are brothers to one another cannot be called "alike in substance," as some have supposed; on the contrary, when both the cause and that which has its origin from that cause are of the same nature, then they are called "alike in substance."

This term also sets aright the error of Sabellius; for it does away with the identity of person ("hypostasis"), and introduces a perfect notion of the persons of the Godhead. For nothing is itself of like substance with itself, but one thing is of like substance with another thing; consequently, the term is a good one, and consistent with piety, differentiating as it does the individuality of the Persons, and at the same time setting forth the invariability of their nature.

But when we learn that the Son is from the substance of the Father, and begotten though not created, let us not fall into the corporeal conception of the process. For the substance in the Father was not divided to form the Son, nor did it engender by fluxion, or by putting forth shoots, as plants put forth their fruits; on the contrary, the method of divine generation is ineffable and inconceivable to
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

θείας γεννήσεως ὁ τρόπος. ταπεινής γὰρ τῷ ὄντι καὶ σαρκίνης ἐστὶ διανοιας, τοῖς φθαρτοῖς καὶ προσκαίροις ἁφομοιοῖν τὰ ἁίδια, καὶ οἶεσθαι ὅτι, ὡς τὰ σωματικά, οὕτω γεννᾶ καὶ ὁ Θεὸς ὁμοῖος. δέον ἐκ τῶν ἐναντίων λαμβάνειν τὰς ἀφορμὰς πρὸς τὴν εὐσέβειαν, ὅτι, ἐπειδὴ τὰ θυντᾶ ὀὕτως, ὁ ἀθάνατος οὐχ οὕτως. οὕτε οὐν ἀρνεῖσθαι δεῖ τὴν θείαν γέννησιν, οὕτε σωματικαίς ἐννοιαῖς καταρρύποις ἐαυτοῦ τὴν διάνοιαν.

Τὸ δὲ Πνεῦμα τὸ ἁγίου Πατρὶ μὲν καὶ Τίῳ συναριθμεῖται, διότι καὶ υπὲρ τὴν κτίσιν ἐστὶν τέτακται δὲ ὡς ἐν εὐαγγελίῳ δεδιδάγματι παρὰ τοῦ Κυρίου εἰπόντος: Πορευθέντες Βαπτίζετε, εἰς τὸ ὄνομα τοῦ Πατρὸς καὶ τοῦ Τιοῦ καὶ τοῦ ἁγίου Πνεύματος. ο ἐπὶ προτιθεῖς δὲ τιοῦ, η πρεσβύτερον ὁ λέγων Πατρός, οὕτως ἀνθίσταται μὲν τῇ τοῦ Θεοῦ διαταγῇ, ἀλλότριος δὲ τῆς ὑμαίνουσης πίστεως, μὴ ὅν παρέλαβε τρόπου δοξολογίας φυλάττων, ἀλλ' ἐαυτῷ καινοφωνίαν εἰς ἀρέσκειαν ἀνθρώπων ἐπινοοῦν. εἰ γὰρ ἀνώτερον Θεοῦ, οὐκ ἐκ τοῦ Θεοῦ. γέγραπται γὰρ. Τὸ δὲ Πνεῦμα ἐκ τοῦ Θεοῦ. εἰ δὲ ἐκ τοῦ Θεοῦ, πῶς πρεσβύτερον ἐστὶ του ἐξ οὐ ἐστὶ; τὶς δὲ καὶ ἡ παράνοια, ἐνὸς οὕτως τοῦ ἁγεονίτου, ἀλλ' οἱ τινὲς τοῦ ἁγεονίτου ἀνώτερον; ἀλλ' οὕτε τοῦ

1 Cf. Matt. 28. 19. πορευθέντες οὖν μαθητεύσατε πάντα τὰ ἔθη, Βαπτίζοντες αὐτοὺς εἰς τὸ ὄνομα τοῦ Πατρὸς καὶ τοῦ Τιοῦ καὶ τοῦ ἁγίου Πνεύματος. "Going therefore, teach ye all the
the human mind. Indeed, it is a truly low and fleshly mind which likens invisible things to those perishable and temporal, and believes that just as corporeal things beget, so too does God in like manner; but piety demands that we proceed on the principle of opposites, and reason that, since mortal things do thus, the immortal being does otherwise. Therefore we should neither deny the divine generation, nor with corporeal conceptions defile our minds.

The Holy Spirit is reckoned along with the Father and Son, wherefore He also is above creation; and the place assigned to Him is in accordance with the doctrine which we have derived from the words of the Lord\(^1\) in the Gospel: “Going baptize in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost.” But he who puts the Holy Spirit before the Son, or declares Him to be older than the Father, sets himself in opposition to God’s commandment, and is a stranger to the sound faith, since he does not preserve the traditional form of the Doxology, but invents for himself a new-fangled expression for the satisfaction of men. For if the Spirit is anterior to God, He is not from God. For it is written, “The Spirit of God.”\(^2\) And if it is of God, how can it be older than He of whom it is? And what folly it is, when the Unbegotten is one, to speak of something else as anterior to the Unbegotten! Nay, it is not prior to nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost.”

\(^1\) Cf. 1 Cor. 2. 12. ἡμεῖς δὲ οὐ τὸ πνεῦμα τοῦ κόσμου ἐλάβομεν, ἀλλὰ τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ ἐκ τοῦ Θεοῦ, ἵνα εἰδώμεν τὰ ὑπὸ τοῦ Θεοῦ χαρισθέντα ἡμῖν. “Now we have received not the spirit of this world, but the Spirit that is of God; that we may know the things that are given us from God.”
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

Μονογενοῦς πρότερον, οὐδὲν γὰρ μέσον Τίου καὶ Πατρός. εἰ δὲ μὴ ἐστὶν ἐκ Θεοῦ, διὰ Χριστοῦ δὲ ἐστὶν, οὐδὲ ἐστὶ τὸ παράπαν. ὡστε ἡ περὶ τὴν τάξιν καὶ νομοτομία αὐτῆς τῆς ὑπάρξεως ἀθέτησιν ἔχει, καὶ ὅλης τῆς πίστεως ἐστὶν ἀρνησις. ομοίως οὐν ἐστιν ἀσεβὲς καὶ ἐπὶ τὴν κτίσιν καταγαγεῖν οὐν ἡ Τίου ἡ Πατρός, ἡ κατὰ τὸν χρόνον ἡ κατὰ τὴν τάξιν.

'Α μὲν οὖν ἦκουσα ἐπιζητεῖσθαι παρὰ τῆς εὐλαβείας υἱῶν, ταυτά ἐστιν· εἰ δὲ δῷ ὁ Κύριος καὶ εἰς ταύτων ἡμᾶς ἀλλήλους γενέσθαι, τάχα ἂν τι καὶ περὶ τούτων πλέον εἰπομεν, καὶ αὐτοὶ δὲ ἂν περὶ ὧν ἐπιζητοῦμεν εὐροιμέν." των παρ' υἱῶν πληροφορίαν.

LIII

Χωρεπισκόποις. 4

Τὸ τοῦ πράγματος ἀτοποῦν περὶ οὖν γράφω, διότι 5 μὲν ὅλως ὑπωπτεύθη καὶ ἐλαλήθη, ὅδυνις ἐπληρωσεὶ μοι τὴν ψυχήν τεῶς δὲ ἐφάνη μοι ἀπιστικ. τὸ οὖν 6 περὶ αὐτοῦ γράμμα ὁ μὲν

1 κατάγειν E, F. 2 αὐτὸ ἡ] αὐτὸ Α, Β; αὐτοῦ Α, Δ. 3 εὐροιμέν C, D. 4 πρὸς τοὺς υφ᾽ ἑαυτῶν ἐπισκόπους, ὥστε μὴ χειροτονεῖν ἐπὶ χρήμασιν Α, Β, Κ, Δ. 5 διάτι Α, Β, Κ, Δ, E, F. 6 γοῦν E.

336
LETTER LIII

the Only-begotten either; for there is no space between Son and Father. And if the Spirit is not of God, but is through Christ, He does not exist at all. Consequently, any innovation in the position of the Holy Spirit involves the abolition of His very existence, and is equivalent to a denial of the whole faith. It is therefore in like manner impious either to degrade Him to the position of a creature, or to raise Him above either Son or Father in either time or position.

These are the matters into which I have heard that your pious souls are making inquiry; and if the Lord grants that we shall meet one another, I may have somewhat more to say on these questions, and I myself may obtain light from you on the subjects of my own inquiries.

LETTER LIII

To the Chorepiscopi

The enormity of the matter about which I write (wherefore it is generally suspected and discussed) has filled my soul with grief; yet hitherto the thing has seemed to me incredible. So let what I write

1 Cf. Letter XXXVIII, p. 209, where Basil argues this point.
2 Written at the beginning of the episcopate, about 370. The chorepiscopi were a grade of priests between the bishops themselves and the ordinary priests or presbyters, i.e. suffragan bishops. They were first appointed in the late third century in Asia Minor, in order to give more direct episcopal supervision to the remote parts of large dioceses. They are first mentioned in the Councils of Ancyra and Neo-Caesarea, a.d. 314.
συνεγγυωκως ἡαυτῷ δεξίσθω ὡς ἵαμα, ὦ δὲ μὴ συνεγγυωκώς ὡς προφυλακτήριον, ὦ δὲ ἀδιάφορος, ὀπερ ἀπεύχομαι ἐφ' ὡμιν εὐρεθήναι, ὦς διαμαρτυρίαιν.

Τί δὲ ἐστιν ὁ λέγω; φασί 3 τινας ὑμὸν παρὰ τῶν χειροτονουμένων λαμβάνειν χρήματα, ἐπισκιάζειν δὲ ὅνομαὶ εὐσεβείας. τοῦτο δὲ χειρόν ἐστιν. ἐὰν γὰρ τις τὸ κακὸν ἐν προσχήματι τοῦ ἀγαθοῦ ποιή, διπλασίον τιμωρίᾳ ἐστὶν ἄξιος, διότι αὐτὸ 4 τε τὸ ὄντω ἀγαθὸν ἐργάζεται, καὶ κέχρηται εἰς τὸ τελέσαι τὴν ἀμαρτίαν, ὡς ἀν εἰποὺ τις, τῷ καλῷ 5 συνεργῷ. ταῦτα εἰ οὕτως ἔχει, τοῦ λοιποῦ μὴ γινέσθω, ἀλλὰ διορθωθῆτω· ἐπεὶ ἀνάγκη λέγειν πρὸς τὸν δεχόμενον τὸ ἀργύριον, 6 ὦπερ ἐρῥήθη παρὰ τῶν ἀποστόλων πρὸς τὸν θέλοντα δοῦναι, ἦν Πνεύματος ἀγίου μετουσίαν ὁνήσηται. Τὸ ἀργυρίων σούν υποκειμένων ἀπώλειαιν. κουφότερος γὰρ ὁ δὲ ἀπειρίαν ὁνήσασθαι θέλων ἢ ὁ πιπράσκων τὴν τοῦ Θεοῦ ὅρων. πρᾶσις γὰρ ἐγένετο, καὶ ὁ σὺ δωρεάν ἑλαβες, ἐὰν πωλησ, ὡςανεὶ πεπραμένος τῷ σατανά, ἀφαιρεθησθῇ τοῦ χαρίσματος. κατηλεῖαν γὰρ ἐπεισάγεις τοὺς πνευματικοῖς, καὶ τῇ ἐκκλησία, ἐνθα 7 πεπιστεύμεθα σῶμα καὶ αἶμα Χριστοῦ. ταῦτα οὕτω γίνεσθαι οὐ 8 χρῆ. ὦ δὲ ἐστὶ 9 τέχνασμα, λέγων νομίζουσι μὴ ἀμαρτάνειν τῷ μὴ 10 προλαμβάνειν, ἀλλὰ μετὰ τὴν χειροτονίαν λαμβάνειν. 12 λαβεῖν δὲ ἐστιν ὅτε δὴ ποτε τὸ λαβεῖν.

1 φυλακτήριον E. 2 ἐν C, D.
3 φασί τινα] φασί τινες τινὰς A, B, E, F. 4 αὐτὸς B.
4 ἀγαθός E. 5 τὸ ἀργύριον om. A, B. 7 ἐὰν C, D, E.
7 ἀμα add. A, B. 10 προσλαμβάνειν B.

338
on the matter be received by any that has qualms of conscience as a medicine, by any that has no qualms as a precaution, and by any that is indifferent (I pray that none such may be found amongst you) as a solemn protest.

But what is it that I have in mind? The report is that some of you take money from candidates for ordination, and cover it up under the name of piety. But that only makes the matter worse. For if anyone does an evil thing under the guise of good, he deserves a twofold punishment, because he not only does what is in itself not good, but also makes use of the good as a co-worker, so to speak, for the accomplishment of his sin. If this be true, let it not happen in future, but be corrected; for we must say to any who accepts this money what the Apostles said to the man who wanted to pay for participation in the Holy Spirit: “May thy money perish with thee.” For he who through ignorance wants to buy is less guilty than he who sells the gift of God. For the transaction has become a matter of business; and if you sell what you have received as a free gift, you will be deprived of all its grace, as if you yourself were sold to Satan. For you are bringing the huckster’s traffic into spiritual affairs, and into the Church, where we are entrusted with the body and blood of Christ. These things must not be done in this way. I will tell you what the artifice is. They think that they commit no sin, because they receive the money after and not before the ordination. But to take is to take, whenever it happens.

1 i.e. they call the contribution a proof of the giver’s piety.
2 Acts 8. 20.

12 ἀλλὰ μετὰ . . . λαμβάνειν om. B.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

Παρακαλῶ οὖν ταύτην τὴν πρόσοδον, μᾶλλον 
δὲ τὴν προσαγωγὴν τὴν ἑπὶ γέενναν, ἀπὸθεσθε·
καὶ μὴ τὰς χεῖρας μολύναντες τοιούτους λήμμασιν,
ἐαυτοὺς ἀνάξιους ποιήσητε τοῦ ἐπιτελεῖν ἀγνὰ
μυστήρια. σύγγνωτε δὲ μοι πρῶτον μὲν ὡς
ἀπιστήσασι, εἶτα ὡς πεισθεὶς ἀπειλῶ. εἰ 
τίς 
μετὰ ταύτην μοῦ τὴν ἐπιστολὴν πράξειε τι
τοιούτου, τῶν μὲν ἑνταῦθα θυσιαστηρίων ἀνα-
χωρῆσαι, ξητίσει δὲ ἐνθα τὴν τοῦ Θεοῦ δωρεάν
ἀγοράζων μεταπωλεῖν δύναται. ἥμεις γὰρ καὶ
αἱ ἐκκλησίαι τοῦ Θεοῦ τοιαύτην συνήθειαν ὦ
ἔχομεν.

Εἰν δὲ προσθεὶς παύσομαι. διὰ 
φιλαργυρίαν 
γίνεται ταύτα, ἢ δὲ φιλαργυρία καὶ 
ρίζα πάντων 
τῶν κακῶν ἑστὶ, καὶ ὅνομαξεται εἰδωλολατρεία.
μὴ οὖν πρὸ τοῦ Χριστοῦ τιμήσητε τὰ 
εἰδωλολατρεία
διὰ μικρῶν ἀργυρίων μηδὲ πάλιν τὸν Ἰουναὶ 
μυρίσῃς, λήμματι παραδιδόντες δὲ ὑπὲρ ἡμῶν 
σταυρωθέντα. εἰπὲ 
καὶ 
τὰ 
χωρία καὶ 
αἱ 
χεῖρες 
τῶν 
καρποὺς 
τούτων 
δεχομένων 'Ακελαδάμα κληθήσονται.

---

1 ἀπόθεσαί A, B.
2 ἠγια A, B, C, D, F.
3 πα-ακαλῶ add. C, D.
4 τι om. E.
5 μυστήριαν E.
6 ἀναχωρήσει C.
7 βοήθειαν E.
8 πρὸ om. A, B, C, D, E.
9 προτιμήσητε A, B, C, D, E.
10 προδιδόντες A, B, C, D.

---

1 Cf. 1 Cor. 11. 16. εἰ δὲ τις δοκεῖ φιλόνεικος εἶναι, ἥμεις 
τοιαύτην συνήθειαν ὦνκ ἔχομεν, οὐδὲ ἐν ἐκκλησίαι τοῦ Θεοῦ.
"But if any man seem to be contentious, we have no such 
custom, nor the churches of God."

340
Therefore, I beg you, abandon this way to revenue, or rather, this road to Hell. Do not pollute your hands with such earnings, and so make yourselves unworthy to perform the holy mysteries. But forgive me. I began as not believing; but now I threaten as though convinced. If, after this letter of mine, anyone do any such thing, he will withdraw from the altars of this diocese, and will seek a place where he may buy and sell the gift of God. “For we and the churches of God have no such custom.”

One word I will add, and then cease. These actions arise from covetousness; and covetousness is both the root of all evils and is called idolatry. Therefore do not honour idols above Christ for petty gain, nor yet, on the other hand, imitate Judas, betraying for gain a second time Him who was once crucified for our sakes. For both the lands and the hands of those who accept the fruits of such things shall be called Haceldama.

2 Cf. Col. 3. 5. θεραπεύειν, ἀκαθαρσίαν, πάθος, ἐπιθυμίαν κακῆν, καὶ τὴν πλεονεξίαν, ἥτις ἐστιν εἰδωλολατρεία. “Mortify therefore your members which are upon the earth; fornication, uncleanness, lust, evil concupiscence, and covetousness, which is the service of idols.”

3 Cf. Acts 1. 18–19. οὕτως μὲν οὖν ἐκτήσατο χαρίων ἐκ τοῦ μισθοῦ τῆς ἄδικίας, καὶ πρηνής γενόμενος ἠλκήσε μέσος, καὶ ἔξεχύθη πάντα τὰ ὀπλάγχανα αὐτοῦ, καὶ γνωστὸν ἐγένετο πᾶσι τοῖς κατοικούσιν Ἱερουσαλήμ, ὡστε κληθῆναι τὸ χαρίων ἐκεῖνο τῇ ἰδίᾳ διαλέκτῳ αὐτῶν Ἀκελδαμά, τούτεστι χαρίων αἵματος. “And he (Judas) indeed hath possessed a field of the reward of iniquity, and being hanged, burst asunder in the midst; and all his bowels gushed out. And it became known to all the inhabitants of Jerusalem; so that the same field was called in their tongue, Haceldama, that is to say, The field of blood.”
LIV

Χωρεπισκόποις.¹

Πάνυ μὲ λυπεῖ, ὅτι ἐπιλελοίπασι λοιπὸν οἱ τῶν πατέρων κανόνες, καὶ πάσα ἀκρίβεια τῶν ἐκκλησιῶν ἀπελήλαται,² καὶ φοβοῦμαι ³ μὴ κατὰ μικρὸν τῆς ἀδιαφορίας ταύτης ὀδῷ προϊόντις εἰς παντελῆ σύγχυσιν ἔλθῃ τὰ τῆς Ἐκκλησίας πράγματα. τοὺς ὑπηρετοῦντας τῇ Ἐκκλησίᾳ η πάλαι ταῖς τοῦ Θεοῦ ἐκκλησίαις ἐμπολυτευομένη συνήθεια μετὰ πάσης ἀκρίβειας δοκιμάζουσα παρεδέχετο· καὶ ἐπολυπραγμονεῖτο πάσα αὐτῶν ἡ ἀναστροφή, εἰ μὴ λοίδοροι εἰσιν, εἰ μὴ μέθυσοι, εἰ μὴ πρόχειροι πρὸς τὰς μάχας, εἰ παιδαγωγοῦσιν ἑαυτῶν τὴν νεότητα, ὥστε κατορθοῦν δύνασθαι τὸν ἁγιασμόν, οὗ χωρίς οὐδεὶς ὄψεται τὸν Κύριον. καὶ τούτῳ ἑξῆταξον μὲν πρεσβύτεροι καὶ διάκονοι οἱ συνοικούντες αὐτοῖς, ἐπανέφερον δὲ τοῖς χωρεπισκόποις, οἳ τὰς παρὰ τῶν ἀληθινῶς μαρ-

¹ χωρεπισκόποις ὡστε μὴ γίνεσθαι χωρίς αὐτῶν ὑπηρέτας παρὰ τοὺς κανόνας A, B, C, D.
² ἀπελήλατο B.
³ δεδοικά C, D.

¹ Written in one of the early years of the episcopacy.
² The Greek Church acknowledges the following orders: bishops, priests, deacons, subdeacons, readers, acolytes, exorcists, and porters. Of these, the priesthood (including bishops) and diaconate alone are regarded as major orders, the subdiaconate being classed with the remainder as minor orders. This seems to have been true at least from the time of the Synod of Laodicea (about the middle of the fourth century).
LETTER LIV

LETTER LIV

To the Chorepiscopi

It gives me great pain that the canons of the Fathers have lately fallen into neglect, and that all discipline has been banished from the churches. I fear that, as this indifference proceeds, the affairs of the Church will gradually come to complete ruin. The practice that has long been followed in God's churches was to accept subdeacons for the service of the Church only after a very careful investigation. Their conduct was inquired into in every detail, to learn if they were not railers, or drunkards, or quick to quarrel, and whether they so controlled their youthful spirits as to be able to achieve that "holiness without which no man shall see God." Now while this examination was conducted by priests and deacons living with the candidates, these would then refer the matter to the chorepiscopi, who, after receiving the votes of those who were in the strict

In the Latin Church the priesthood (including bishops), diaconate, and subdiaconate are the major or "sacred" orders, so called because they have immediate reference to what is consecrated. The subdiaconate is defined as "the power by which one ordained as a subdeacon may carry the chalice with wine to the altar, prepare the necessaries for the Eucharist, and read the Epistles before the people." It is interesting to note that Basil in this letter (see below) considers the subdiaconate as one of the sacred orders.

The earliest historical mention of the subdiaconate seems to be in the letter of Pope Cornelius (A.D. 255) to Fabius of Antioch, in which he states that there are among the Roman clergy forty-six priests, seven deacons, and seven subdeacons.

COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

τυρούντων δεξάμενοι ψήφους, καὶ υπομνήσαντες τὸν ἐπίσκοπον, ούτως ἐνηρήμουν τὸν ὑπηρέτην τῷ τάγματι τῶν ἱερατικῶν.

Νῦν δὲ πρῶτον μὲν ἡμᾶς παρωσάμενοι, καὶ μηδὲ ἐπαναφέρειν ἡμῖν καταδεχόμενοι, εἰς ἑαυτοὺς τὴν ὅλην περιεστήσατε αὐθεντίαν. ἔπειτα καταράθμιστοι τοὺς πράγματος, πρεσβυτέροις καὶ διακόνοις ἐπετρέψατε, οὐς ἂν ἐθέλωσιν ἀπὸ ἀνεξεταστοῦ βίου, κατὰ προσπάθειαν, ἢ τὴν ἀπὸ συγγενείας, ἢ τὴν ἔξι ἄλλης τινὸς φιλίας, ἐπεισάγειν τῇ Ἑκκλησίᾳ τοὺς ἀναξίους. διὸ πολλοί μὲν ὑπηρέται ἀριθμοῦνται καθ' ἐκάστην κόμην, ἄξιοι δὲ λειτουργίας τοῦ ἱεραστηρίου οὐδὲ εἰς, ὥσ ὡμέις αὐτοὶ μαρτυρεῖτε, ἀπορούντες ἀνδρῶν ἐν ταῖς ψευδοφορίαις.

Ἐπεὶ οὖν ὁρῶ τὸ πράγμα λοιπὸν εἰς ἀνήκεστον προῖν, μάλιστα νῦν τῶν πλείστων, φόβῳ τῆς στρατολογίας, εἰςποιούντων ἑαυτοὺς τῇ ὑπηρεσίᾳ, ἀναγκαῖως ἦλθον εἰς τὸ ἀνανεώσεσθαι τοὺς τῶν πατέρων κανόνας: καὶ ἐπιστέλλω ὡμῖν ἀποστείλας μοι τὴν ἀναγραφὴν ἐκάστησις κόμης τῶν ὑπηρετούντων, καὶ ὑπὸ τίνος εἰσήκτα ἐκάστος, καὶ ἐν ποίῳ βίῳ ἐστίν. ἔχετε δὲ καὶ αὐτοὶ παρά ἑαυτοῖς τὴν ἀναγραφὴν, ὥστε συγκρίνεσθαι τοῖς παρ' ἡμῖν ἀποκειμένοις γράμμασι τὰ ὑμέτερα, καὶ μηδεὶς ἐξείναι ἑαυτὸν ὅτε βούλεται παρεγγράφειν. οὔτω μέντοι μετὰ τὴν πρῶτην ἐπινέμησιν

---


---

LETTER LIV

sense of the word witnesses, and giving notice to their bishop, then enrolled the subdeacon as a member of the sacred orders.¹

But now you, in the first place, thrusting me aside, and not even consenting to refer such matters to me, have arrogated to yourselves the entire authority. In the second place, becoming careless in the matter, you have allowed priests and deacons, selecting whomsoever they pleased, without examining into their lives, through motives of partiality based either upon kinship or upon some other friendly relationship, to introduce into the Church unworthy men. Consequently, though there are many numbered as subdeacons in every village, yet there is not one worthy to conduct the service at the altar,² as you yourselves testify, since you have difficulty in finding candidates at the elections.

Therefore, since I perceive that the situation is already approaching the incurable, especially now that vast numbers are forcing themselves into the subdiaconate through fear of the conscription, I have been compelled to resort to the renewal of the canons of the Fathers; and I bid you by this letter to send me the list of the subdeacons in each village, stating by whom each has been introduced, and what is his mode of life. Do you also keep the list in your own possession, so that your records may be compared with those deposited with me, and that no one may be able illegally to enter his own name at will. With this proviso, however, that if any of the names on the list have been introduced

² i.e. few if any of the subdeacons are worthy of being raised to the diaconate or to the priesthood.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BAS

εἰ τινες ὑπὸ πρεσβυτέρων εἰσήχθησαν, ἐπὶ τὸ λαῖκον ἀπορρίφθωσιν. ἀνωθεν δὲ γένυται αὐτὶ παρ’ ὑμῶν ἐξετασις, καὶ μὲν ἄξιοι ὡσι, τῇ ὑμετε, ψήφῳ παραδεχθύτωσαν. ἐπικαθαρίσατε 1 τῷ Ἐκκλησίαν τοὺς ἀναξίους αὐτῆς ἀπελάσαντες, καὶ τοὺς λοιποὺ ἔξετάξετε μὲν τοὺς ἄξιους κά παραδέχεσθε, μὴ ἀριθμεῖτε δὲ πρὶν εἰς ἕμι ἐπανενεγκεῖν. 3 ἦ γινώσκετε ὅτι λαῖκος ἔσται ὁ ἀνευ ἡμετέρας γνώμης εἰς ὑπηρεσίαν παραδεχθεῖσιν.

LV

Παρηγορίῳ πρεσβυτέρῳ. 4

'Ενετυχόν σου τοῖς γράμμασι μετὰ πάσης μακροθυμίας, καὶ ἑθαύμασα πῶς δυνάμενος ἡμῖν συντόμως καὶ εὐκόλως ἀπολογήσασθαι διὰ τῶν πραγμάτων, τοῖς μὲν κατηγορουμένοις ἐπιμένειν καταδῆχθη, λόγοις δὲ μακροῖς θεραπεύειν ἐπι- χειρεῖς τὰ ἀνώτατα. οὔτε πρῶτοι, οὔτε μόνοι, Παρηγορίῳ, 5 ἐνομοθετήσαμεν γυναικὰς ἀνδράσι μὴ συνοικεῖν. ἀλλ’ ἀνώρμωθι τὸν ἐξενεχθέντα κανόνα 6 παρὰ τῶν ἀγίων πατέρων ἡμῶν τῶν ἐν τῇ

1 Ἐπεὶ καθαρίσατε C, D, F.
2 ἀπελαύνουσες A, B, C, D. 3 ἀνενεγκεῖν C, D.
4 Sic B, F (sed Ἰρηγορίῳ prima manu); Ἰρηγορίῳ πρεσβυτέρῳ χωρισθῆναι τοῦ συνοικοῦ γυναικός A, B, C, D.
5 & Ἰρηγορίῳ A, B, C, D.
6 τὸν ἐξενεχθέντα κανόνα] τὸν κανόνα τὸν ἐξενεχθέντα A, B, C, D.

1 The indications were conventional periods of fifteen years, the first of which began in the reign of Constantine the 346
priests after the first year of the indiction, these sons are to be cast back among the laity. Let them all be examined by you anew; and if they are worthy men, let them be accepted by your vote. Urge the Church by excluding those who are unworthy of her, and henceforth examine and accept only worthy candidates; but do not enrol these men before you have referred them to us. Otherwise rest assured that he who has been received into the subdiaconate without my approval will be still a layman.

LETTER LV

To Paregorius the Presbyter

I have read your letter with all the patience at my command; and I am astonished that, when you might have made me briefly and without difficulty an apology by your actions, you choose to persist in the practices charged against you, and by lengthy arguments attempt to heal the incurable. I am neither the first nor the only one, Paregorius, to enact that women shall not live with men. Come, read the canon put forth by our holy Fathers of the Nicaean Great. Unlike the Olympiads, the indictions themselves were not numbered, but only the number of the actual year in its indiction. Thus here μετὰ τὴν πρώτην ἐπινέμησιν = "after the first year of the indiction," not "after the first indication."

The Greek, Constantinian, or Constantinopolitan Indictions were reckoned from September 1, 312, and were used chiefly in the East. The Imperial, Caesarian, or Western Indictions commenced with September 24, 312, and were used chiefly in the West.

2 Written in the early part of the episcopate.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

συνόδω Νικαίας, ὃς φανερῶς ἀπηγόρευσε συνεισ-ακτοὺς μὴ εἶναι. ἀγαμία δὲ ἐν τούτῳ ἐξει τῷ σεμνόν, ἐν τῷ κεχωρίσθαι τῆς μετὰ γυναικὸς ¹ διαγωγῆς. ὡς ἐὰν ἔπαγγελλόμενός τις τῷ ὀνόματι, ἔργῳ τὰ τών ² γυναιξὶ συνοικοῦντων ποιη, δῆλος ἐστὶ τὸ μὲν τῇ παρθενίᾳ σεμνὸν ἐν τῇ προση-γορία διώκων, τοῦ δὲ καθ’ ἡδονὴν ἀπρεποὺς μὴ ἀφιστάμενος.

Τοσοῦτῳ οὖν μᾶλλον ἔχρην σε εὐκόλως εἶξαι ἡμῶν τῇ ἁξιώσει, ὅσωπερ λέγεις ἐλεύθερος εἶναι παντὸς σωματικοῦ πάθους. οὔτε γὰρ τὸν ἐβδομη-κοιναίτη γεγονότα πείθομαι ἐμπαθῶς συνοικεῖν γυναικὶ, οὔτε ὃς ἐπιγενομένη τινὶ ἀτόπῳ πράξει ὁρίσαμεν ἃ ³ ὁρίσαμεν, ἀλλ’ ἐπειδὴ ἐδιδάχθημεν παρὰ τοῦ ἀποστόλου μὴ τιθέναι πρόσκομμα τῷ ἄδελφῳ ἣ ⁴ σκάνδαλον. οἴδαμεν δὲ ὅτι τὸ παρὰ τινῶν υγίως γινόμενου, ἀλλοι ἀφορμὴ πρὸς ἀμαρτίαν ὑπάρχει. ⁵ τούτον ἐνεκεν προστάξαμεν ἐπόμενοι τῇ διαταγῇ τῶν ἀγίων πατέρων χωρι-σθήναι σε τοῦ γυναιοῦ.

Τῇ οὖν ἐγκαλεῖς τῷ χωρεπισκόπῳ, καὶ παλαιὰς ἔχθρας μέμνησαι; τί δὲ ἡμῖν καταμέμφη ὡς εὐκόλους ἄκοι ἔχοντας εἰς τὸ ⁶ τὰς διαβολάς προσέσθαι; ἀλλ’ οὐχὶ σεαυτῷ ⁷ μὴ ἀνεχόμενος


1 Subintroductae or suvelsaktoi were women who were admitted to the homes of priests to look after the ordinary household duties. Scandals naturally arose therefrom, and prohibitive measures were passed at various Councils, the

348
LETTER LV

Council, which distinctly forbids the introduction of women into the household.1 The honour of celibacy lies in this—that one is cut off from the society of women. For if anyone professes celibacy in name, but in fact conducts himself exactly as married men do, it is clear that, while he seeks the honour attaching to the name of celibacy, yet he in no way abstains from the dishonour of indulgence.

You should, therefore, have been the more ready to comply with my demand in proportion as you profess to be free from all carnal passion. For I neither believe that a man of seventy years is living with a woman for the gratification of his passions, nor have we reached our present decision on the ground that any outrageous act has been committed, but because we have been taught by the apostle not to put a stumbling-block or a scandal in our brother's way.2 And we know that what is done in all purity by some is to others an occasion for sin. For this reason we have commanded you to follow the commandment of the holy Fathers, and separate yourself from the woman.

Why then do you complain of the chorepiscopus, and recall an ancient grudge? Why do you blame us as having ears easily accessible to slander? Why do you not rather blame yourself for not consent-

earliest at the Council of Elvira, A.D. 305. The Canon (III) of Nicaea, to which Basil refers, only allowed the introduction of a mother, a sister, or an aunt, if their character was above all suspicion.

2 Cf. Rom. 14. 13. μηκέτι οὖν ἀλλήλους κρίνωμεν· ἀλλὰ τούτο κρίνατε μᾶλλον, τὸ μὴ τιθέναι πρόσκομμα τῷ ἀδελφῷ ἡ σκάνδαλον. “Let us not therefore judge one another any more. But judge this rather, that you put not a stumbling-block or a scandal in your brother’s way.”
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

ἀποστῆναι τῆς πρὸς τὴν γυναῖκα συνηθείας; ἐκβαλλεῖ τοῖνυν αὐτὴν ἀπὸ τοῦ οἴκου σου, καὶ κατάστησον αὐτὴν ἐν μοναστηρίῳ. ἔστω ἐκείνη μετὰ παρθένων, καὶ σὺ ὑπηρετοῦ ὑπ' ἄνδρων, ἵνα μὴ τὸ ὄνομα τοῦ Θεοῦ δι' ὑμᾶς βλασφημῆται. ἔως δ' ἂν ταῦτα ποιῆσαι, αἱ μυριάδες, ἂσπέρ συγγράφεις διὰ τῶν ἐπιστολῶν, οὐδὲν ὀφελῆσον σε, ἀλλὰ τελευτῆσεις ἄργων, καὶ δῶσεις τῷ Κυρίῳ λόγου τῆς σεαυτοῦ ἄργιας. ἐὰν δὲ τολμῆσης, μὴ διορθωσάμενος σεαυτόν, ἀντέχεσθαι τῆς ἱερωσύνης, ἀνάθεμα ἐση παντὶ τῷ λαῷ, καὶ οἱ δεχόμενοι σε ἐκκηρυκτοί κατὰ πᾶσαν Ἐκκλησίαν γενήσονται.

LVI

Περγάμω. 6

Εἰμὶ μὲν φύσει εὐκολος πρὸς τὴν λήθην, ἐπε- εγένετο δὲ μοι καὶ τὸ τῶν ἁγιολιῶν πλήθος, ἐπιτείνου τὴν ἐκ φύσεως ἀρρωστιάν. ὡστε εἰ καὶ μὴ μέμνημαι δεξάμενος γράμματα τῆς εὐγενείας σου, πείθομαι ἐπεσταλκέναι σε ἡμῖν, οὐ γὰρ ἂν πάντως ψεῦδος εἰπεῖν σε. τοῦ δὲ μὴ ἀντιφθέγγασθαί οὔκ ἐγὼ αἰτίος, ἀλλ' ὁ μὴ ἀπαιτήσας τὰς ἀποκρίσεις. νυνὶ δὲ ἤκει σοι τὰ γράμματα ταῦτα, ὑπὲρ τοῦ φθασάντων ἁπο- λογίαν πληροῦντα καὶ ἄρχῃ διδόντα προσηγορίας δευτέρας. ὡστε ἐπειδὰν ἐπιστέλλει ἡμῖν, μὴ ὡς

1 ἐκβαλε A, C, D, F. 2 ἡμᾶς C, D. 3 ποιήσας B. 4 ἂσπέρ MSS., ἂπερ editi. 5 ἑαυτοῦ E. 6 Περγάμω Cod. Med. 7 καὶ εἰ A, B, C, D.
LETTER LVI

ing to give up the society of the woman? Come now, expel her from your house, and place her in a convent. Let her live with virgins, and do you be served by men, that the name of the Lord may not be blasphemed on your account. Until you do this, the countless explanations which you make in your letters will not avail you; but in suspension you will die, and will give to the Lord an accounting for your suspension. And if you dare, without correcting your ways, to cling to your priestly office, you will be anathema to all the laity; and those who receive you will be excommunicated throughout the Church.

LETTER LVI

To Pergamius

I have always been naturally forgetful, and the access of my manifold duties has increased this natural weakness. Therefore, although I have no recollection of having received a letter from your Nobility, I am sure that you have written to me, since I know that you would certainly not tell a falsehood. Yet it is not I that am to blame for your having received no answer, but the bearer, who failed to demand the reply. But now you have received this letter, which both serves as an apology for those already received and offers an opportunity for a second greeting. So when you next write to us, do not consider that you

1 Written at the beginning of the episcopate. Nothing is known of Pergamius, who is rebuked in this letter. He was apparently a layman, a person of some consequence, to judge by the titles with which Basil addresses him.
ἀρξας δευτέρας περιόδου γραμμάτων διανοοῦ, ἀλλ’ ὡς ἀποπληρώσας ἐπὶ τοῖς παρούσι τὰ ὀφειλόμενα. καὶ γὰρ εἶ¹ καὶ ἀντίδοσις προαγόντων ἐς τὰ ήμέτερα, ἀλλὰ τῷ πλέον ἢ διπλάσιον ὑπερβάλλειν κατὰ τὸ μέτρον ἐκατέραν² τὴν τάξιν ἀποπληρώσει. ὁρᾷς ὅποια σοφίζεσθαι ἡμᾶς ἢ ἀργία ³ καταναγκάζει;

Σὺ δὲ παύσαι, ὦ ἄριστε, ἐπάγων ⁴ ἐν μικροῖς ρήμασι μεγάλας αἰτίας, οὐμενοῦν ἔχούσας ὑπερβολὴν εἰς κακίαν.⁵ λήθη γὰρ φίλων, καὶ ὑπεροψίᾳ ἐκ δυναστείας ἐγγινομένη, πάντα ἔχει ὀμοῦ τὰ δεινά. εἰτε γὰρ οὐκ ἀγαπώμεν κατὰ τὴν ἐντολὴν τοῦ Κυρίου, οὐδὲ τὸν χαρακτῆρα ἐπικείμενοι ἠμῶν ἔχομεν· εἰτε φρονήματος κεινοῦ καὶ ἀλαζονείας ὑπεπλήσθημεν τυφώθεντες, ἐμπίπτομεν εἰς ἀφυκτὸν κρίμα τοῦ διαβόλου. ὡστε εἰ μὲν οὕτως ἔχων διανοίας περὶ ἠμῶν, τούτοις ἐχρήσω τοῖς ρήμασιν, εὑξαί φυγεῖν ἠμᾶς τὴν πονηρίαν, ἡν ἐξεύρες ἠμῶν ἐν τῷ τρόπῳ· εἰ δὲ συνηθεῖα τινὶ ἀνεξετάστῳ ἐπὶ τῶν ρήματον ἤλθεν ἡ γλῶττα, ἐαυτοὺς παραμυθησόμεθα καὶ τὴν σὴν χρηστότητα τὰς ἐκ τῶν πραγμάτων μαρτυρίας προσθεῖναι ᾧ παρακαλοῦμεν. ἐκεῖνο γὰρ εὖ ὑσθι, ὅτι ἡ παροῦσα φροντὶς ταπεινώσεως ἠμῶν γέγονεν ἀφορμῇ, ὡστε σοῦ τότε ἐπιλησόμεθα, ὅταν καὶ ἐαυτοὺς ἀγνοήσωμεν. μὴ τοίνυν ποτὲ τὰς ἀσχολίας σημείων τρόπου καὶ κακοπιθείας ποιήσῃ.

¹ καὶ γὰρ εἰ] καὶ γὰρ καὶ εἰ (fr. ἡ alia m.) F.
² ἐκατέρων A, B, C, D, F (ω fr. a).
are beginning a second series of letters, but that you are paying off the debt which this present note creates. For even though my letter is a return for your previous one, yet, by exceeding yours in length by more than twice, it will pay off the double obligation. Do you see to what sophistry idleness has driven me?

As for you, dear sir, cease in your brief expressions to bring serious charges, charges indeed that imply the utmost depravity. For "forgetfulness of friends," and that "haughtiness which is engendered by power," embrace all the crimes there are. For if we fail to love according to the commandment of the Lord, neither do we possess the character suitable to our position; and if we are filled with the conceit of empty pride and arrogance, then we are fallen into the sin of the devil from which there is no escape. Therefore, if you really held this opinion of us when you used these expressions, pray that we may escape the iniquity which you have found in our character; if, however, your tongue came upon those expressions through a kind of indiscriminate habit, we will console ourselves, and merely ask your Excellency to furnish in addition the evidence based upon actions. For of this much be well assured, that my present reflections have been an occasion of humiliation for me, so that we shall only forget you when we shall have ceased to know ourselves. Therefore never assume that a man's preoccupation with affairs is a sign of his character or of malice.

3 ἀργεία F. 4 εἰπάγων om. A, B, C, D. 5 παρεχόμενος add. A, B, C, D, F (supra alia m.). 6 προσθηναι F.
Μελετίω, ἐπισκόπῳ Ἀντιοχείας. ¹

Εἰ πῶς ἔγενετο φανερῶν τῷ θεοσθείᾳ σου τῆς εὐφροσύνης τὸ μέγεθος, ἤν ἐμποιεῖς ἡμῖν ὀσάκις ἂν ἐπιστέλλῃς, οἶδα ὅτι οὐκ ἂν ποτὲ παραπεσοῦσαν γραμμάτων πρόφασιν ὑπερέβης ἀλλὰ καὶ ἐπενόησας ἂν πολλὰς ἡμῖν ποιεῖν ἐκάστοτε τὰς ἐπιστολάς, γνωρίζων τὸν ἐπὶ τῇ ἀναπαύσει τῶν θλιβομένων ἀπαραθρώπου Δεσπότου μισθὸν ἀποκείμενον. πᾶντα γὰρ ὁδύνης τὰ τῆς πεπλήρωται, ⁵ καὶ μονὸν ἡμῖν ἔστιν ἀποστροφῇ τῶν δεινῶν ἡ τῆς σῆς ὁσιότητος ἐννοια: ἢν ἐναργεστέραν ἡμῖν ἐμποιεῖ ἢ διὰ τῶν πάσης σοφίας καὶ χάριτος πεπληρωμένων γραμμάτων σου ὀμιλία. ὥστε ὅταν λάβωμεν εἰς χεῖρας τὴν ἐπιστολήν σου, πρῶτον μὲν τὸ μέτρον αὐτῆς ἐπισκοποῦμεν, καὶ τοσοῦτον αὐτὴν ἀγαπώμεν, ὀσφερπ ἄν περισσεύῃ τῷ πλῆθε. ἔπειτα ⁶ διεξίοντες, τῷ μὲν ἀεὶ προστυχάμουντι τοῦ λόγου χαίρομεν, τῷ τέλει δὲ τῆς ἐπιστολῆς προσεγγίζοντες, ⁷ δυσχεραίνομεν. οὗτοι πᾶν ὀτιπερ ⁸ ἀν εὕρη τοῖς γράμμασι ἐνεστίν ἀγαθόν. ἀπὸ γὰρ ἀγαθῆς καρδίας ἀγαθὸν ἐστὶ τὸ περισσεῦον.

Εἰ δὲ καταξιωθείμεν ταῖς σαῖς προσευχαῖς, ἐως ἐσμὲν ἐπὶ γῆς, καὶ τῆς κατ' ὀφθαλμῶν

---

¹ Μελετίω ἐπισκόπῳ MSS.
2 ἦς C, D.
3 ἂν ποτὲ] ἂμποτε E.
4 θλίψεων A, B, C, D.
5 πεπλήρωνται A, B.
6 δὲ add. F.
7 κατεγγιζοντες E.
8 ὀτιπερ E.
LETTER LVII

LETTER LVII

TO MELETIUS, BISHOP OF ANTIOCH

If your Holiness could somehow have realised the great happiness which you inspire in us whenever you write, I am sure you would never have passed over any pretext that came your way for a letter; nay, you would have contrived many pretexts for writing us letters on every occasion, knowing the reward which is reserved by our loving Master for the relief of the afflicted. For everything here is full of distress, and my only refuge from my troubles is the thought of your Holiness; and this is brought more vividly to my mind by the intercourse which your letters, so full of all wisdom and grace, give me. Hence, whenever we take into our hands a letter from you, we first of all observe its length, and love it in proportion as it goes beyond the average in size. Then, as we read it, we take delight in every word that meets our eyes; but as we approach the end, we are sad. To such an extent is all the goodness of your spoken words found in your letters! For the abundance that flows from a good heart is good.

If, in answer to your prayers, we should be thought worthy, while still on earth, to meet you face to face...

1 Written in 371. This date is supported by Basil's statement that the church of Caesarea was still in an unfortunate state. He had not as yet firmly consolidated his position as Archbishop. Meletius had already been in exile from Antioch for seven years, on account of his orthodoxy, although he was not in full communion with Catholics, because of the Eustathian schism.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

συντυχίας, καὶ παρ’ αὐτὴς τῆς ζώσης φωνῆς λαβεῖν ὠφέλιμα διδάγματα, ἡ ἐφόδια πρὸς τε τῶν ἐνεστῶτα αἶώνα καὶ τῶν μέλλοντα, τοῦτο ἂν μέγιστον τῶν ἀγαθῶν ἐκρίναμεν, καὶ προοίμιον τῆς παρὰ Θεοῦ εὐμενείας εαυτοῖς ἐπιθέμεθα. καὶ ἤδη γε τῆς ὀρμῆς εἰχόμεθα ταύτης, εἰ μὴ οἱ γνησιώτατοι καὶ τὰ πάντα φιλάδελφοι ἄδελφοι ἐπέσχον ἡμᾶς, ὃν ἱνα μὴ γράμμασι δημοσιεύσω τὴν προαιρέσιν, διηγησάμην τῷ ἄδελφῳ Θεοφράστῳ τῇ σῇ τελείοτητί τὰ καθ’ ἐκαστὸν ἀπαγγείλαι.

LVIII

Γρηγορίῳ ἄδελφῳ.5

Πῶς ἂν σοι διὰ γραμμάτων μαχεσθείην; πῶς ἃ ἂν ἄξιως σου καθαψαίμην τῆς περὶ πάντα χρηστότητος; τρίτον τίς, εἰπέ μοι, τοῖς αὐτοῖς περιπίπτει δικτύοις; τρίτον τίς τῇ αὐτῇ περιπίπτει πάγη; οὔδ’ ἂν τῶν ἀλόγων τι τούτο ῥαδίως πάθοι. μίαν μοι συμπλάσας ἐπιστολὴν ἐκόμισας, ὡς παρὰ τοῦ αἰδεσιμωτάτου ἐπισκόπου καὶ κοινοῦ θείου ἡμῶν, ἀπατῶν με οὐκ οἶδα ἀνθ’ ὅτον.

γράμματι A, B, C, D. 4 τιμότητι B.
Γρηγορίῳ ἐπισκόπῳ καὶ ἄδελφῳ E, F, Cod. Med.
γράμματος C, D. 7 τοιούτον E, τοιοῦτο F.
συμπλέξας C, D, E. 9 ἐπισκόπου om. A, B, C, D.

1 Perhaps the deacon Theophrastus, who died shortly after Easter, a.d. 372; cf. Letter XCV. According to
LETTER LVIII

face, and from your living speech itself to receive helpful instruction, or provision for the journey of both this life and the next, this we should have accounted the greatest of all goods, and should have set it down as an intimation of God's special favour to ourselves. And we should have adhered to this earnest desire even yet, had we not been restrained by our most true and in all respects brotherly brethren. In order to avoid making known their intention, I have told our brother Theophrastus¹ about it, that he may explain the situation to your Perfection in detail.

LETTER LVIII

To Gregory, his Brother²

Would that I could contend with you by letter! Would that I could upbraid your utter simplicity as it deserves! Who, tell me, ever falls a third time into the same net? Who ever falls a third time into the same snare? Even a brute beast would scarcely do that. You forged a letter, and brought it to me as if from our common uncle, the most revered bishop, deceiving me for some unknown Maran, the intentions referred to here are the plans to bring about the peace of the whole Church.

² Written in 371. Basil's uncle Gregory had been in sympathy with the disaffected suffragans in their troubles with Basil; cf. Introd. p. xxxi. To effect a reconciliation between the two, Gregory of Nyssa went so far as to forge several letters in his uncle's name. The counterfeit was naturally found out, and the breach between the two was only bridged with great difficulty.
COLLECTED LETTERS OF SAINT BASIL

dēdeξάμην ὡς παρ' ἐπισκόπου 1 διὰ σοῦ κομισθεῖσαν. τί γὰρ οὐκ ἐμελλον; ἐπέδειξαι 2 πολλοῖς τῶν φίλων ὕπο περιχαρείας, ηὐχαριστήσα τῷ Θεῷ. ἡλέγχθη τὸ πλάσμα, αὐτοῦ τοῦ ἐπισκόπου διὰ τῆς ἴδιας φωνῆς ἀρνησαμένου. κατηχηθήθημεν ἐπ' ἐκείνην ἡγίασεθα ἡμῖν διαστήμα τὴν γῆν, ῥαδιουργίας καὶ ψεύδους καὶ ἀπάτης οὐείδει περιβληθέντες, δευτέραν πάλιν ἀπεδωκάν μοι, ὡς διὰ τοῦ οἰκέτου σου Ἀστερίων παρ' αὐτοῦ τοῦ ἐπισκόπου μοι ἀποσταλεῖσαν. οὐδὲ ἐκείνην 3 ἀλήθώς αὐτὸς ὁ ἐπίσκοπος διεπεμψατο, ὡς ὁ αἰδεσιμωτάτος ἀδελφὸς Ἀνθίμος ἡμῖν ἀπήγγειλε. τρίτην πάλιν Ἀδαμάντιος ἦκε πρὸς ἡμᾶς κομίζων. πῶς ἔδει με δέξασθαι τὰ 4 διὰ σοῦ καὶ τῶν σον πεμπόμενα; 5 ἡγίασαν ἃν λίθου καρδίαν ἐχειν, ὡστε μήτε τῶν παρελθόντων μεμνησθαὶ μήτε τῶν παρόντων αἰσθάνεσθαί, ὑπὲρ τοῦ πᾶσαν πληγήν εἰς γῆν κεκυφὼς φέρειν 6 ὡς τὰ βοσκήματα. ἀλλὰ τί πάθω πρὸς τὸν ἐμαυτὸν λογισμὸν, μετὰ μίαν καὶ δευτέραν πείραν, οὐδὲν δυνάμενον ἀνεξετάστως προσιέσθαί;

Ταῦτα τῆς σῆς ἀπλότητος καθαπτόμενος ἐγραψα, ἢν οὐδὲ 7 ἄλλως πρέπουσαν Χριστιανοῖς, τῷ παρόντι καιρῷ ὁρῶ 8 μὴ ἀρμοζοῦσαν, ἦν πρὸς γοῦν τὸ 9 ἐφεξῆς ἑαυτὸν 10 τε φυλάττοις 11 κάμοι γείδη ἐπειδὴ, δεὶ γὰρ με πρὸς σὲ μετὰ παρρησίας εἰπεῖν, ἀναξιόπιστος εἰ τῶν τοιούτων διάκονος πλὴν οὕτως ἂν δωσίν οἱ ἐπεσταλκότες, ἀπεκρίνα-

1 καὶ κωινοῦ πατρὸς add. F in marg. 2 ἐπεδείξαι E. 3 ἐκείνην ἀληθῶς ... ἀδελφὸς Ἀνθίμος] ἐκείνη ἀληθῆς, αὐτὸς ὁ ἐπίσκοπος διεμαρτυράτο ἐπὶ τοῦ αἰδεσιμωτάτου ἀδελφοῦ Ἀνθίμου ἀσ αὐτὸς A, B, C, D. 4 τὰ om. editi. 5 πεμπομένην editi. 6 ὑποφέρειν E, F. 7 οὐδὲ om. A, B, C, D, E, F.
reason. I received it as sent by the bishop through you. Why should I not have done so? I showed it with great joy to many of my friends, and gave thanks to God. The forgery was then exposed, the bishop himself with his own lips disowning it. We were put to shame, and prayed that the earth might open to receive us, overwhelmed as we were by the reproach of duplicity, falsehood, and deceit. Then again they handed me a second letter, as having been sent to me by the bishop himself through your servant Asterius. But the bishop himself had not really despatched this one either, as our most reverend brother Anthimus has told us. And now Adamantius comes bringing us a third letter. How could I possibly accept any messages brought by you or yours? I might have prayed for a heart of stone, that I might neither remember the past nor be sensible of the present, but, bowing my head to the ground, might endure every blow, as cattle do. But what is become of my reason when, after a first and second experience, I find that I can believe nothing without investigation!

I write these words to upbraid you for your fatuity—which I consider at no time befitting a Christian, and entirely out of place at the present moment—in order that in the future, at any rate, you may guard yourself, and spare me; because—for I must speak to you frankly—you are no trustworthy agent in such matters. However, whoever may be the authors of the letters, we have sent them a

1 Bishop of Tyana, and at odds with Basil; cf. Letters CXX, CXXI, CXXII, and CCX.
µεθα αυτοις τα εικοτα. ειτε ουν αυτος αποπειραν 1 μοι καθεις, ειτε τω οντι παρα των επισκοπων λαβων την επιστολην επεμψας. εχεις τας αποκρι- σεις. σε 2 δε αλλα 3 εικος ην εν τω παροντι φροντιζειν, αδελφον τε οντα και μητω της φυσεως επιλεκτησμενον, μηδε εν εχθρου μοιρα ημας οροντα, επειδη εις βιον παρηλθομεν συντριβοντα μεν ημων το σωμα, κακοντα δε και την ψυχην το υπερβαίνειν την ημετεραν δυναμιν. αλλ' ομως, επειδη ουτως εκπεπλημμοσαι, τοτου ενεκεν παρειναι σε 4 δει 5 νων και κοινωνειν των πραγμα- των. Αδελφοι γαρ, φησιν, εν ιναγκαις εστωσαν 6 χρησιμοι.

Ει δε τω οντι συντυχιαν ημετεραν καταδεχονται οι αιδεσιμωτατοι επισκοπαι, και των ημων ωρισμενοι και καιρον γνωρισατωσαν, και δι' ιδιων ημας ινθρωπων μετασπευδασθωσαν. ώσπερ γαρ προσ το οπαντησαι αυτος προς τον εμαυτον θειον ουκ απαξιω, ουτως εαν μη μετα του πρεπουντος σχηματος η κλησις γενηται, ουκ άνεξομαι.

1 πειραν C, D.
3 και add. C, D.
5 δει Capps; οδεi MSS.
2 σοι E.
4 σε om. C, D, E.
6 σοι add. E, F
suitable answer. Therefore, whether you were setting a trap for me each time you sent the letter, or whether you actually received it from a bishop, you have my answer. But as for you, you ought to be considerate of me on general principles at the present moment—since you are my brother, and cannot have forgotten the ties of nature, to say nothing of regarding me in the light of an enemy—now that we have come into a life that is not only wearing out our body, but is even ruining our soul as well, so far does it exceed our strength. Yet, in spite of all, now that you have been set at warfare with me in this manner, you ought for this very reason to be at my side now, and share my troubles. For it is said, "Brethren are a help in the time of trouble." ¹

If the right reverend bishops will in truth agree to a conference with us, let them designate a definite time and place, and let them summon us through their own agents. For, while I do not refuse to meet my own uncle, yet, unless the invitation is extended with due formality, I shall not submit.

¹ Ecclesiastes 40. 24.
CORRIGENDA

page 21, line 12, for "effect" read "affect."
,, 51, ,, 30, for "conception" read "understanding.
,, 67, ,, 13, for "it" read "he."
,, 73, ,, 5, for "upon" read "in."
,, 75, line 11, for "perceptible" read "intellectual."
,, 103, last line, insert "you" after "beg."
,, 109, line 21, for "receive" read "enjoy."
,, 131, last line, for "conduct" read "conduce."
,, 137, line 4, for "unbidden" read "forbidden."
,, 153, ,, 28, delete comma after "composed."
,, 207, ,, 12, for "produced" read "comprehended."
INDEX OF PROPER NAMES

ABEL, 287
Abraham, 263
Aburgius, a lay compatriot of Basil's, 185
Acacian council of Constantinople, 98 note, 325 note
Achelous, the river, 111 note
Acts of the Apostles, 67
Adamantius, 359
Adrianople, 98 note
Aegean Sea, 108 note
Aeschylus, 108 note
Actios, XXX
Alcmaeon, 111 and note
Alexander, the Great, 149
Alexander, successors of, 99
Alexandria, 5; School of, 94 note
Ambrose, St., xxviii
Amphipolis, 109, 108 note
Ancyra, church of, 171, 177, 337 note
Annesi, xx ff., 27
Anomoeans, xxx ff.
Anthimus, 359
Antony, St., Life of, xix
Antioch, xvii, 315, 355 note
Antioch, Synod of, xxix
Antiochene Creed, xxix, 331 note
Arcadius, Bishop, 317
Arcadius, imperial treasurer, 113
Arianism, xxiv, xxv ff.
Arianus, xx
Ariminum, city of, xxv, 98 note, 321 note
Aristophanes, comic poet, 21 note, 227 note
Aristotle, xxvii, 53 note, 95 note
Arius, xxvi ff.
Asia, 5
Asia Minor, xxxviii
Astaroth, 59
Asterius, servant, 359

Astydamas, a playwright of Athens and a by-word for self-praise, 228 note, 229
Athenasius, St., the Great, xv, xxvi ff., 149
Athenasius, father of Athenasius, Bishop of Ancyra, 145, 171 note, 226 note
Athens, University of, xvii ff.
Attic Greek, 125
Atticism, xviii
Aurelian, the pagan, 331

Baalim, 59
Baldad, the Suhite, 203
Basil, St., the Great, xv ff., passim
Benedict, St., xxi, xxiii
Benedictine editors, texts, xliii
Bethsabee, 21 note
Bithynia, xxvii
Bosporius, Bishop of Colonia in Cappadocia Secunda, 321, 327, 329

Caesarea, of Cappadocia, xvi, xxxii, 233, 335 note
Caesarea, of Palestine, xvi note
Caesareans, an apology to, 47
Caesarius, brother of Gregory Nazianzenus, 155, 181 ff.
Candidianus, governor of Cappadocia, 25
Canonicae, 327 and note
Cappadocia, xv ff.; clergy of, xxxiii;
Catholics of, xxxiii
Cappadocia Secunda, new province of, xxxiii, 321 note
Cappadocians, 187, 315
Caproes, city of, 49 note
Carbala, city of, 49 note
Carmel, Mt., 261
Cenobium, xxii, 46 note
INDEX OF PROPER NAMES

Chalcelon, Synod of, 197 note
Chilo, Basil's pupil, 241
Chorepiscopi, 337 and note, 343
Cilicians, 41, 157, 315 note
Cleanthes, a philosopher, 31 and note
Cleobulus, one of the Seven Sages, 93 note
Coele Syria, xx
Colonia, 321 note
Constantine, the emperor, xxx note
Constantine, the Emperor, xxvii, 250 note, 233, 237 note, 346 note
Constantinian, 347 note
Constantinople, the famous schools of, xxvii ff., xxxi, 323, 327
Constantinople, Synod of, 325 note
Constantius, xxiv
Cornelius, 343 note
Cretans, 315 note
Cyriakos, St., 94 note, 239 note
Damasus, Bishop of Rome, 319 note
Daniel, 263, 395
Danube, 231
Darrius, 253
David, 17, 21, 57, 85, 245
Demophilus, 315 and note
Demosthenes, 27
Devil, 83 and note
Dianius, the Archbishop, xxiv, 321 note, 323, 325, 327
Diogenes, the philosopher, 31, 99
Diogenes Laertius, 93 note
Diocleus, 102
Dionysius, 101
Dionysius of Alexandria, 94 note, 95
Dionysius of Rome, 96 note
Divine Dispensation, 60 note

ECHINADES, 111 and note
Ecumenical Council, the First, xxvii
Egypt, xx, xxxii, 5
Elias, 261
Eli-eis, 245
Elvira, Council of, 349 note
Emmella, St., xvi ff., 175 note
Empire of Rome, xxxvi, 233
Epicurus, 99 note
Erianus, 111 note
Esdras, 261
Eudoxius, 315 note
Eumenius, 115, 124 note, 125
Euripides, 99 note
Eusebian party, xxviii ff., xxx ff.

Eusebius, of Caesarea, xxiv, xxxii, 310 note
Eusebius, of Nicomedia, xxviii ff.
Eusebius, of Samosata, 157, 175, 177, 187, 310 note, 315
Eustathius, deacon, 313 and note
Eustathius, the philosopher, xix, 2
Ezechiel, 245
Fabius, of Antioch, 343 note
Fourth Sirmium Creed, xxxi

GELVERE, city of, 49 note
George, Bishop of Laodicea, 325 and note
Glezi, 245
Gilead, 303
Gregory, the Elder, 179 note, 311 note
Gregory Nazianzenus, xvii ff., xxiv, xxxii ff., 7 and note, 45, 107, 121, 311, 357
Gregory of Nyssa, xvi ff., 197, 258 note, 357 and note
Gregory Thaumaturgus, xv, 163

Hades, 305
Hafsa, 98 note
Hellespont, 3
Hercules, successor to Origen as head of the Alexandrian school, 94 note
Herodias, 287
Heroilus, 108 note
Hesiod, 108 note
Himerius, of Bithynia, pagan teacher at Athens, xviii
Homer, 109
Homoian, 325 note
Homoioion, xxv ff., passim
Homoousion, xxv ff., 329
Horace, 99 note
Hierasus, the venerable, xxx
Hypatius, 177 and note
Hypostasis, xxvii ff., 197 ff., 333

IBORA, on the Iris opposite Annesi, xx
Indians, 233
Indiction, 347 and note
Innocentius, Bishop, 319
Iris, the river, xx ff.
Isaac, 263
Isaias, 263
Isaurians, 187
Israel, 59, 263, 293
INDEX OF PROPER NAMES

Ister, 231 note

JACOB, 261, 263
Jeremias, lamentations of, 263, 285, 293, 301
Jerome, St., xxxi
Jerusalem, 277
Job, 17, 37, 201
John, 119
John the Baptist, 287
John, St., Chrysostom, 33 note, 319 note
Joseph, story of, 15, 263
Judas, 245, 247, 341
Julian, the good, 127
Julian, Emperor and APOSTATE, xviii ff., 226, 231, 235
Justin Martyr, 139 note, 191 note
Kalypso’s isle, 109

LADOICEA, 325 note, 342 note
Lausus, the tribune, 230
Leontius, the sophist, 123, 126 note, 127, 189
Libanius, the rhetorician, xvii
Lucian, the sophist, 31 note, 93 note
Lucifer, 249

MACARIUS, 119
Maccabees, 43
Macedonia, 108 note
Macedonianism, xxvi
Macedonius, xxvi
Macrina, St., xv ff., xx ff.
Magnesius, xxx
Mambre, oak of, 261
Maximus, the philosopher, 93
Meletius, Bishop of Antioch, 355
Mesopotamia, xx
Monasticism, xxi ff.
Moses, 17, 161, 245

Musonius, Bishop of Neocaesarea, 158 note

NATHAN, 21 note
Nazarite, 269
Nectarius, probably Bishop of Constantinople, 33: wife of, 39
Neocaesarea, xx ff.; church of, 159, 177, 337 note
Nica, 98 note

Nicaea, Council of, xxvii, 327, 329, 347
Nicobulus, a friend of Gregory Nazianzenus, xxxviii note

Nyssa, Indian, 5

ODYSSEUS, 3
Olives, Mount of, 261
Olympiads, 347 note
Olympius, 29, 193 note, 195
Oriental, monasticism, xxvii ff., xxxvii
Origen, 94 note
Origen, layman, 117
O-cce, 293
Ou-ia, xxvii ff., 197 ff.
Ovid, 99 note

PALESTINE, 259 note
Paregorius, the presbyter, 317
Patrriassianism, 95 note
Paul, St., letters of, xxvii ff., 57, 58, 85, 211, 243, 293
Paul of Samosata, 331 and note
Pergamius, layman, 351 and note
Persia, 5, 233
Peter, youngest brother of Basil, Bishop of Sebaste, 197 note
Pheidias, the sculptor, 93 note
Philemon, poet of New Comedy, 229 note
Philippopolis, city of, xxix
Philistine, 51
Phinehas, 285
Plato, 27, 227 note, 228 note
Pliny the Younger, the letters of, xxvii ff.
Plutarch, 27 note, 39 note, 99 note, 126 note, 145 note
Pontus, xvi, 107 ff.
Presias Lake, 109 note
Procopius, 178 note
Prohaeresius, Christian teacher at Athens, xviii
Punjab, 4 note
Pythagoreans, 127 and note

REPUBLIC of Rome, xxxvi
Rimini, city of, xxxi
Rome, xvii, xxxvi
Rufinus, 91 note, 275

SABELLIANISM, 95 note
Sabellius, 95 and note
Sagadaces, 251
Samosata, 157 note
Saporis, a descendant of Darius, 233
Saracenes, 253
Sardica, city of, xxix
Sardica, Synod of, xxix

365
INDEX OF PROPER NAMES

Scomius, Mt., 108 note
Scriptures, divinely-inspired, 15, 51, 57, 61, 251, 269
Second Sirmium Creed, xxx ff.
Selencia, city of, xxxi, 325 note
Semi-arians, xxx ff.
Seneca, L. Annaeus, 31 note
Silvanus, Metropolitan of Tarsus, 187 note
Sion, 269, 293
Sirens’ songs, 5
Socrates, the historian, xvii, 98 note
Socrates, the philosopher, 21 note
Solomon, the wise, 77, 91, 225 note, 245, 323
Sophar, the Naamathite, 203
Sophistic (Second), xvii, xxxvii
Sophocles, 4 note, 92 note
Sophronius, xix, 179 and note
Sozomenus, xvii, 239 note
Spartans, 27 note
Strabo, 109 note
Strymon, the river, 109
Strymonicus Sinus, 108 note
Subordinationism, heresy of, xxvi
Suidas, 229 note
Synesius, 31 note
Syria, xxxiii, 5

Syrians, 187
Tantalus, 7
Tarsus, city of, 41 note, 187
Terentius, xviii
Thaumaturgus, see Gregory Thaumaturgus
Theodoretus, 98 note, 157 note
Theophrastus, Deacon, 356 note, 357
Thucydides, 109 note
Tiberina, district of, xx, 110 note, 111
Timothy, 149
Trinity, the, xxvi ff., 47 ff., 197 ff., 226 note
Tritheists, 55
Tyana, city of, xxxiii, 359 note
Urias, 21 note, 245
Valens, the emperor, xxv, xxx, 178 note
Valerian, 96 note
Valerius Maximus, 31 note
Xystus, 96 note
Zeno, the philosopher, 31
Latin Authors.

APULEIUS. The Golden Ass (Metamorphoses), W. Adlington (1566) Revised by S. Gaselee. (3rd Imp.)
AUSONIUS. H. G. Evelyn White. 2 Vols.
BOETHIUS: TRACTS AND DE CONSOLATIONE PHILOSO-
CAESAR: CIVIL WARS. A. G. Peskett. (2nd Imp.)
CAESAR: GALIC WAR. H. J. Edwards. (4th Imp.)
CATULLUS. F. W. Cornish; Tibullus. J. P. Postgate; and
PERVERGILIO VENERIS. J. W. Mackail. (7th Imp.)
CICERO: DE FINIBUS. H. Rackham. (2nd Imp.)
CICERO: DE OFFICIIS. Walter Miller. (2nd Imp.)
CICERO: DE SENECTUTE, DE AMICITIA, DE DIVINATIONE.
W. A. Falconer.
CICERO: LETTERS TO ATTICUS. E. O. Winstedt. 3 Vols. 3rd Imp.
CICERO: PRO ARCHIA POETA, POST REDITUM IN SENATU,
POST REDITUM AD QUIRITES, DE DOMO SUA, DE HARUS-
PICUM RESPONSIS, PRO PLANCIO. N. H. Watts.
CLAUDIAN. M. Platnauer. 2 Vols.
FRONTINUS, STRATEGEMS AND AQUEDUCTS. C. E. Bennett.
FRONTO: CORRESPONDENCE. C. R. Haines. 2 Vols.
HORACE: ODES AND EPODES. C. E. Bennett. (6th Imp.)
JUVENAL AND PERSIUS. G. G. Ramsay. (2nd Imp.)
LUCRETIUS. W. H. D. Rouse.
MARTIAL. W. C. Ker. 2 Vols.
OVID: HEROIDES AND AMORES. Grant Showerman. (2nd Imp.)
OVID: METAMORPHOSES. F. J. Miller. 2 Vols. (3rd Imp.)
PETRONIUS. M. Heseltine; SENECa: APOCOLOCYTOSIS.
W. H. D. Rouse. (5th Imp.)
PLINY: LETTERS. Melmoth's Translation revised by W. M. L.
Hutchinson. 2 Vols. (2nd Imp.)
PROPERTIUS. H. E. Butler. (3rd Imp.)
QUINTILIAN. H. E. Butler. 4 Vols.
SALLUST. J. C. Rolfe.
SCRIPTORES HISTORIAE AUGUSTAE. D. Magie. 4 Vols. Vols.
I and II.
SENeca: EPISTULAE MORALES. R. M. Gummere. 3 Vols. (Vol
I 2nd Imp.)
SENeca: TRAGEDIES. F. J. Miller. 2 Vols. (2nd Imp.)
SUETONIUS. J. C. Rolfe. 2 Vols. (3rd Imp.)
TACITUS: DIALOGUS. Sir Wm. Peterson, and AGRICOLA AND
GERMANIA. Maurice Hutton. (3rd Imp.)
TERENCE. John Sargeaunt. 2 Vols. (5th Imp.)
VELLEIUS PATERCULUS AND RES GESTAE DIVI AUGUSTI
F. W. Shipley.
Greek Authors.

ACHILLES TATIUS. S. Gaselee.
AENEAS TACTICUS, ASCLEPIODOTUS AND ONASANDER.
AESCHYLUS. H. Weir Smyth. 2 Vols.
APOLLODORUS. Sir James G. Frazer. 2 Vols.
APOLLONIUS RHODIUS. R. C. Seaton. (3rd Imp.)
APPIAN’S ROMAN HISTORY. Horace White. 4 Vols.
ARISTOPHANES. [G. R. Mair.
APOLLONIUS. A. W. Mair; and ARATUS.
CLEMENT OF ALEXANDRIA. Rev. G. W. Butterworth.
DAPHNIS AND CHLOE. Thornley’s Translation revised by J. M. Edmonds; and PARTHENIUS. S. Gaselee. (2nd Imp.)
DIO CASSIUS: ROMAN HISTORY. E. Cary. 9 Vols. Vols. I to VIII.
DIÓGENES LAERTIUS. R. D. Hicks. 2 Vols.
EURIPIDES. A. S. Way. 4 Vols. (4th Imp.)
GALEN: ON THE NATURAL FACULTIES. A. J. Brock.
THE GREEK ANTHOLOGY. W. R. Paton. 5 Vols. (3rd Imp.)
HERODOTUS. A. D. Godley. 4 Vols. [(2nd Imp.)
HIPPOCRATES. W. H. S. Jones. 4 Vols. Vols. I and II.
HOMER: ILLIAD. A. T. Murray. 2 Vols.
HOMER: ODYSSEY. A. T. Murray. 2 Vols. (2nd Imp.)
LYRA GRAECA. J. M. Edmonds. 3 Vols. Vols. I and II.
MARCUS AURELIUS. C. R. Haines. (2nd Imp.)
MENANDER. F. G. Allinson.
PHILOSTRATUS: THE LIFE OF APOLLONIUS OF TYANA. F. C. Conybeare. 2 Vols. (2nd Imp.)
PHILOSTRATUS AND EUCAPIUS. LIVES OF THE SOPHISTS.
PINDAR. Sir J. E. Sandys. (3rd Imp.) [Wilmer Cave Wright.
PLATO: CRATYLUS, PARMenides, GREATER HIPPIAS, LESSER HIPPIAS. H. N. Fowler.
PLATO: LACES, PROTAGORAS, MENO, EUHYDEMUS.
PLATO: POLITIUS AND PHIILEBUS. H. N. Fowler. 10.
W. R. M. Lamb.
PLATO: THEAETETUS AND SOPHIST. H. N. Fowler.
PLUTARCH: THE PARALLEL LIVES. B. Perrin. 11 Vols.
POLYBIUS. W. R. Paton. 6 Vols. Vols. I to IV.
QUINTUS SMYRNAEUS. A. S. Way. [Vols. I to IV.
SOPHOCLES. F. Storr. 2 Vols. (4th Imp.)
STRABO: GEOGRAPHY. Horace L. Jones. 8 Vols. Vols. I to III.
THEOPHRASTUS: ENQUIRY INTO PLANTS. Sir Arthur Horta,
THUCYDIDES. C. F. Smith. 4 Vols. [Bart. 2 Vols.
XENOPHON: CYRPAEDIA. Walter Miller. 2 Vols. Vols. I. (2nd Imp.)
XENOPHON: HELLENICA, ANABASIS, APOLGY, AND SYM-
POSIOUM. C. L. Brownson and O. J. Todd. 3 Vols.
XENOPHON: MEMORABILIA AND OECONOMICUS. E. C.
Marchant.
XENOPHON: SCRIPTA MINORA. E. C. Marchant.
IN PREPARATION

Greek Authors.

ARISTOTLE, NICOMACHEAN ETHICS, H. Rackham.
ARISTOTLE, ORGANON, W. M. L. Hutchinson.
ARISTOTLE, PHYSICS, Rev. P. Wicksteed.
ARISTOTLE, POETICS, AND LONGINUS, W. Hamilton Fyfe.
ARISTOTLE, POLITICS AND ATHENIAN CONSTITUTION
   Edward Capps.
ARISTOTLE, RHETORIC, J. Freese.
ATHENAEUS, C. B. Gulick.
DEMOSTHENES: OLYNTHIACS, PHILIPPICS, LEPTINES AND
   MINOR SPEECHES, J. H. Vince.
DEMOSTHENES, PRIVATE ORATIONS, G. M. Calhoun.
DIO CHRYSOSTOM, W. E. Waters.
EUSEBIUS, Kirsopp Lake.
GREEK IAMBIC AND ELEGIAC POETS, E. D. Perry.
ISAEUS, E. W. Forster.
ISOCRATES, G. Norlin.
MANETHO, S. de Ricci.
PAPYRI, A. S. Hunt.
PHILOSTRATUS, IMAGINES, Arthur Fairbanks.
PLATO, MENEXENUS, ALCIBIADES I. and II., ERASTAI.
   THEAGES, CHARMIDES, MINOS, EPINOMIS, W. R. M. Lamb.
PLATO, REPUBLIC, Paul Shorey.
PLUTARCH, MORALIA, F. C. Babbitt.
ST. BASIL, LETTERS, R. J. Deferrari.
SEXTUS EMPIRICUS, A. C. Pearson.
THEOPHRASTUS, CHARACTERS, J. M. Edmonds; HERODAS:
   HIEROCLES PHILOGELOS; CHOLIAMBIG FRAGMENTS
   CEREIDES; NAUMACHIS; SOTADES, etc., A. D. Knox.
Latin Authors

AULUS GELLIUS, J. C. Rolfe.
BEDE, ECCLESIASTICAL HISTORY, Rev. H. F. Stewart.
CICERO, AD FAMILIARES, W. Glyn Williams.
CICERO, IN CATILINAM, PRO MURENA, PRO SULLA, B. L. Ullman.
CICERO, DE NATURE DEORUM, H. Rackham.
CICERO, DE ORATORE, ORATOR, BRUTUS, Charles Stuttaford.
CICERO, DE REPUBLICA AND DE LEGIBUS, Clinton Keyes.
CICERO, PRO CAECINA, PRO LEGE MANILIA, PRO CLUENTIO, PRO RABIRIO, H. Grose Hodge.
CICERO: PRO SEXTIO, IN VATINIUM, PRO CAELIO, PRO PROVINCIIS CONSULARIBUS, PRO BALBO, D. Morrah.
CICERO, TUSCULAN DISPUTATIONS, J. King.
CICERO, IN VERREM, L. H. G. Greenwood.
HORACE, EPISTLES AND SATIRES, H. R. Fairclough.
LUCAN, J. D. Duff.
OVID, FASTI, Sir J. G. Frazer.
ST. AUGUSTINE, MINOR WORKS, Rev. P. Wicksteed.
SENeca, MORAL ESSAYS, J. W. Basore.
SIDONIUS: LETTERS, E. V. Arnold.
STATIUS, I. H. Mozley.
TACITUS, ANNAS, John Jackson.
VALERIUS FLACCUS, A. F. Scholfield.

DESCRIPTIVE PROSPECTUS ON APPLICATION

London - WILLIAM HEINEMANN
New York - G. PUTNAM'S SONS